



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 11

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Chaos in South Origin City!

Yue Zhong looked at the bloody radiance and felt elated, "This Blood Manipulation ability is indeed terrifying. With this, I have another additional card against my enemies."

He then swept a glance towards the sobbing Jin Xuan'er and said directly, "Let's go! If you want revenge, come with me!"

After that, he did not stay to see if she had a reaction, instead, carrying Han Xuan'er towards the Clear Wind Martial School.

A resolute glint appeared in the lost Jin Xuan'er, as she followed quietly.

Currently, the entire South Origin City had fallen into a state of panic, and aliens were everywhere killing humans.

In this world, the humans were well-versed in martial arts. Many of them joined hands to deal with the aliens. However, each and every one of them was extremely ferocious and powerful. Even the weakest one had a peak-Type 3 combat strength. Their armor was extremely tough, preventing any weapons from slashing through. Even as a group of martial artists came up to attack them, they would lose many of their comrades just to kill one. If they came across the mature ones, then it would just be sending themselves to their deaths.

Under the assault of the aliens, many defense lines fell, as the number of humans fleeing increased.

Along the way, Yue Zhong would control the evil bloody radiance to sweep out, sucking the aliens dry, turning them into dried corpses.

It was extremely strange and profound, with every alien's blood essence sucked dry, it would become even thicker and coarser. Some of the life force would then flow back into Yue Zhong's body, allowing him to keep it activated without any energy expenditure.

Yue Zhong looked at the 4 different beams and thought to himself, "What a powerful and devilish ability! Against any life forms with blood, I can practically use it indefinitely."

As his means seemed extraordinary and many aliens had fallen at his hands, those humans that managed to flee from the areas of assault quickly gathered behind him. Soon, there was a huge wave of humans joining.

All of a sudden, Han Ying'er pointed to a direction, "That's my Master!!"

Yue Zhong turned to look, discovering a valiant woman of about 27 or 28 fighting against many aliens. She had a single black ponytail, her attire a white warrior uniform.

She held a powerful spear and looked like a Valkyrie, stabbing and thrusting with countless profound movements. Each strike would claim the lives of the aliens by penetrating their heads.

However, although the spear seemed to be some godly weapon, each time it pierced the heads of the aliens, it would be corroded further, becoming weaker with the flow of time.

At the same time, due to her valor, over 20 aliens were killing their way over.

These aliens were all formidable killing machines. The majority was at the Type 4 or Type 5 level, with only a few that lacked enough nutrition, thus being at the peak-Type 3 realm.

Although the lady with a ponytail was a Type 5 expert, once she was surrounded by 20 aliens, she would die.

Han Ying'er saw her master being surrounded and her face fell, pleading, "Please, help my Master!!"

"Fine!"

Yue Zhong pointed towards those aliens, and the 4 beams of bloody radiance shot towards them.

The moment the blood swept out, most of the aliens turned into dried corpses.

Within the alien group, there had been 3 Type 5 aliens. At the moment the blood swept out, they felt a sense of crisis and evaded with terrifying speed.

After dodging that killing move, the 3 Type 5 aliens shot Yue Zhong a deep look, before turning around to disappear.

Yue Zhong saw them disappear and frowned, "Shit. They actually possess such high intelligence. It's going to be troublesome!"

If they had continued to charge at him brashly, it would be for the best. However, they actually could assess that their opponent was stronger than them, choosing between attacking and retreating.

"Many thanks for the assistance, little friend. I'm Bai He Lian, Headmaster of the Clear Wind Martial School."

The spear-wielding mature beauty came up to Yue Zhong, bowing with a salute before her gaze fell upon Han Ying'er and she frowned.

Yue Zhong smiled back, "How do you think, I'm Yue Zhong."

Han Ying'er's face changed slightly, as she hurried to explain, "Master, I had been grievously injured by one of those monsters and was about to die. Yue Zhong used some powerful serum to save my life."

Bai He Lian immediately thanked Yue Zhong, "Thank you, Brother Yue, for saving my disciple's life. In the future, my Clear Wind Martial School will be sure to repay the favor."

After exchanging a few pleasantries, Yue Zhong directly asked, "Miss Bai, would you happen to know how those creatures came about?"

Bai He Lian thought deeply for a long while, before her face fell,

"Don't tell me that it's those things?"

Yue Zhong asked, "What?"

It was unclear what she thought of, as her face turned pale and a hint of fear flashed across her eyes. She proceeded in a low voice, "Within the records of our Martial School, this planet that we are on, Uros, is under the control of a terrifying existence calling himself God. About 3,000 years ago, there had been a calamity on our planet. At that time, our human race had produced many powerful experts, helping to bring humanity to survive the apocalypse. 2,000 years ago, another calamity happened and was suppressed. A thousand years ago, yet another cataclysmic event broke out. It seems that Uros would be plunged in hell every thousand years. This should be the 4th time."

"Each time an apocalypse broke out, many humans would die before getting past it. It should be nearing the 4th cycle already. Each time, the creatures have always been stronger and fiercer than the previous ones."

Yue Zhong thought quietly, "An apocalypse eh? If those aliens spread throughout this planet, then this planet would be destroyed for good. A hell for humanity."

Thinking about what they were capable of, Yue Zhong felt a chill in his heart.

Yue Zhong waved his hand, sending out a Type 5 Enhancing Armor to Bai He Lian, "Miss Bai, I have with me here a powerful set of armor. It can augment a person's strength. I'm lending it to you, let's go clear the city of the aliens."

Bai He Lian took a look at the Type 5 Enhanced Battle Armor and could feel the extraordinary aura from it. She immediately put it on, and the Type 5 Mutant Beast Nuclei behind glowed, sending power coursing through her, pushing her to the peak-Type 5 realm.

"The armor is truly strange. Where did this Yue Zhong come from?" Bai He Lian felt the strength in her body and felt excited. She threw her doubt aside, "Regardless, I should focus on annihilating those aliens first."

"Fine! Once we're done, I'll return it to you. Let's go!"

She was a forthright person and disliked dragging matters. She immediately turned around and charged out.

Yue Zhong followed after, going according to Bai Yi's guidance towards where all the experts were gathering.

If Yue Zhong wanted to wipe out all the aliens hiding in the city, it would take time. If he had the help of many experts, it would be faster.

In this world, since everyone practiced martial arts, there were no shortages of Type 2 and Type 3 experts. There were also a few Type 4 and Type 5 experts.

Yue Zhong continued to slaughter the aliens throughout the city, saving 16 Type 4 experts, 3 Type 5 experts, and lending them Enhanced Armors to put on.

There were about 600 aliens assaulting South Origin City. Although they were ferocious, over half were killed by Yue Zhong and those experts.

When the remaining aliens saw that things were not going well, and started to grab as many humans as they could as they fled.

Seeing the aliens retreat, everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

Inside the meeting hall of the city lord's manor.

Pi Zhi Wen, a burly, muscular man that was one of the top 5 experts, looked at Yue Zhong and thanked him, "This time, it's all thanks to Brother Yue Zhong for lending a hand. Otherwise, our South Origin City would have truly suffered."

The rest of the people looked towards Yue Zhong with the same

look of gratitude.

He responded mildly, "It's nothing. Anyone would have done it."

Although he was not a saint, seeing foreign species killing humans, he would definitely not sit and spectate. If he was powerless, he would flee for his own life. If he had the strength, he would definitely use all his might to crush them.

Pi Zhi Wen's gaze fell upon Yue Zhong once more as he spoke, "Dare I ask, Brother Yue Zhong, which saint land have you come from?"

Hearing this, everyone turned to look at him curiously.

In response, Yue Zhong came clean, "I'm not from any saint land, but a planet called Earth. It's an entirely different world from yours."

Chapter 1002: Alien Queen!

When the experts of South Origin City heard Yue Zhong's reply, they exchanged bewildered looks, "Earth?"

Yue Zhong had already the intention to bring them to Earth, thus he did not hide it. He then spoke about all that he knew of the 2 worlds.

The humans of South Origin City were martial arts practitioner and had stronger physiques compared to the humans of Earth. If they could come under his China, and equipped with advanced weapons, Yue Zhong would gain an elite troop.

Yue Zhong got to the point, "Since South Origin City had come to this situation, I'm afraid that other places would likewise be under invasion. I hope that all the experts here can leave with me for Earth, and join my China."

With the appearance of the aliens, Yue Zhong guessed that the rest of the planet Uros would likely be attacked by those aliens. It was a good opportunity to win them over. Once those aliens finished evolving, then the city would be overwhelmed directly, without any experts left for him to bring over.

Hearing his invitation, many experts fell silent.

Bai He Lian, the Headmaster of Clear Wind Martial School, replied in a righteous manner, "Yue Zhong, our Clear Wind Martial School people are Urotians, even if we die, we will die as Urotians. We want to fight to protect Uros. We will not leave with you."

After she opened her mouth, Peng Liang, another of the top 5 experts, also replied softly, "Yue Zhong, this is a grave matter. Please allow us to consider."

Pi Zhi Wen spoke, "I would like to think about it."

The rest also started to mutter, "Yes! Let us think and consider properly."

"Sure!"

Yue Zhong did not push them, instead, laughing coldly in his heart, "A bunch of short-sighted fools, when the time comes, you guys will suffer."

After discussing some other topics, everyone then left.

Yue Zhong came to a large field and began to explain the situation, and invited them to join him once more.

On the field, when the survivors heard that, their faces fell as they revealed expressions of contemplation. In the end, not many chose to follow Yue Zhong to leave Uros.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong did not force them. He shook his head inwardly as he returned to his own room.

Inside the room, Jin Xuan'er got down on her knees with her golden ponytails shaking, as she gritted her teeth and begged, "Mr. Yue Zhong, please accept me as your disciple. I want to gain strength, and eradicate those aliens, and seek vengeance for my Master."

She had followed him all the way and saw his terrifying strength. In order to hunt those aliens, she had decided to bet it all on Yue Zhong in order to gain the strength.

Yue Zhong looked at the emotional girl and said, "I can take you in, and give you strength. However, you know my background, I will be leaving Uros soon. By that time, are you willing to leave with me?"

Jin Xuan'er's face fell slightly. In the end, she gritted her teeth, "Mr. Yue Zhong, as long as you allow me to kill 10 of those aliens, I will follow you."

She had a pent-up frustration, knowing that without the Type 4 Enhanced Armor, she could at most kill one or two aliens. If she could kill 10 of them, she might be able to vent the anger and sorrow.

Yue Zhong passed her a Type 4 Enhanced Battle Armor casually, "Fine! Since that's the case, this Type 4 Enhanced Armor is yours."

As she received it, she fell to her knees once more, kowtowing thrice, "Thank you, Master!!"

Yue Zhong continued, "Get up. Let me ask you, what are the saint lands?"

She replied, "The Saint Land is the holiest of places of experts of our planet Uros. Over there, there are countless records of martial arts and deep, profound skills. The experts there are numerous, with plenty of Type 5 and Type 6 experts. Legend has it that the Saint Lord is someone with a Type 7 Divine Warrior strength. Today, with the strength you displayed, everyone mistook you from the Saint Land."

Yue Zhong was rocked, "Type 7 Divine Warrior!! The humans of this world could actually cultivate to that extent?! Too powerful!"

A Type 7 Divine Warrior was someone similar to Emperor Ba Long from the 3rd World. One could easily wipe out a country. Yue Zhong was not necessarily a match for such an expert.

At first, he was a little disdainful of this world with its lacking technology and thought little of their combat power. However, hearing of a Type 7 existence, he was forced to reevaluate this world.

He sighed in his heart, "Seems like this world progressed along the cultivation route. Reaching the Type 7 realm is truly formidable."

Yue Zhong quickly threw all thoughts aside, and opened up his tablet, asking Bai Yi, "Any discoveries?"

When he entered South Origin City, he had released a large number of nano flies to scout the surroundings. After these nano flies were upgraded with the research and technology brought from America, their speed and visual ability had increased multiple

folds. Combined with Bai Yi's capabilities, they had become Yue Zhong's eyes everywhere.

Bai Yi swiftly pulled out an image, "Master, I've discovered a nest of those aliens. Take a look."

On the image, many humans were being herded into the cave by those ferocious aliens.

There was only despair in the eyes of the humans, some crying and wailing but continued to march on into the cave.

Following that, the images from the cave were also transmitted.

About 100m in, all along the walls of the caves, there was white, viscous liquid everywhere. Within the liquid, there were translucent cocoons.

When some humans were herded near those cocoons, the cocoons suddenly burst open, as a number of tentacles wrapped around those humans and pulled them in, resealing them within the cocoons.

Some were sealed while some other humans were pushed along deeper into the cave.

Other than the humans, there were even all sorts of wild beasts that had been captured and brought before the cocoons.

Through the images, Yue Zhong could see clearly that the humans and Mutant Beasts that had been swallowed into the cocoons were evolving, becoming those alien killing machines.

After passing countless tunnels, at the deepest recess, there was a massive cavern filled with aliens of even stranger shapes and compound eyes, emitting a terrifying aura.

"Are these all Type 6 aliens?! 20 of them!! Isn't that too terrifying? Once they come out, how can humans fight them?"

Yue Zhong caught sight of various beings similar to the alien that had tried to snatch his treasures at the Gates of Hell. However,

these ones were even more horrifying than the one he had encountered. Counting 20 of them, even his scalp went numb.

Just a single Type 6 alien life form would be frightening to deal with. If it were just one, it would take him some time and means to kill. If there were 2, Yue Zhong could still forcefully suppress them. He was not afraid of 3. If there were 6, he might choose to flee. However, 20 of them, if it was a frontal clash, the moment he got surrounded, he would be wiped out.

At the center of the protection of those Type 6 aliens, there was one single alien with a huge abdomen just like an ant queen. It was huge and its abdomen was over a kilometer long. This was their queen.

There were countless tubes connected to the alien queen, linked to the cocoons outside.

Many humans and Mutant Beasts were herded in front of the queen's mouth, as it crushed them within its jaws and swallowed them.

After consuming such a huge amount of food, the abdomen of the queen burst forth with mucus, containing larvae.

The larvae started to crawl out like ants, climbing into the various cocoons. The scene was hair-raising.

At the same time, the queen suddenly shrieked out, and its huge abdomen retracted from a kilometer to 500 meters.

In the process, a terrifying alien with compound eyes and sharp pincers, covered in a black, metallic exoskeleton and a pair of wings came crawling out from behind.

"A Type 6 alien!! So the high-level aliens come directly from the alien queen. The low-level ones and big-bellied ones are spread like parasites."

Yue Zhong could tell the newborn alien to be a Type 6 life form because he had seen similar ones guarding the queen.

He quickly came to a judgment, "No. I have to quickly annihilate this alien queen. Otherwise, it will continue to produce high-level aliens. No human would survive in South Origin City."

He frowned as he continued to mull over, "With such a deep hiding spot, and 21 Type 6 aliens protecting it, how should I proceed?"

Chapter 1003: Killing a Type 6 Alien!

As Yue Zhong pondered, his eyes suddenly gleamed. With a flip of his hand, he pulled out the Stealth Armor he obtained from Xue Shi, "That's right! I still have this!!"

He put it on, and with a flicker, all signs of his presence disappeared from the world. He quickly flew towards the cave.

Coming to the cave, he saw another batch of Mutant Beasts being herded over, forced into the cave.

He activated his Flight ability again, soaring noiselessly into the cave, not getting near any of the aliens.

After he entered the cave, he followed the path he had set prior, finally reaching the deepest recess, coming across those 21 Type 6 aliens that were protecting the queen.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the cave, he proceeded even more carefully, his heart palpitating, as he made his way behind the head of the queen.

Just as he flew forward about a dozen meters, suddenly, one of the aliens on the ground, that had 8 limbs and looked like a spider, began to shriek out and fired strands of silk at Yue Zhong.

"Not good!! I was discovered!!"

He felt shocked and found his body bound by the strands of silk. They coiled around him rapidly, intending to constrict him to death. Even with his Second Order God-Devil Body, he still felt the pain, as though his muscles and bones were being crushed.

At that instant, Yue Zhong activated his God-Devil Flame, and the flames burned the silk into ash.

Not wasting a moment, he fired 30 balls of flame towards the various aliens all around the queen.

The spider-like alien opened its jaws, firing out a poison spit that

clashed with one of the God-Devil Flames, forcefully extinguishing it.

Another scorpion-like alien opened its jaws as well, firing its own spit at the incoming God-Devil Flame, extinguishing it.

The rest of the aliens either dealt with it in similar manners or dodged them with insane speed.

As for the queen, it was unable to dodge, and could only stare at the 8 balls of flames that landed on its body.

4 of them landed on the upper torso of the queen, burning the queen as it shrieked out in agony.

As the shriek rang out, the entire upper body of the queen was turned to ash.

The other 4 God-Devil Flames landed on the abdomen, spreading out insanely and burning up the bottom part.

When the abdomen caught fire, it split apart and many half-formed alien spawn burst out amidst the viscous white liquid, as they quickly scrambled out in all directions.

At the same time, there were even over a hundred half-formed aliens that followed after. Had these half-formed aliens finished their growth, they could become Type 6 aliens, however, due to the forceful birth, they were only at the Type 5 stage right now.

When all the aliens looked at Yue Zhong, their eyes flashed with a ferocious glint and pounced towards him.

Yue Zhong fired out the God-Devil Flames and did not stay longer than necessary. With a flash of his body, he quickly made for the exit.

One of the compound-eyed aliens let out a sharp howl.

The rest of the aliens burst out with their speed, chasing after him.

"Not good, if I were to fly, my speed cannot match up to those

aliens."

After a few meters, Yue Zhong came to his senses and descended, activating his Shadow Steps as he charged outwards.

With his peak-Type 6 speed, he could reach Mach-1.5 at most by flying, but on land, he could reach Mach-2.5.

A thought then flashed through his mind, and instantly, 4 bloody radiances appeared around him. He continued to charge forward like a bolt of lightning.

The moment the aliens appeared to block, they were bashed sideways by the 4 beams.

The bloody radiance was profound and mysterious. It could become soft or hard, with huge adaptability to the situation. The most frightening thing was that it seemed to be the most suitable method of dealing with these aliens, that was almost invincible in close combat.

With his speed, in just a short span of time, he had already knocked most of the aliens aside, charging out of the nest.

However, before he could catch a breath, 3 winged-aliens with sharp pincers and black exoskeletons appeared behind it in 3 different directions, lunging for him.

The 3 aliens were aerial-type, and their maximum speed was able to reach Mach-3, even faster than Yue Zhong.

When comparing speed of the same realm, winged-type monsters were usually faster than land ones.

Yue Zhong became even more cautious. In this critical moment, he did not retreat, instead, pushing forward with his fists wrapped in his slightly-golden Dou Qi, blasting the 3 aliens consecutively.

Following 3 loud sounds, the 3 aliens burst apart, their corrosive blood splattering everywhere.

The 4 blood radiance swept forward, immediately meeting the

corrosive blood and flung them outwards.

With the deaths of those 3 Type 6 winged-aliens, 3 orbs of strong life force entered Yue Zhong's body, nourishing him.

He then turned to face another lizard-type alien, as 3 of the bloody radiance swooped forwards to slice through it.

The body of the lizard-alien trembled slightly, directly dodging the bloody radiance. It reappeared right behind Yue Zhong, slashing towards his heart.

With a thought, his Sixth Order Gravity Manipulation activated and crushed down on the alien, disorienting it.

As the lizard-alien was slowed down, Yue Zhong's fist came pummeling its head. His strength exploded out, causing its head to burst apart.

Since Yue Zhong was currently at the peak-Type 6 realm, his God-Devil Body was at the Second Order. With his various abilities, he could take on one alien by itself. As long as he was not surrounded, he could definitely kill one in a few exchanges.

After killing that alien, Yue Zhong's body shook and split into 4 of them, as he took the initiative to charge towards 4 separate Type 6 aliens.

The 4 bloody radiance flashed out, slicing backward, preventing the aliens chasing behind from passing through.

The 4 Yue Zhongs came in front of those tall and swift Type 6 aliens with powerful and coarse limbs.

Their eyes gleamed in response, as they slashed out with their insane speed, intending to tear Yue Zhong apart.

The claws of the aliens tore through the clones easily, only to be met with the chuckling faces, before their fists smashed into the heads of the aliens, bursting them apart.

After the Shadow Clone ability had been upgraded to the Sixth

Order, it had turned into a White-silver graded ability, with added buffs. Each of his clones had his constitution, possessing immense strength. At the same time, as long as their core was not destroyed, they would not be killed.

The core of these clones were all in their heads, only by destroying his head with absolute strength could cause these clones to perish.

After killing 4 of those aliens, Yue Zhong's clones then pounced towards the rest of the aliens.

When those 4 clones reached one Type 6 alien, countless silk strands shot out and wound around their heads, destroying their cores.

"Go to hell!!"

Yue Zhong's true body was wrapped in God-Devil Flames, causing the air to distort from the heat as he burned all the silk up. He then turned up in front of the spider-alien and punched out at its head, causing it to explode.

After killing the Type 6 spider-alien, he saw countless others crawling along the walls of the cavern towards him.

The cocoons along the wall also exploded one by one, revealing a few half-evolved aliens that immediately pounced over.

Within some of them, there were even parasite-controlled humans and Mutant Beasts that joined the fray.

"Right on time! Burn in hell for me!!"

Yue Zhong looked at all of them, and bellowed in rage, causing the 4 bloody radiances to tear through the controlled humans and beasts, slicing through them and sucking them dry.

By now, 9 of the Type 6 aliens had been killed, and if the remaining 12 did not gather together, they would not be a match for Yue Zhong.

The 4 bloody radiances continued to soar everywhere, absorbing the blood essences of the aliens, before they split to produce another 2 more beams.

The skill was truly demonic, as the more it absorbed, the more terrifying it became. After turning into 6 beams, their speed increased further, directly slicing through the Type 5 aliens and sucking them clean. However, it was still far from penetrating the Type 6 aliens.

Right as Yue Zhong was gaining the advantage, killing another 2 more Type 6 aliens, Bai Yi's voice sounded from the communicator, "Master, watch out, there might be a huge accident in this nest!"

Yue Zhong felt his heart turn cold as he put on the multipurpose helmet and barked out, "What happened?"

Chapter 1004: Type 7 Alien!

A flurry of notifications rang out from the helmet. Within the nest of the aliens, there was a huge 3m-tall alien with long, sharp claws consuming the corpse of the alien queen.

As it ate and devoured, it started to glow with a dim black light that grew brighter steadily, obviously, it was evolving at a rapid pace.

Yue Zhong looked at the evolving Alien and his fae fell, "Shit, this bloody bastard is going to evolve! Once it hits the Type 7 realm, I won't be a match for it."

Without any hesitation, he waved his hands and released the Scarlet Reaper, and entered the living mech.

The moment he entered, Yue Zhong immediately activated the final trump card of the Scarlet Reaper, the Raytheon Cannon.

The Scarlet Reaper swiftly transformed into the Raytheon Cannon, and with an intense blast of light, it fired a terrifying beam towards the nest.

Under that powerful beam of destruction, all the aliens within the nest, be it Type 5 or Type 6, were all turned into ash.

The entire cave started to crumble and collapse, as debris fell on the half-formed aliens, crushing them underneath.

With the deaths of the aliens, a huge amount of life force entered Yue Zhong's body, pushing his state up as he sensed his body improving yet another level. However, it was still lacking that step to reach the Type 7 realm.

After the Scarlet Reaper fired the Raytheon Cannon, the Type 6 Nucleus in its chest cracked and crumbled into dust.

Yue Zhong felt his heart ache at the sight of that, "Damn!! That was a Type 6 Nucleus wasted."

A single nucleus was extremely precious. Yue Zhong had to scavenge the entire Capital of the Cloud Region in the 3rd World and the Xue Luo Forts just to comb out no more than 10 of them. Now that he had lost one, he was naturally agonizing over it.

He suppressed the feeling of pity and asked Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, is that alien dead?"

She swiftly replied, "This attack of yours was strong, and wiped out the nanoflies within. I have no way of ascertaining the situation. However, based on the previous data available, the alien was evolving strongly, and the might of the Raytheon Cannon was not enough to kill it. The rate of it surviving is 78%."

Yue Zhong stared at the rubble and frowned, "That means to say, that fellow is still not dead!"

He had to utilize all sorts of methods just to take out the Saint Emperor Xue Shi. Even if he had reached the peak of Type 6, he was not confident in taking on a Type 7 alien.

If possible, he would want to take it out before it matured. He would never allow his enemies to grow strong enough to threaten himself.

Bai Yi spoke, "From a perspective of probability, it is not dead."

"I must take it out. I definitely cannot allow it to evolve to the Type 7 realm. Bai Yi, any suggestions?"

A savage glint flashed across Yue Zhong's eyes as he shot across the ground and activated his Gravity Manipulation.

A faint yellowish shockwave spread through the ground, as it started to split apart as though it was alive, revealing a number of cracks.

After reaching the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong was able to destroy an entire region stretching a few kilometers.

Once the earth split apart, the collapsed nest was revealed. Other

than those aliens caught in the trajectory of the Raytheon Cannon beam, the rest of the aliens had not yet died. As the earth dislodged, they quickly leaped out and tried to flee in various directions.

Unfortunately for them, each time one appeared, the 6 bloody radiances surrounding Yue Zhong would sweep out and claim the lives of those aliens, turning them into dried up corpses.

With Bai Yi's help, Yue Zhong continued to overturn the ground, finally arriving near the area where the alien queen's corpse was.

At the instant, a black figure darted out like lightning, charging towards the Scarlet Reaper that Yue Zhong was piloting, slamming into the energy shield viciously.

After losing the Type 6 Nucleus, the Scarlet Reaper's energy shield was not as powerful and was instantly shattered by that impact.

However, it allowed Yue Zhong to take a good look at the figure.

It was the alien that had been consuming the corpse of the alien queen, with a ferocious visage and a layer of black, mysterious light surrounding it as it exuded a terrifying aura.

After the alien destroyed the energy shield, it turned into a blur of light that shot for the heart area.

Yue Zhong took a look and his face fell, "Type 7 alien?"

It was a huge watershed between the Type 6 and Type 7 realms. Most Type 7 Divine Warriors could start to manipulate the atmospheric energy around them. Those who could not fly before would possess the ability to fly.

In a breath, the Type 7 alien shot in front of the heart area of the Scarlet Reaper, its eyes tearing through the armor like tofu.

The metal alloy that could withstand most heavy cannons could not bear the sharpness of the alien's claws.

With a thought, Yue Zhong quickly exited the Scarlet Reaper and kept it into his Storage Ring, activating his flight ability as he shot into the sky.

After losing the Type 6 nucleus, the Scarlet Reaper lost much of its effectiveness in such a fight.

It was extremely useful in a battle against large numbers when used with the Type 6 nucleus.

Seeing Yue Zhong soar high, the alien's eyes flashed with a dangerous glint as it released a bout of dark energy from behind it. Its speed was suddenly raised, and it reappeared right in front of Yue Zhong, slashing out with its sharp claws.

With a thought, the 6 bloody radiances blocked in front of him.

The sharp claws of the Type 7 alien slammed into the 6 radiances, causing a huge tear in one of them.

The claws struck out 6 consecutive times, tearing through the bloody radiances.

"Die!!"

At the moment where the alien broke through all of the radiances, Yue Zhong roared in fury. The 6 bloody radiances turned into a powerful blood river that surrounded the alien, absorbing the blood essence of the alien frenziedly.

The Blood Manipulation ability was extremely insidious, it could become stronger by absorbing the blood essence of other biological life forms. The stronger the life form, the stronger the bloody radiance became.

Yue Zhong had controlled the bloody radiance to take in so much corrosive blood of the aliens, that even a Type 6 expert would be sucked dry in a manner of seconds if surrounded.

Unfortunately, the bloody radiance only managed to surround the Type 7 alien for barely 3 seconds, before it broke out.

The 6 bloody radiances were forcefully scattered. By the time they congealed back, the radiance had dimmed slightly, apparently losing some of its strength.

Yue Zhong stared in shock, "What a terrifying a Type 7 alien!!"

If it had been Yue Zhong, the moment he was surrounded by such a skill, he would activate the God-Devil Flame to burn it all. Otherwise, he would be sucked dry as well.

When the alien broke out, its eyes flashed ferociously, charging at Yue Zhong with the protection of the black energy surrounding it.

Yue Zhong channeled his Sixth Order Flight ability, shooting for the distance like a meteor.

The Type 7 alien was evidently a close-combat type. Such existences were incredibly tough since they were lacking in the long-range department.

Although Yue Zhong was also considered a close-combat specialist, however, compared to this killing machine, which was even a realm higher than him, he had no confidence of taking it on in a melee manner.

Both sides engaged in a chase, as they soared across the distance.

His Flight's speed was faster than the Type 7 alien by 30%, however, he only managed to keep a certain distance, not pulling away.

After some time, he released the Scarlet Reaper once more and sent a Type 6 Nucleus into its body.

He then merged back in with it and piloted it to charge at full speed.

The speed of the Scarlet Reaper far exceeded the Type 7 alien. However, Yue Zhong did not forget to fire out a number of laser beams at the time he opened the wings.

The Type 7 alien had no means of retaliation, and could only watch helplessly as the light beams slammed into its body.

A number of terrifying explosions rang out, as the black energy surrounding the alien took on most of the impact, protecting the alien.

After the beams fired out continuously for 15 minutes, the Type 7 alien let out an unwilling roar of fury as it fell out of the sky.

Chapter 1005: People from the Saint Lands!

Yue Zhong controlled the Scarlet Reaper to fire out multiple light beams at the alien, while the dark energy around the alien continued to absorb the impact, preventing any from damaging it.

However, due to the intensity of the assault, the dark shield was slowly starting to dim, while multiple spots were uneven.

Even a Type 7 expert would have a limit to its energy. Once the defenses were tested to the limits, they would naturally break as well.

The Type 7 alien was extremely crafty, once it saw that it could not catch up to Yue Zhong, it quickly descended and dashed towards the distance to flee.

"Trying to run?! Too bad, in front of the Scarlet Reaper, you can forget about it!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly and with a thought, numerous sensors extended out of the Scarlet Reaper, taking in the route of the alien.

He piloted the Scarlet Reaper to give chase, each time he got near it, he would fire out multiple light beams.

On the ground, the Type 7 alien was much faster than it was in the air. However, compared to the Scarlet Reaper, it was just lacking a little. Although it made use of the surrounding foliage and boulders to cover itself, it would still be struck by those light beams.

At the same time, due to its increased speed, most of the light beams would hit blank space, causing only a bare few to hit the alien.

The continuous barrage happened for another 5 minutes, and the dark energy surrounding the Type 7 alien finally disappeared, and one light beam slammed into it.

A shocking scene appeared. The light beam that could easily pierce the toughest of metals was actually blocked by the exoskeleton of the alien, causing it to shudder slightly, but there was no true harm done.

In the sky, Yue Zhong saw this and frowned, "Damn it, this Type 7 alien's defenses are too much! Should I fire another Raytheon Cannon?"

The Raytheon Cannon was the strongest weapon in the Scarlet Reaper's arsenal. If hit, even a Type 7 expert would fall.

However, the speed of the Type 7 alien below was simply too fast. Due to its constant dodging and evading, Yue Zhong did not have the confidence of hitting it accurately.

Both sides continued in their chase, as they came to a mountain range.

Along the way, the huge mountain of over a thousand meters tall appeared in their eyes. They also caught sight of a natural cave at the foot of the mountain.

When the alien saw the cave, it flashed and charged directly for it.

Yue Zhong stood at the entrance and muttered in an upset manner, "Shit! It escaped!"

The entrance was extremely narrow and was perfect for that alien to squeeze through. If Yue Zhong forcefully charged in, he could be ambushed by the alien if he was not careful.

As he took a good look at the cave, he withdrew the Scarlet Reaper back into his Storage Ring.

"Where is this?"

Yue Zhong took a look around, noting that he had come to a vast forest, with countless trees all around. He could tell that there were many terrifying auras from various regions of the forests,

belonging to Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts.

At this time, there was the sound of a loud roar, as though it came from a dragon from legends.

"There's someone fighting over there!"

Yue Zhong heard the roar and swiftly made his way over.

On a hill on the west side of the forest, there was a huge airship spanning over a hundred meters parked.

3km away, there was a strange creature of over 60m, looking like a dragon from Western mythology, covered in black scales and flapping its massive, fleshy wings. It was roaring out continuously.

The black dragon-like beast emitted a dangerous pressure, as sand and gravel circled its body due to the black energy it was radiating.

In front of it, there a few warriors inside mechs of about 3 meters in height, covered in countless tubes and electric components, fighting against the dragon-like beast.

These soldiers had activated their energy shields, while wielding powerful particle cannons, and were surrounding the dragon-like beast, firing out at it continuously.

Although the beast looked massive, its speed was incredibly quick. In just a few breaths, it appeared in front of one of the soldiers, swiping its huge claws down. That attack destroyed the energy shield of the unfortunate soldier like cracking an egg, before crushing the soldier into a pulp.

The particle beams fired out at the surrounding foliage and earth, causing devastating destruction.

Any tree and boulder hit by those beams were instantly annihilated in a powerful blast.

After crushing one of the soldiers, the huge dragon sought to fly in the sky, appearing in front of another soldier, and swiped down,

crushing him as well.

At this time, the rest of the soldiers waved their hands, as a number of beams shot out from the boxes behind them. They combined to form a huge web, that covered the dragon.

Once it was caught, it began to struggle, trying its best to escape from the web, but was unable to break free.

The soldiers in that special armor continued to use their particle cannons on the dragon, wearing its energy shield down.

The huge dragon continued to struggle, unable to break free. It watched helplessly as the particle beams struck its body continuously.

However, the defenses of the huge dragon were astonishing as well. As the beams struck it, they were unable to breach its defenses.

On top of a huge tree about 200m away from the fight, there were 2 men in white combat uniform, looking extraordinary. They observed the battle with a cold and disdainful gaze.

One of them had a long ponytail, his face bright as he smiled, "Heh! This time, we're considered lucky, actually discovering this Type 5 Black Dragon Beast that was just born not long ago. Its innate potential is limitless, if allowed to mature, it can become a Type 7 Mutant Beast. Zhang Xuan, this time I just want the beast, the rest of the spoils will be yours."

The other man with the cold gaze, Zhang Xuan, refused directly, "Chen Liang. I can't do that. I want that beast, you can have the rest."

Chen Liang frowned, before chuckling, "Forget it. Let's talk about it after we deal with the beast. If we fall out over something we haven't obtain, it would be truly silly. Furthermore, with such a good sapling, those old things at the Saint Land might not let us have it."

Zhang Xuan nodded silently.

The huge Black Dragon Beast continued to struggle under the net. As it became clearer that it was not able to escape, the look in its eyes turned incredibly savage, and it spat out a black flame at the net.

The black flame carried with it a mysterious and evil power, distorting the space as it slammed into the net.

The moment it came into contact, the aura of the black dragon exploded out, causing the net to twist and snap.

With that, the Black Dragon Beast started to tear with all its might, extracting itself from the net. It then grabbed one of the soldiers nearby and crushed it in its claws. It then spat out a ring of black flames all around, causing the human soldiers to burn.

Chen Liang laughed out confidently, "Even our Saint Warriors were killed so easily, this Type 5 Black Dragon Beast is truly not simple. Let's make a move, lest it kills more of our soldiers and escapes, that would be a huge loss then."

After that, Chen Liang shot forward, appearing above the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast in a flash. His entire body then emitted a powerful aura, reaching the initial-Type 6 realm, and sent a powerful fist blasting towards the Black Dragon Beast, smashing into its head.

The Type 5 Black Dragon Beast took the hit and was sent crashing into the ground, its black energy shield disappearing.

At that moment, the entire ground trembled upon the impact.

With a burst of grey light, a human silhouette shot towards the beast, sending another fist into the body of the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast.

The scales of the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast broke apart, and it was sent flying another few hundred meters.

As it tumbled, 2 powerful blade beams shot through its wings, one black and one white, as its wings were sliced off amidst a shower of blood and scales.

The Type 5 Black Dragon Beast roared out in agony, its wings torn off by the Type 6 Chen Liang and Zhang Xuan.

Chapter 1006: Black Dragon Beast!

With its wings destroyed, the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast was no longer capable of flight.

The soldiers surrounding the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast quickly fired their particle cannons at the beast as well.

Losing the black energy protection, the Black Dragon Beast was bombarded by attacks, its scales chipping off and its blood flowing freely. It continued to roar out in agony and fear.

With the passing of time, its strength began to plummet.

Just then, there was an earth-shaking roar from a far-off distance, causing one to tremble.

When Chen Liang heard the roar, his face fell, "No good! That fellow's family is here! Judging from the roar, it should be at least Type 6! It's not something we can take it on! Disperse now!"

This Black Dragon Beast is similar to the Wurm that Yue Zhong came across before. It was a natural-occurring ferocious Mutant Beast. A Type 6 Black Dragon Beast was enough to go against a low-level Type 7 Mutant Beast, even killing one.

While Chen Liang and his team were able to make use of the means at their disposal to deal with a Type 5 Black Dragon Beast, it would only be death if they fought against a Type 6 one. Against a Type 7 Black Dragon Beast, there would simply be no escape.

Under his orders, everyone quickly retreated quickly, moving towards the airship.

Barely moments after they left, a terrifying tornado blew past, as a hundred-meter Black Dragon Beast came descending with its mighty wings flapping. It emitted a terrifying aura, as it swept its huge, golden eyes towards the broken Black Dragon Beast on the ground.

Yue Zhong had activated his Stealth ability as he hid in one corner. He had witnessed everything from the start to the end and could feel the strength of the aura from the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast, and he was filled with shock, "Is this a Type 6 Mutant Beast? No! Its aura is stronger than mine, just slightly below that damned Emperor Ba Long. In terms of just pressure, it's already stronger than most Type 7 experts."

Feeling the mighty pressure, Yue Zhong closed his eyes and retracted all signs of his aura. His breath, heartbeat, body warmth, presence were all tightly withdrawn, as though he had become a stone.

Seeing the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast with its mutilated wings, the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast had a ferocious glint in its eyes. It opened its huge jaws and let out a furious roar that rocked the ground and area.

A powerful soundwave blasted out in a 500m radius, as all the trees, boulders within the region were destroyed.

The soundwave also shook Yue Zhong in his Stealth mode, causing his internal organs to be shaken despite his God-Devil Body.

As for Chen Liang and the rest who were a distance away, they were also swept by that attack. Both he and Zhang Xuan spat out a mouthful of blood, as they quickened their pace.

3 of the soldiers wearing mechanical armor crumpled to the ground, not moving anymore. 8 others were rocked and their movements became unsteady, while the rest followed Chen Liang and Zhang Xuan closely

After that roar, the terrifying Type 6 Black Dragon Beast flapped its wings and whipped up a terrifying tornado as it shot towards the Saint Land experts.

"Chance!"

Barely 20 seconds after the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast left, Yue Zhong opened his eyes as he looked towards the heavily injured Type 5 Black Dragon Beast.

With a thought, 6 bloody radiances shot towards the Black Dragon Beast without a sound and wrapped around the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast.

As they surrounded the body, the wounds began to split and huge amounts of blood were absorbed.

Had the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast had been at its prime condition, it could at least retaliate. However, it was extremely weakened now, unable to resist the absorption. It opened its jaws, intending to roar for help. However, the evil blood went straight into its throat and jammed it, preventing it from making a sound.

In just 3 seconds, the entire Black Dragon Beast was sucked dry, turning into a corpse with a layer of skin and bones.

A powerful bout of life force entered Yue Zhong's body, at the same time, the bloody radiances retrieved a Type 5 Nucleus and delivered it into his hands.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze across his bloody radiances, discovering that they had evolved to 7 beams, "The latent potential within the blood of this Type 5 Black Dragon Beast is truly amazing."

The Blood Manipulation ability was overpowered. The more the blood absorbed, the stronger it became, the more it split into as well. After becoming 7 beams, Yue Zhong was able to sweep through Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

With a thought, White Bones stepped out from the nether realm and began to work on the bones and scales of the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast's corpse.

After reaching the Type 6 realm, White Bones' bones had also started to evolve towards a white-silver color. At the same time, it had begun to emit a powerful and cold aura. A Type 5 expert might

not necessarily be a match for White Bones at this stage.

When White Bones appeared, it quickly went over to the bones and started absorbing the bone essences.

Other than Yue Zhong's skill being upgraded to help White Bones, it could also absorb the essence from bones to evolve. However, with its current strength, it could only evolve from absorbing bone essence from Type 5 Mutant Beasts. Type 4 Mutant Beasts could not help it much.

"I should go save those experts from the Saint Lands. See if I can establish some connections with them. Their technology and martial arts are all exceptional, compared to those from the South Origin City, it truly is a vast difference."

With this thought, Yue Zhong left White Bones behind, as he activated Stealth and darted through the forest, heading towards Chen Liang and the rest.

In the sky, the huge airship had activated its protection, trying its best to flee far ahead.

By this time, the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast had caught up, slamming into the energy shield like a black meteor. Each time, the impact caused the energy shield to crack a little more, as though it was on a verge of collapsing.

Even so, the airship was still holding out, like a small boat in the raging seas, shaking and its fate unknown.

Yue Zhong lifted his head to eye the battle between the behemoths, without any intention to help yet. Currently, the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast had not yet actually engaged the experts within. If he joined the fray now, who knew if their animosity might be taken out on him.

A pilot came up to Chen Liang, reporting, "Saint Envoy Chen Lian, we are currently down to 46% of our energy. If things continue on like this, we will lose all power in 1 minute's time, and

we would have to shut down the shield and land the airship."

Chen Liang's face turned incredibly ugly, as he asked Zhang Xuan, "What do you think? Shall we go all out? Otherwise, if we lose power later, we can't even do anything."

Zhang Xuan nodded silently after a moment of contemplation, "Let's do it."

Chen Liang ordered, "Land the airship, all Saint Warriors are to prepare for battle"

With his orders, the huge ship quickly descended while withstanding the hits from the Black Dragon Beast.

The moment they landed, 30 Saint Warriors leaped out, raising their weapons and firing out at the beast in the air. A light net was formed that enveloped the Black Dragon Beast that had shot down too fast to dodge the net.

Trapped by the light net, the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast extended out its wings, and struggled violently, tearing the light net apart.

The 30 Saint Warriors were then sent flying a dozen meters.

Once the beast broke apart from the net, it flapped its massive wings and with a gust of tornado, it charged towards the 30 soldiers with its Mach-3 Speed. Each time its claws came smashing down, the soldiers would be crushed like minced meat.

Without any noise, Chen Liang suddenly exploded out and turned into a flash of white light that shot towards the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast. On his pale white hand, a white radiance continued to glow brightly as space was torn asunder and repaired continuously.

Chen Liang was a top expert in the Saint Lands, training in one of the strongest arts within the Saint Lands, Space Disruption. Once he utilized it, his hands were able to tear through any protection and cause damage to his opponents.

In a breath, he appeared on the right wing of the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast, slapping both his hands down, and at that moment, space was torn and the energy protection of the Black Dragon Beast was penetrated, allowing his fists to punch out at the right wing.

As space was rapidly degenerating and repairing, the scales on the right wing were destroyed, causing blood to flow.

Chapter 1007: Reaching the Type 7 Realm!

However, even with the profound Space Disruption skill, it was impossible for him to tear through the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast's wings, only causing some light wounds.

The Black Dragon Beast turned around coldly as though it was not affected in the slightest bit, and sent a breath of terrifying dragon's breath towards Chen Liang.

"No!! Block it!!"

Chen Liang suddenly felt a sense of danger as he let out a roar of despair. With a flip of his hand, a jade plate appeared and glowed brightly, turning into a shield that protected him.

The all-burning Dragon's Breath immediately enveloped Chen Liang. Under its intense flame, the shield barely held up for a moment before collapsing. The Type 6 Chen Liang was then turned into ashes, not before he revealed a look of despair at the moment he died.

Seeing that, Zhang Xuan's heart turned cold. He might not like Chen Liang, but as humans, he did not want to see him dead. Furthermore, now that he was alone, he had no confidence in dealing with this Type 6 Black Dragon Beast.

"Duck to the right!"

At this moment, a loud roar sounded from afar. When Zhang Xuan heard that human voice, he quickly shot for the right.

From the forest afar, the Scarlet Reaper had already transformed into the Raytheon Cannon-form under Yue Zhong's control, and an intense amount of energy was being gathered.

The seemingly-invincible Type 6 Black Dragon Beast felt a sudden crisis. It could no longer bother about killing Zhang Xuan, instead, flapping its wings to soar into the sky.

The next moment, a white beam shot out from the Scarlet Reaper, blasting towards the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast.

The pillar of light slammed into the protective energy of the Black Dragon Beast, which shuddered for barely half a breath's time before it collapsed.

However, it allowed the Black Dragon Beast to evade out of the radius. Unfortunately, its lower body did not manage to escape from the pillar of light and was instantly disintegrated.

After the light disappeared, and the lower body of the Black Dragon Beast was destroyed, blood flowed and its inner organs splattered out.

It was just that immediately, the wounds began to close up and stop bleeding at a speed visible to the naked eye.

The Type 6 Black Dragon Beast was heavily injured and had no mood to continue chasing the Saint Land people. It flapped its wings and raised a tornado in a bid to flee.

"It was actually able to flee with its life after taking a hit from the Raytheon Cannon. This Type 6 Black Dragon Beast is truly terrifying."

Yue Zhong stared at the fleeing Black Dragon Beast and his heart turned cold. He piloted the Scarlet Reaper to change back into its mech mode, as its wings of light flashed. It charged forward at a speed of Mach-6, turning into a shooting star that chased after the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast.

In a few seconds, the Scarlet Reaper had caught up to the Black Dragon Beast, pulling out a huge laser blade as it slashed at the right wing of the beast.

Having lost the protection radiance, the laser blade of the Scarlet Reaper cleaved down viciously, tearing through the scales of the Black Dragon Beast and through the entire wing, causing large amounts of blood to pour out.

At that moment, the Black Dragon Beast twisted its body and used its huge tail to slam the Scarlet Reaper viciously.

Yue Zhong had to control the Scarlet Reaper to wield its blade with both hands, just to tear through the wing. He had no energy left to defend itself, and thus, the tail slammed into him, causing the waist to almost break.

After suffering that hit, the Scarlet Reaper shot backward, its frame quivering, causing Yue Zhong's blood to flow erratically as well.

Since the wings of the Black Dragon Beast allowed it to fly, losing one caused its entire body to destabilize, and it began to descend.

In that instant, Yue Zhong quickly readjusted his state and controlled the Scarlet Reaper to soar around to the other side. He then charged back towards the Black Dragon Beast and slashed out viciously, cleaving through the remaining wing.

Having lost both its wings, the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast could no longer maintain its balance and started to descend, as it spat out a mouthful of blood.

Yue Zhong then piloted the Scarlet Reaper to shoot down, wielding the laser blade to penetrate the head of the beast, directly crushing the contents.

With its death, a huge amount of life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body. Due to the pure and strong life force, it quickly kicked off a chain reaction within Yue Zhong's body.

The life force spread throughout Yue Zhong's body, as it was continuously refined into the light-gold mist. The mist began to strengthen every single cell and fiber of his body.

In the end, the mist also traveled to Yue Zhong's head, strengthening his sea of notification.

As the light-gold mist entered his mind, it was absorbed into his God-Devil Nucleus, strengthening the various runes within it.

Under the constant evolution, the skill runes began to glow in a faint gold color, as their originally silver color began to turn.

Then, with a loud boom, something seemed to break within his mind, and he instantly felt like he had transcended time and space. A flurry of notifications began to ring out in his mind, as more runes and enlightenment filled his head.

"Congratulations on becoming a Type 7 Divine Warrior."

"Congratulations, all skills have been raised by a tier."

Amidst the sweet sounds, Yue Zhong opened his eyes slowly, and a look of excitement flashed within, "Type 7! I've actually broken through to the Type 7 realm!! This is great!"

After he reached the Type 7 realm, Yue Zhong closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He extended his right hand and felt a powerful force gathering within. Looking at it, he thought, "Since I've reached the Type 7 realm, there's a qualitative difference. I can absorb and manipulate the atmospheric energy. My combat strength has now far surpassed a Type 6 Divine Warrior."

He could clearly sense the chaotic energy surrounding him, and as long as he willed it, he could manipulate it to allow him to fly, or absorb it to strengthen his own prowess.

With this ability, his strength and stamina would be greatly empowered on the battlefield. Even if he went into a million-strong horde, he could easily slaughter his way out.

He collected himself and pointed at the corpse of the Black Dragon Beast, and the blood from within began to congeal and formed a bloody radiance around him.

This radiance contained the blood essence of this terrifying Black Dragon Beast. Every single drop was precious and could be used to groom an expert.

At the same time, the blood brought along the Type 6 nucleus into his hand, reimbursing his losses incurred from taking on the

Type 7 alien.

Zhang Xuan came up to Yue Zhong and bowed, "Many thanks to senior for lending a hand! I'm Saint Envoy Zhang Xuan from the Saint Lands, how do I address senior?"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "I'm Yue Zhong, a wandering cultivator from South Origin City."

He had already obtained quite a bit of information from South Origin City.

This world was one of technology and martial arts. Experts were rampant, and the strongest cultivators and advanced technology were all in the Saint Lands. Other than that, there were a few wandering cultivators who traversed the world on their own, dealing with the ferocious beasts and trained bitterly. Many of them were exceptionally strong, and might not lose out to any experts from the Saint Lands.

When Zhang Xuan heard it, he was a little suspicious, but continued to speak respectfully, "Yue Zhong, in order to repay you for saving my life, I hope that you can accompany me to the Saint Lands, and let me host you, how about it?"

Although he did not believe Yue Zhong's background, Yue Zhong had indeed saved his life. At the same time, he had seen the Scarlet Reaper. Just based on that mech, it was enough for him to be respectful.

This time, Zhang Xuan had suffered huge losses on this hunting mission, even losing another Saint Envoy, as well as his entire troop of Saint Soldiers. If he did not bring back some contributions, he would not be let off. If he could invite such an expert as well as the Scarlet Reaper back to the Saint Lands, he would be heavily rewarded instead of being punished.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly and replied directly, "Sure! I was heading over there to take a look."

"Please!"

Zhang Xuan then extended his hand out, inviting Yue Zhong into his airship.

After the both of them entered, the airship turned into a beam of light that shot towards the west.

Chapter 1008: Saint Lands!

The massive airship continued to fly through the air, before arriving at the Saint Lands after half a day.

The Saint Lands was located on a spiritual mountain filled with energy in the middle of Planet Uros. There were over 18 wide paths leading to the peak of the mountain.

On either side of the 18 tunnels were 18 huge cities, each one resplendent and beautiful.

As they soared above the 18 cities, they could see the countless aliens already launching assaults on the various cities below.

The humans were crying and screaming as they tried to flee in all directions.

However, there was a stark difference between the 18 cities and South Origin City.

The strongest firepower of South Origin City was the 36 electromagnetic cannons and most of the people defending used melee weapons. As for firearms, there were just ordinary rifles. In any case, compared to these firearms, the cultivators themselves were even more terrifying.

The Saint Lands were different, as each of them had particle cannons, plasma bombs, gauss rifles, laser tanks, and other heavy weapons.

At the point of the aliens' attack, firepower rained in all directions.

Along the streets of one city, an alien with a pair of blades growing out of its head and a gray exoskeleton appeared, pouncing towards dozens of the fleeing humans.

In just a breath, the alien had already charged within their midst and waved its blades about, slicing through 6 of them at the waist,

as blood and organs spilled everywhere.

"Blizzaga!!"

At this moment, a Type 4 expert came roaring from a short distance away, his body shrouded in an impenetrable ice armor. Both his hands were congealing icy energies as he charged towards that alien.

The bladed-alien leaped with all its might, charging through the human crowd, dodging the attack of that expert, causing him to hit thin air.

Even so, the icy aura spread out, causing the region around him to rapidly freeze, stretching towards the alien.

In response, the alien leaped and evaded the attack once more, before twisting its head to fire off its tongue that penetrated the head of the expert in a split second, killing him effortlessly.

"Beast, die!"

4 Type 3 martial artists roared as they charged towards the alien as well.

With a flash, the alien weaved through them, and its blades slashed through the air, directly slicing them up in multiple pieces.

Just as the alien was about to continue on its unbridled killing spree, 5 Saint Soldiers wearing the powerful mech armor charged out from one corner.

With a wave of their hands, beams shot out from behind their backs, turning into a light net that shot towards the alien.

Sensing danger, the alien leaped and tried to flee.

However, the net was made out of powerful technology, and it quickly encompassed the alien, wrapping around it as it began to struggle madly.

The moment they caught it, the 5 Saint Soldiers began to unload their particle beams into it.

The beams then punched through the exoskeletons of the alien, causing huge holes as it began to turn into a hole-riddled corpse.

Noticing something wrong, the leader of the soldier had a change of expression, "Not good! Retract the net!"

The corrosive blood of the blood was extremely terrifying, almost corroding most of the net away.

They quickly kept the net back, as it was one of their trump cards.

Just after they retrieved the net, there was a sudden gust of wind, as a blade tore through all 5 of their heads.

The decapitated heads soared through the air, landing and bleeding out.

A stronger bladed-alien appeared in the distance, coldly glaring over.

At this time, a terrifying laser beam shot from afar, slamming into the left shoulder of the alien, causing its extended blade to be blown apart.

The alien roared out in pain and quickly charged through the fleeing humans as it engaged in a massacre, killing over 30 humans in a breath.

The battle between the humans and aliens was extremely savage and cruel, with huge numbers of casualties on both sides every passing second.

In comparison, although the humans had more advanced weaponry, their death toll was higher.

Every single alien was born a killing machine, with natural talents in hunting and killing. Although their numbers were lesser, each one of them could easily tear through a crowd of humans.

Other than holding the advantage in close combat, some of the aliens had tongues that could extend out for quite far. As long as

the soldiers got within range, the aliens would make use of that projectile-like tongue to take down the human soldiers.

The only experts within the 18 cities that could deal with the aliens were the Type 4 and Type 5 human cultivators.

Any Type 3 experts that appeared would only be killed within a second.

There were over 3 million people within the 18 cities, 200,000 of them were experts, but they were being annihilated by this group of aliens that were not even more than 30,000 in numbers.

Even Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air upon witnessing this scene.

These 30,000 aliens were not trash, unlike those zombies. Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong piloting the Scarlet Reaper could not take out all 30,000 within a short time.

A single laser beam that could punch through tens of thousands of zombies could not even cause a scratch on the aliens.

On the airship, Zhang Xuan looked out in horror as an alien tore a Type 5 human expert in half, his face turning pale, "What the hell is that?! How are they so terrifying?!"

By this time, all the experts within the Saint Lands were being deployed out, as a huge number of experts sat in armored vehicles that rolled out to provide reinforcements.

A number of fighter jets also shot out from the Saint Lands, arriving at the airspace above the cities.

When they arrived, they quickly focused their firepower upon the aliens below.

Seeing the fighter jets, Zhang Xuan quickly relayed a message over, "This is Saint Envoy Zhang Xuan, what's going on?!"

When the soldier within the fighter jet saw that it was Zhang Xuan, he replied respectfully but solemnly, "Sir, the Saint Lord has

just confirmed that those monsters below are the harbingers of the apocalypse. The Saint Lord has already given the order for all Saint Envoys to report back, you'd better contact His Majesty quickly."

Zhang Xuan's face fell when he heard that, muttering under his breath, "Apocalypse... there was actually such a thing... I had thought that it was just a myth..."

A thousand years was too long in human history. Most would forget easily what happened even if there were records. The apocalypses of the past were treated as myths, no one had expected such a thing to actually happen.

However, Zhang Xuan was also a Type 6 expert, and he quickly calmed himself down, ordering, "Open a channel to His Majesty."

Soon, a man with a deep and stern gaze, dressed in a robe with countless stars and wielding a staff inlaid with countless Mutant Beasts nuclei appeared on the display.

Zhang Xuan immediately bowed in respect, "Your subject greets Your Majesty!"

The Saint Lord glanced at Zhang Xuan and spoke, "Zhang Xuan, quickly head to Cleansing Wind City, and join up with Tang Xi and Murong Wang to wipe out those aliens."

"Yes!" Zhang Xuan replied immediately.

After that, he piloted the airship towards Cleansing Wind City, which happened to be the closest.

By now, there were over 20 airships in the air, and they were all different from Zhang Xuan's own airship. Some were over 100 meters in length and they were all equipped with countless cannons, firing out their projectiles madly.

Due to the support of these airships, the defense line of the city was able to hold out and withstand the assault.

With the firepower of these 20 airships, if they were placed on

Earth, they could easily wipe out over 100,000 zombies in a flash.

However, these aliens were essentially different creatures. Their numbers were lesser but each one was more powerful and lethal than a group of zombies. Their formations were also widely spread out, and the dense firepower only served to kill them one by one, instead of dealing with a large group.

Zhang Xuan followed the orders of the Cleansing Wind City and landed on a field.

Out on the field, over a hundred soldiers were stationed. On top of that, there were 60 other experts dressed in stars-covered robes. The group was separated in two lines, and the weakest amongst them was at the Type 5 realm.

Chapter 1009: Arrogance!

Among the 2 rows of soldiers, one of them was dressed in a blue robe, his hands behind his back. He exuded an extraordinary aura, as well as a proud countenance. This was Murong Wang.

The leader of the other group was dressed in green, her long hair tied up in a ponytail. She had exquisite features, but a cold gaze, as though no fire could ever melt that icy countenance. She was Tang Xi. Beside her, 20 other female warriors stood, each of them beautiful in their own right, exuding a mild arrogance as well.

It had to be known that every single person chosen by the Saint Lands had undergone strict conditions. Each time, there would be a rigorous test to sift out those who were capable and worthy of the Saint Lands. Among 10,000, there might only be one or two.

These experts were the cream of the crop of the planet Uros, all of them heaven-defying talents, with powerful combat abilities. Even the 5 top experts of South Origin City would not be a match for any of them. Therefore, they had a deep-set arrogance.

Murong Wang glanced at Yue Zhong who was beside Zhang Xuan, and frowned, "Zhang Xuan, who is this? He's not someone from our Saint Lands!"

Tang Xi also shot a cold look at Yue Zhong, her gaze full of suspicions.

Zhang Xuan introduced simply, "This is Yue Zhong, a wandering cultivator from South Origin City, and he's my friend."

"Wandering cultivator?"

"The kind that trains like a demon against Mutant Beasts? Seems like he's pretty capable."

"Maybe. But, compared to us, they're nothing. He doesn't even have the aura of a cultivator though, are you sure he's not a liar?"

"..."

Hearing Zhang Xuan's words, the elites besides Murong Wang and Tang Xi began to engage in discussion. Although they felt that Yue Zhong was likely capable, he was far off from their level.

Murong Wang swept a condescending gaze at Yue Zhong, and barked out an order as though he was commanding his subordinate, "Yue Zhong, go over there and report, await further orders!"

This Murong Wang was incomparably arrogant, as though he did not care for Yue Zhong's thoughts. He just assumed that Yue Zhong would obey.

Yue Zhong laughed coldly as he looked back at Murong Wang, "What a joke. I'm not from your Saint Lands, why should I listen to you? Who the hell do you think you are?"

Currently, Yue Zhong was already a Type 7 expert, as well as the lord of his own faction. If Murong Wang's attitude was slightly better, there could be at least some form of discussion. However, since this Murong Wang treated him like some dog, he would not be courteous either.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, all the faces of the Saint Soldiers fell and looked at Yue Zhong as though he was already a dead person.

Strength and character were not related. This Murong Wang was a genius at cultivation, reaching the Type 6 realm at a mere 60 years. Within the Saint Lands, he was considered 1 of the 10 demon-level geniuses. However, his temper was extremely bad, and those who offended him had terrible outcomes.

His handsome face was dark at this point, glancing at Yue Zhong with a gaze full of killing intent. Ever since he reached the Type 6 realm, there seemed to be no one who dared speak to him like that.

"Audacious! You dared to speak to Saint Envoy Murong Wang like this, I shall teach you how to be obedient!"

One particular handsome youth beside Murong Wang burst out. He possessed a Type 5 realm strength and appeared right in front of Yue Zhong with a flash. His right fist glowed as it shot towards Yue Zhong's face.

"Good! Wang Hao, teach that kid a lesson! Let him experience true power!"

"Just a mere wandering cultivator and you dare challenge the might of our Saint Lands, what guts."

"..."

The rest of the elites besides Murong Wang laughed coldly. Those that followed Murong Wang had naturally become proud over time as well. In their opinions, other than the Saint Lands, all other experts were trash. Now, one such a trash dared to yap, they were naturally furious.

"Just you? I will teach you how to be a proper human being!" Yue Zhong's eyes glinted dangerously, his left hands reaching out and grabbing Wang Hao's neck.

Facing that grab, Wang Hao's face fell. He suddenly felt as though a world-crushing pressure was aimed at him. He twisted his body with all his might, executing his secret art, Serpent Movement, trying to evade with an unbelievable speed and contortion.

Even so, he was unable to escape from Yue Zhong's clutch. In a split second, Yue Zhong had grabbed onto his neck, sending a powerful force into his body, causing him to become weak.

After that, Yue Zhong sent his free hand slapping across Wang Hao's face ruthlessly. The palm caused Wang Hao's face to swell, and two teeth were even knocked out in a spray of blood.

Having taken this hit, Wang Hao felt a strong sense of humiliation. He had slapped countless others, now that the same was being done to him, he felt incredible shame.

Seeing Wang Hao caught like a chicken in Yue Zhong's hands,

and his face being slapped harshly, all the people of Murong Wang and Tang Xi became furious, but no one charged out. They knew that Wang Hao was considered a strong person among them, yet he was caught so easily. This meant that Yue Zhong was not simple. They might be proud, but they were not stupid and rash.

At this time, Murong Wang's face turned dark, and a terrifying aura exuded out from his body. His gaze turned sharp and he stared at Yue Zhong, a killing intent pouring, "Unhand him!"

At this time, Zhang Xuan rushed forward in between Murong Wang and Yue Zhong, "Wait a minute!"

Zhang Xuan's back was riddled with cold perspiration, "Murong Wang, now it's not the time to cause internal strife. We have a common enemy!! Those aliens!! If our main hunting strength was injured here, then who will protect the 200,000 people of Cleansing Wind City? If the Saint Lord were to get furious, none of us can shoulder the punishment! Tang Xi! Aren't you going to help?!"

Zhang Xuan had witnessed Yue Zhong controlling the Scarlet Reaper to kill the Type 6 Black Dragon Beast, furthermore, Yue Zhong's temper was obviously not good. If both sides came to a clash, it would be a slugfest. Whoever won, there would be no benefits.

The cold Tang Xi stepped forward, her voice ringing out, "Let's deal with the aliens in Cleansing Wind City first, whoever dares to initiate a fight, will be my enemy."

The beautiful female warriors beside her also stepped out, their gazes resolute, obviously standing by Tang Xi's decision.

Murong Wang retracted his killing intent, glancing at limp Wang Hao in his hands, coldly saying, "Return Wang Hao. Our matters will be left to after dealing with the aliens."

Yue Zhong waved his hands, sending Wang Hao soaring Murong

Wang, "Here!"

Once he let go of Wang Hao, Wang Hao quickly regained use of his energy.

In mid-air, he quickly revealed his Type 5 strength. He landed swiftly and pulled out a medicinal pill to consume. He then stepped back silently, but the venomous look in his gaze as he looked at Yue Zhong was apparent.

Zhang Xuan spoke up, "Since they have requested for our help, let's quickly split up and head to frontlines."

The aliens were powerful killing machines and possessed terrifying combat abilities. Even with the might of the most elite Saint Soldiers, and employing countless advanced technology, the humans of Cleansing Wind City were unable to fend off the aliens.

The firepower of the 20 airships was no joke though, but because the aliens were so scattered, and their defenses strong, it was hard to kill them all in one go. They had to release over dozens of cannons and hundreds of laser beams just to kill a single alien. It was like using bombs just to kill a single mosquito. The only usefulness was to prevent them from gathering. Preventing them from gathering helped lower the casualty rates of the Saint Soldiers.

Tang Xi nodded quietly, "Sure!"

Murong Wang shot Yue Zhong a deep gaze as he ordered coldly, "Let's go!"

Soon, the entire group set off in 3 different directions.

Tang Xi, Murong Wang, and Zhang Xuan were all cultivators, but not commanders. Within the airship, there was a separate command post that relayed information to the 3 leaders, giving them updates.

On one street within Cleansing Wind City, 20 Saint Soldiers were currently engaging 3 aliens in an intense battle.

Bright flashes occurred as nets flew over them, capturing one particular bladed-alien.

However, out of the blue, the bladed alien shot forwards, its blades slicing out, tearing apart the net that even the Type 5 Black Dragon Beast could not get out of.

Under the petrified gazes of 5 of the soldiers, the bladed-alien flashed forwards, turning into a gust of wind as it shot past the 5 unfortunate soldiers, turning them into slices of meat amidst a shower of blood.

Chapter 1010: Battle!

After killing the 5 human soldiers, the type 5 alien let out a howl that could cause one's skin to crawl.

Hearing that sharp shriek, many of the survivors felt their hearts tremble. They were overcome by fear as their bodies shook and they lost their fighting will.

Seeing this, the soldiers all felt their hearts run cold as well. These were the elite soldiers of the Saint Lands, and a single one of them could deal with a hundred ordinary soldiers. These experts were actually being slaughtered like pigs, thus, it was natural that everyone felt fear.

"Beast, go to hell!"

At this moment, there was a roar of rage, as a powerful force in the shape of the dragon shot towards the Type 5 alien.

The force clamped down on the Type 5 alien, causing its exoskeleton to cave in, however, it was not enough to bite through.

Under the pressure of that force, the Type 5 alien began to struggle, trying to get out of the grasp. However, it was futile.

Murong Wang shot towards the alien in a flash, sending out a palm that exploded out with unimaginable force.

Immediately, the Type 5 alien seemed to stop struggling, before it exploded out, blood splattering everywhere, corroding whatever it came in contact with.

"It's the Saint Envoy!!"

"The Saint Envoy is here!!"

"The Saint Envoy is invincible!!"

"..."

Seeing how easily Murong Wang took out the Type 5 alien, the

people around erupted in excited cheers.

The Type 5 alien had killed numerous soldiers, destroying weapons and equipment in the process, and was seemingly invincible. Being killed in one hit naturally boosted the morale of the soldiers, and their reverence towards Murong Wang shot up.

Murong Wang, however, frowned silently, "The defense of these monsters is truly too shocking."

Initially, he had thought that his dragon-shaped force would be able to tear the Type 5 alien into pieces. However, its defense had been out of his expectations. It had required him to hit the beast personally, just to kill it.

With a tremble, a 2m-long treasure sword appeared in his hands, as he ordered, "Grab your weapons, 5 men to one team. Watch out, these monsters are strong!!"

Although he was arrogant and narrow-minded, he knew when to take the situation seriously. On this battlefield, he did not wish for any of his subordinates to perish.

Hearing his words, the elites soldiers all felt a tinge of fear. They produced their weapons and got into 5-man teams, as they began hunting down the aliens.

On another street, there were flashes of beams as a Type 5 alien was chopped up in many pieces.

The cold fairy Tang Xi arched her brows, and ordered coldly, "5 to one team, get into formation, do not make any risky moves."

The female warriors of the Saint Land felt a shiver in their heart, as they replied respectfully, "Yes!"

At another street, 50 human elite soldiers were engaging an alien from hidden corners.

These 50 elites were not from the Saint Lands, instead, they were the special forces belonging to Cleansing Wind City.

Although their equipment could not compare to the Saint Land soldiers, they were still giving it their all, firing their Gauss rifles, wearing light-alloy armor to defend against the onslaught.

The rain of Gauss rifle bullets fell upon that alien.

The alien darted about, weaving through the rain of bullets. As dozens of rounds struck its exoskeleton, they only caused minor scratches, as drops of corrosive blood flowed.

Although the Gauss rifles could not cause any life-threatening injuries towards these aliens, it was not totally ineffective.

Following a loud roar, 5 human soldiers got out from the positions, firing their Gauss rifles in anger, "Go to hell, beast!!!"

In just a breath's time, the alien had reached their position. As its bladed body danced about, the 5 human soldiers were sliced apart.

At that instant, the numerous plasma bombs on their bodies exploded out, consuming the alien together with the corpses of the 5 martyrs.

Hidden at a corner, Trion, a burly commander turned to the direction of the explosion, as he saluted while tears flowed down his cheeks, "Men, you guys did well!! You are the heroes of our Cleansing Wind City!!"

Beside Trion, a dozen soldiers also saluted in silence and sorrow.

Although they were elites, against the aliens, they were incomparably weak. They could not even catch a glimpse of the movements of the aliens. Even if they did a suppressing spray of fire, they could only cause minor damage. The only way to kill it was to utilize the plasma bombs on themselves, perishing together with the alien.

One soldier came up to Trion and reported urgently, "Colonel, not good! Another 4 has appeared!"

At the street ahead, 4 bug-eyed aliens with a perfectly-evolved

body for killing appeared, stalking towards them with heavy killing intent.

Regardless of the life form, there was no way one could maintain a maximum speed of travel for long. Even Yue Zhong, in his Type 7 realm, could only last half an hour if he charged with his maximum speed. He could absorb the atmospheric energy but it would not change the fact that there was a limit.

The speed of the aliens was not exceptionally fast normally. However, once they came across a prey or enemy, they would burst forth with incredible speed.

Trion looked at the 4 incoming aliens and turned pale as he cursed, "Damn it!! 4?!"

4 aliens, once they exploded out with their brutal nature, there was little chance of survival for Trion and his men.

One of his subordinates stepped forward, "Colonel, let our squad head up! We will use the same method to wipe them out!"

Trion fell silent before nodding heavily, "Alright!"

All of a sudden, there was a sound of despair, as one soldier pointed to the direction of the earlier explosion, "Shit!! Colonel!! Look!!"

Trion turned to look, only to discover the earlier alien wobbling out of the epicenter with heavy injuries, and missing one bladed-arm.

Seeing this, Trion was filled with despair, "Damn bastards, are these freaks unkillable?!"

The rest of the soldiers also had expressions of despair. The terror of the aliens had far surpassed their imaginations. It was as there was nothing that could kill these freaks, facing such enemies could cause anyone to break down.

The injured alien shook itself before recovering quickly. It then

shot a cold glare at the remaining team.

A sense of doom weighed down on Trion and his men, as their hearts pounded furiously.

Right at this time, 5 bloody radiances shot through the sky, slicing through all 5 aliens.

A shocking scene then occurred. The aliens that had taken the sacrifices and price of lives without being able to kill were suddenly reduced to dried up corpses.

Trion sucked in a cold breath, "Shit!! Strong!! Is that something a person can do?"

Yue Zhong then descended on the ground, waving his hand and recalled the bloody radiances. They hovered around him, joining 5 others, and the 10 floating blood beams gave him an impression of an evil god.

Yue Zhong then swept his gaze towards Trion, whose heart pounded once more, "He saw me!"

Soon after, Zhang Xuan arrived, gazing at the revolving bloody radiances with a look of envy as he spoke, "Brother Yue Zhong is truly amazing, what kind of art are you cultivating?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, and made something up, "It's called the Blood God Manual."

Zhang Xuan frowned, "Blood God Manual... within the records of the top 10 cultivation techniques, there doesn't seem to be such a manual."

Yue Zhong changed the topic unhurriedly, "Brother Zhang, I think that our task on hand is pretty urgent, don't you think? We should deal with these aliens."

Zhang Xuan smiled, "That's true."

Yue Zhong then grabbed out in the direction of Trion, as the atmospheric energy wound around Trion and pulled him over

towards Yue Zhong.

Seeing this, Zhang Xuan was taken aback, "Strong! Is this psychokinesis or some other technique?"

Trion stared at Yue Zhong, suppressing the fear as he reported his name, "Sir! I'm Trion, the commander of Cleansing Wind City's 1st Response Force."

Yue Zhong replied, "Trion, I'm Yue Zhong. I hope that you can bring your men to maintain security over here, leave the aliens to us."

Currently, it was extremely chaotic in Cleansing Wind City, with countless humans fleeing while some sought to rob and plunder in the chaos. The Saint Lands obviously had not much experience in dealing with such situations. They sent most of their fighting force to deal with the aliens, but no one was left to deal with the rising chaos from within.

Trion responded immediately, "Understood!"

At this time, Zhang Xuan's smiling face turned solemn as he yelled, "Not good! Tang Xi and the rest had just met with trouble! We have to and help them!"

Chapter 1011: The Terrifying Alien and Despair!

On a field, a bladed-alien, a spider-alien, an alien with multiple claws, and a human-shaped alien had boxed in Tang Xi and her subordinates.

A white energy shield was covering them.

Under the protection of the shield, Tang Xi held up a jade plate with a pale expression, as the Type 6 nucleus inserted within the jade plate glowed brightly.

Some distance away from the energy shield, there were a number of female corpses, each of them torn apart, their dead eyes still showing a look of horror and despair.

In the sky, multiple beams of light rained down on this region, blasting all around the shield, hoping to force the aliens away.

As for the 4 big aliens, they continued to strike the energy shield while braving the blasts from the airships above.

Each of them had the strength of a Type 6 expert, with every blow, the energy shield shook violently, threatening to collapse at any moment.

The jade plate in Tang Xi's hand was slowly starting to dim.

She thought with her teeth gritted, "These aliens are truly terrifying! They've actually reached the Type 6 stage, 4 of them no less!"

She had thought that the cleanup operation was going to be easy. However, after slaughtering a few of them, these 4 Type 6 aliens suddenly charged out from nowhere and began to slaughter them back. They lost a dozen Saint Land soldiers in an instant. Had Tang Xi's reaction not been fast enough, activating the shield quickly, they would have all lost their lives.

One of her subordinates suddenly stood up with her sword, speaking resolutely, "Saint Envoy, the shield cannot hold out much longer, please escape! We will buy time for you! We hope that you can avenge us!!"

"Yes! Saint Envoy!! Please flee!!"

"Let us buy time for you!"

"..."

The rest of the elite beauties of the Saint Land stood up, their eyes blazing with a resolute will.

Tang Xi held a high position in all their hearts, having received her grace and pointers. This time, they had also been saved due to her fast thinking. Most importantly, none of them had any confidence of outrunning those Type 6 aliens.

Tang Xi snorted lightly, her gaze turning to the distance, "There's no need to say anymore. I will not leave. In any case, our reinforcements have arrived."

"Beast!! Die!!"

Following a loud roar, a dragon image descended upon the area, clamping down on the spider-alien at the back.

"Junior Sister Han, I'm here to save you!"

"Flowing Thunder Palms!!"

"..."

Following a volley of powerful winds, lightning, thunder, and ice, Murong Wang brought his subordinates as they appeared, attacking the spider-alien.

"That's great! Senior Brother Li is here!!"

"We're saved!"

"..."

Seeing the appearance of Murong Wang and his men, Tang Xi

and the rest teared up in relief. After all, no one would welcome death so easily.

Murong Wang channeled his dragon image to hold the spider-alien firmly, as the sharp wind blades and bolts of lightning struck it.

The spider-like alien had a green shell, and it stared at its assaulters coldly. With a strong tug, it immediately got out of Murong Wang's grasp. It then shot off at a high speed, causing a cloud of dust to rise behind it.

Even so, it was struck by one of the lightning bolts. At the same time, one of the wind blades managed to tear through its shell, causing a deep gash. Corrosive blood began to flow out. While the defense of the Type 6 alien was not to be trifled with, it could not withstand the full might of a Type 5 expert either.

If there were enough numbers, Type 5 experts could make use of their advantage to overwhelm a Type 6 expert too.

Having suffered such an attack, the 8 legs shuddered and quickly began to shoot out transparent silk from within its body.

One Saint elite charged forward with his light blade, only to be sliced up noiselessly by that silk.

There seemed to be a chain reaction, as right after that first elite was killed, another 3 following behind also died.

Murong Wang roared out in rage, "Watch out! Its silk is transparent and hard to detect!!"

As he shouted, he waved his long blade to slash and slice up that silk.

The Saint elites were elites after all. They employed their techniques and began to break the silk, avoiding further casualties from that death trap.

All of a sudden, the alien with multiple claws suddenly turned to

charge towards Murong Wang and his team.

Within a short breath of time, it had already caught up with one Type 5 elite, slashing out with its claw and decapitating the soldier before he could even react.

Immediately after that, the alien flickered and appeared in front of the various members of Murong Wang's team, taking them out one by one.

In a few seconds, 6 of the elites had already been decapitated by the alien.

At the same time, the human-alien had changed targets, charging towards one of the Saint elites, clawing through his heart and digging it out.

It also opened its mouth to shoot out its tongue that penetrated the head of the soldier.

Facing the assault of these 2 Type 6 aliens, the Saint elites were distracted.

The moment their attention was diverted, the transparent silk that had not been cleared up entirely suddenly went taught, instantly slicing up 4 of the soldiers.

Everything happened within a few seconds. A third of Murong Wang's team was wiped out, causing him to be extremely furious, "Damn beasts!! Go to hell!! True Dragon Annihilates the World!"

With his roar, his back glowed brightly, as a dragon tattoo flew out, letting out a howl towards the skies. It then coiled around behind him, its eyes filled with an unimaginable danger and ferocity. A powerful pressure began to exude out of him.

Murong Wang was usually an initial-Type 6 expert, but upon utilizing this technique, his might was heightened, reaching the peak of Type 6.

The True Dragon Annihilates the World was one of the top 10

techniques in the Saint Lands. Only a rare few heaven-defying geniuses could cultivate it.

Tang Xi and Zhang Xuan might both be Type 6 experts, but they had never cultivated any of the top 10 techniques. It was because of this that Murong Wang had grown accustomed to feeling a sense of pride and lofty status. Other than a few other opponents within the Saint land, he was basically invincible.

As he channeled the technique, his eyes flashed dangerously, before charging towards the spider-alien.

In response, the spider-alien began to spit out tons of spider silk at him. If one was not careful, they could easily be sliced up by that attack.

He bellowed out and the blade in his hands swung in a frenzy, causing the spider silk to be chopped up. He appeared in front of the spider-alien and slashed out viciously.

A 10m-long blade beam slashed down on the spider-alien, cutting it in two, as its blood splattered everywhere.

At the moment Murong Wang killed the spider-alien, the bladed-alien that had not made any move disappeared, reappearing in front of Murong Wang with a cold glare, slashing out viciously towards him.

The bladed-alien had chosen the best time to attack, as Murong Wang had just given his all in the attack. Furthermore, it had lashed out with superior speed and strength, intending to take him out.

However, Murong Wang was experienced, and with a swift motion, he brought up his left shoulder to defend.

Unfortunately, the blade came down, slashing through Murong Wang's left shoulder, slashing directly all the way to his abdomen, almost cutting him in half diagonally.

Receiving such a strike, Murong Wang's complexion was

extremely bad as he pulled out a jade plate to channel his strength within.

A huge shield appeared, knocking the blade away.

"It's over!"

Seeing Murong Wang also retreating to within his own shield, Wang Hao and the rest turned ashen. They had to face the 3 remaining aliens, where even one took Murong Wang all he had to kill.

While Type 5 experts were domineering existences outside, against these Type 6 aliens, they were just lambs for slaughter.

The bladed alien, multi-claw alien, and human-alien all turned to eye the remaining people coldly. At this time, a number of aliens also gathered from everywhere else, increasing the total number to over 20 within a breath.

3 of them were enough to wipe out everyone present. Now that there were an additional 20, including 2 Type 6 aliens, such a terrifying scene would be enough to send anyone over the edge.

"No!!"

Wang Hao and the rest of the elites all had looks of despair.

Tang Xi and her subordinates were also pale, their countenances full of fear.

Chapter 1012: Yue Zhong Acts!

The 20-plus aliens gathered, their eyes flashing with a fierce glint. In a flash, they charged towards the elites cowering within the energy shield.

These aliens were intelligent and deadly in combat, they could assess how to fight to their advantage. They knew that one these humans within the shields were taken care of, the rest of the humans in the city would die.

Wang Hao slashed his sword frantically, blocking the claw of one alien. The impact sent him flying back a few meters, his both arms stinging from the impact.

At the moment he was struck, a human-alien appeared behind him, slashing out towards his brain.

"Am I going to die?"

At that instant, he felt a sense of despair. He was a Type 5 expert, but due to the ferocious nature of the aliens, it was already amazing that he could defend against a hit from a Type 5 alien. It was impossible for him to deal with another Type 5 alien within such a short period of time.

Every Type 5 alien was a cold-blooded killing machine. Their only weakness was their lack of ranged means. In melee combat, they were even able to defeat Dino-Warriors. Amongst the humans, other than those who trained in heaven-defying manuals like Murong Wang, no one else could possibly hope to take them on.

The rest of the elites were also trying their best to withstand the blows from the Type 5 aliens.

Just as everyone was despairing, 10 bloody radiances shot through the sky, sweeping through 10 of the aliens. In a single move, all of them became emaciated corpses.

Following a sharp howl, a grey blade beam descended from the sky, cleaving through one of the aliens, as the corrosive blood splattered everywhere.

Everyone turned to look towards the direction of the attacks, only to see Yue Zhong and Zhang Xuan rushing over.

Wang Hao stared at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze as he wondered enviously, "Strong! What technique is that? He could actually take out 10 aliens in one move! This must be one of those heaven-defying manuals?! He's just some country bumpkin, how the hell is he so strong?"

Murong Wang was also staring daggers at Yue Zhong, his countenance ugly, "This is one of the top techniques?! Impossible!! He's just a bumpkin!! How could he learn such a technique?"

Tang Xi cried out in concern, "Watch out!!"

The rest of the female subordinates were also screaming out, "The aliens are rushing over!"

Although they had no special feelings towards this man, they were not willing to see him die, after all, he was risking his life to save them.

The 5 Type 6 aliens had already charged towards Yue Zhong and Zhang Xuan in a blur.

Tang Xi and Murong Wang's shields were powerful, even if the aliens attacked, it would take some time to break through. Therefore, they decided to shift their attention to Yue Zhong and Zhang Xuan, in order to prevent them from grouping up.

In a few breaths, the fastest bladed-alien had already appeared in front of Yue Zhong, slashing out at him.

As the blade slashed through the air, Yue Zhong's figure dissipated, turning into various nodes of light.

"How is this possible?! Isn't that too weak!!"

Seeing how he was crushed, other than Zhang Xuan, everyone could not help but feel taken aback.

At this moment, his true body appeared out of thin air beside the alien, wielding the Type 5 Sea Snake Tooth Blade that was shrouded with a light-gold energy, as well as a faint hint of flames, as he slashed out at the Type 6 alien.

With a brush, the Type 6 alien's armor was cleaved through like tofu. Its body was sliced in two and fresh blood splattered everywhere.

After the Type 6 alien was killed in an instant, a multi-clawed alien and a human-alien appeared on either side of Yue Zhong.

The multi-clawed alien shot out 6 long claws, attacking Yue Zhong from different directions.

The human-alien opened its mouth and fired out a tongue that could even pierce a Type 7 expert.

The combat abilities of these 2 aliens were astonishing, and they had chosen the most opportune time when Yue Zhong killed their comrade. It was the toughest to deal with, and Murong Wang had been injured like this earlier.

The 2 Type 6 aliens joined hands, and even someone like Murong Wang would be killed in a second by that attack.

As they were about to pierce through him, Yue Zhong split into 2 clones instantly. The 2 clones twisted and flickered past the 2 aliens, their blades slicing through the exoskeletons of the aliens. Corrosive blood flowed profusely.

The attacks of the aliens slammed into Yue Zhong's clones, causing them to disintegrate.

"The clones are still weaker, against these terrifying monsters, it's still not as effective."

As the clones disappeared, Yue Zhong's true body reappeared

behind the multi-clawed alien, using his blade shrouded with light-gold energy to slash down, slicing it in two.

After killing the Type 6 multi-claw alien, Yue Zhong disappeared one more, flickering in front of the human-alien and slashing it in half.

Once he slaughtered all 3 Type 6 aliens, he shot towards one Type 6 alien attacking Zhang Xuan, killing it in one strike.

The bladed alien saw that things were not going well, and turned to flee.

"Too slow!"

Yue Zhong shot a look and laughed coldly. He then tapped his feet and appeared in front of that alien, directly slicing it in half, as its corrosive blood splattered everywhere.

From the start to the end, Yue Zhong had taken barely 10 seconds to wipe out all 5 Type 6 aliens.

"Strong!! He's too strong!!"

"Strong!! Yue Zhong might possibly be a match for Saint Lord himself."

"Amazing...!!"

"..."

Seeing his performance, his ability to slaughter those terrifying Type 6 aliens that had forced both Tang Xi and Murong Wang into a corner, everyone sucked in cold breaths. Their faces were full of disbelief, and among the female elites, there were some even with strange glints.

On planet Uros, it was also a society that revered the strong. Yue Zhong could slaughter 5 Type 6 aliens in 10 seconds, such an ability would put him at the peak of Uros already.

Murong Wang stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, his fists clenched and his teeth gnashing together. He was filled with venomous

thoughts, "Damn it!! How is this bumpkin so strong?!! How?!"

Murong Wang disdained all experts there were not of the Saint Lands. According to his knowledge, only those from the Saint Lands deserved to be called peak experts. He could not be bothered with experts from anywhere else, and seeing that Yue Zhong was stronger than him, he was envious and furious.

"Get into formations and kill the remaining aliens!"

Tang Xi barked out and kept the energy shield. In a flash, she appeared in front of one alien, waving her jade-like hands as a number of glowing lines shot out and sliced up the Type 5 alien.

Hearing her orders, the rest of the elites recovered and began to slaughter the aliens.

After witnessing their leaders killed by Yue Zhong, the rest of the aliens deemed the fight to be lost and quickly scattered.

However, they had just moved when the 10 bloody radiances in the sky swept past all of them, turning them into emaciated corpses.

Tang Xi came up to Yue Zhong, with a slightly alluring scent, as she spoke, "Many thanks to Brother Yue for helping. Had you not been on time, we might have all died."

5 Type 6 and 18 Type 5 aliens, these were definitely enough to tear apart the energy shields and ravage all the Saint Land experts.

Murong Wang was sullen, not intending to thank him. He was too proud to.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "No problem. We're all humans, it was what I should do."

Since Tang Xi had extended the hand of friendship, he would not reject her.

Tang Xi continued, "Brother Yue, your strength is unfathomable. If you take one path and the Saint Lands take another to wipe out

the aliens, what do you think?"

If the experts from the Saint Lands had not split into 3 factions and dividing their numbers, they would have been able to fare battle. Tang Xi could tell that Yue Zhong could handle himself, that was why she proposed such a distribution.

Yue Zhong agreed with her, "Fine by me!"

If he went with them, their total might would be strong, but the speed of clearing the aliens would plunge. It was better for him to be on his own. At least, it would be more efficient.

Chapter 1013: Saint Land's Saint Lord! !

Inside a dilapidated city, Yue Zhong was stepped on a bloody radiance that was condensed in a disc as he soared above. He followed the signs on the plate in his hand, each time he came across an alien, the Bloody Radiance would sweep past and turn the alien into an emaciated corpse.

"I've finally evolved to such a stage. I can be considered a true expert at the peak."

Yue Zhong watched the aliens dying easily under his hands, and thought with a sigh. The weakest aliens were at least at the Type 4 realm, while the Type 5 ones were the most common. Had it been a year before, just a single one of them could have killed him easily. However, they were the ones dying like ants in front of him. With a single thought, he could annihilate them however he wished.

Inside a lavish palace on top of the mountain, the Saint Lord sat atop a throne built out of crystals and Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei, while 4 good-looking people, sat below, 2 men and 2 women.

At the entrance of the palace, there was a 10m crystal display, showcasing how Yue Zhong was making use of his bloody radiances to sweep through his enemies.

He asked slowly, as a terrifying aura spread out, "This Yue Zhong... what do you guys think?"

Under his pressure, even a Type 6 expert would feel uncomfortable. However, the 2 men and 2 women seated near him were the Saint Children of this era and were all demon-level geniuses. They were all cultivators at the Type 7 realm. Their strength spoke for itself, and they were not too affected by the aura of the Saint Lord.

The humans on Uros were the survivors and victors of the previous apocalypse. Having undergone the numerous baptisms,

the various generations grew stronger, and their capital was astonishing. Coupled with the numerous years of peace, and their numbers reaching an astronomical 30 billion, it was not uncommon for talents to appear.

The 4 Saint Children were peak existences of Uros, and their talent far surpassed Yue Zhong's that it was incomparable. They had cultivated for over a hundred years, and thus reached the Type 7 realm.

One of them was a man with attractive features and thick eyebrows, and he emitted a powerful killing aura. He was Saint Child Battle Wolf, and he spoke up, "He's strong, he should have trained in some top technique, and I can only discern further if I engage him in combat. However, it's definitely certain that his cultivation should be above the Type 6 realm. Otherwise, it would not be so easy for him to kill those 5 Type 6 aliens, as well as wiping out those ordinary aliens."

One female Saint Child, who had a long ponytail and exquisite features, dressed in men's clothes and her aura like an immortal frowned slightly. She was Saint Child Red Dawn, and she spoke in a voice that could cause a stir in the loins of men, "This is clearly not his full strength. Saint Lord, who is this person? The top 10 martial techniques are in our hands, and it's definitely impossible for a Type 6 expert to pop out from nowhere. The entire Uros is under our control, if he's a wandering cultivator, it's impossible for him to remain incognito for so long."

The moment her words came out, the other 3 also turned to the Saint Lord.

In fact, the entire Uros was in the tight grasp of the Saint Lands. These Saint Children were at the top, managing things from the shadows, and knew many things. Every single Type 5 expert had a record in the Saint Lands, even if they were wandering cultivators. Yue Zhong's lie would definitely not work on them.

The handsome Saint Lord replied slowly, "If my conjecture is right, this Yue Zhong should be from another world. And it is very likely that he's as powerful as the 1st Saint Lord in our history, an Oracle."

The faces of the Saint Children immediately turned as they exclaimed despite themselves, "What?! An Oracle has appeared?!"

The Saint Lord nodded, "That's right!"

The other female Saint Child, who had silver hair, a petite figure, and beautiful features but a pitiful aura, spoke up, "Aliens and an Oracle has appeared. That means that the prophecy is coming true. This time, our Urotians are going to be walking towards destruction?"

Among the humans, there were many people with abilities, certain skills such as mind-reading and prophesying and divination were rare. Even the Novice Village did not have such skills up for the exchange.

However, even if they were rare, some people could still awaken such abilities. The first generation prophet of Uros was an expert with such abilities, and he had foretold the future of Uros.

The Saint Lord continued gravely, "It is not that it cannot be changed. However, we would need the strength to defy the heavens. In order to contest such a fate, our Uros have been accumulating our power and strength. We just lack a key to turn things around. And Yue Zhong, is the Oracle, the key. We have to see his strength."

The gazes of the 4 Saint Children narrowed, as they continued to observe the crystal display.

Within Cleansing Wind City.

Zhang Xuan's voice came through the communication device, "Yue Zhong, watch out, there're 70 aliens heading towards your direction."

In this world where technology and cultivation went hand in hand, there were satellites in space, controlled by the Saint Lands, allowing them to pinpoint the locations of the aliens and make the appropriate response.

At that instant, 70 aliens appeared all around Yue Zhong.

The 70 aliens had been scattered, hunting the human race while continuously reproducing. They had spent barely 10 seconds to regather at the fastest speed. Although their numbers were little, their combat strength and viciousness far surpassed the zombies on Earth.

Because they could scatter and regroup as and whenever, the human experts that were battling a few could be suddenly ambushed by many of them without any warning.

This was one of the reasons why they were able to tear through the human forces and create so much chaos.

The 70 of them had just gathered around Yue Zhong, when the 10 blood radiances exploded out, turning into an evil and mysterious screen that enveloped all 70 of them.

All the aliens had different reactions to the screen coming over them. A large number of them quickly toughened their exoskeletons, that could prevent laser beams from penetrating them, as they charged towards the blanket of blood.

A few big-bellied ones opened their mouths as they fired out green corrosive spit at the blood.

Another dozen opened their mouths and spat out their tongues at the blood screen.

The blood screen came down and directly covered the nearby aliens, while sweeping through the big-bellied aliens and those firing their tongues, sweeping all of them into itself.

Only one Type 6 saw that things were not good, and had immediately burst forth with speed to escape far away.

After consuming over 60 aliens, the blood screen folded into itself, while the aliens within struggled for barely a moment before turning into dried corpses.

The blood screen continued to evolve, separating into 12 bloody radiances.

Within the palace, when the Saint Children witnessed this scene, they could not help but praise, "What a terrifying technique!"

The Saint Lord was also extremely pleased, as he held up a crystal box and ordered, "All Saint Land Protectors are to annihilate all aliens within the 18 cities in the shortest time possible!"

These Saint Land Protectors were the strongest armed forces. They did not appear often and only responded to the Saint Lord's command.

At that moment, behind the Saint Lands, on top the 9 mountains, 4 of them opened up to reveal enormous airships that soared out. They were all over 2 km in length, dozens of meters tall, and made out of the strongest alloy of Uros, Luo Kun Alloy.

This particular alloy combined the might of the natural occurring Luo Kun ore into metals, and its defense was incredible. Even a Type 6 expert might not be able to penetrate an armor made out of this material.

It was rare, and each year, at most a few tonnes of such a metal alloy would be produced. The 4 huge airships were actually made out of these alloy, which showed how tough a defense they possessed, far surpassing Yue Zhong's Scarlet Reaper.

If these battleships did not operate their energy shields, their defenses already surpassed the Storm Battleship Yue Zhong obtained in the 3rd World. Of course, their size was much smaller than the Storm Battleship.

Yue Zhong, who was slaughtering the aliens, looked up at those Protector Airships, his heart running cold, "What powerful

battleships, are these the most advanced technology of this world?"

The appearance of those 4 Saint Land Protector Battleships caused even a Type 7 expert like Yue Zhong to feel a sense of danger.

Chapter 1014: Saint Land Protectors!

The 4 Battleships soared high above the skies, emitting an overbearing pressure.

The moment they reached the space above Cleansing Wind City, countless cannons extended out from their hulls and began to rain bullets upon the ground.

The defense of the Protector Battleships was astounding enough, and their particle cannons were also the most powerful in terms of the laser and electromagnetic technology Uros had. Every single beam could pierce through a Type 5 alien, blasting its body apart.

One alien had just stuck out its tongue to penetrate the head of an alien, when a beam came shooting down, going through its head and destroying its brain. The corpse then slumped to the floor.

5 other aliens had been hiding in a street, slowly encroaching on a dozen resisting human soldiers, when out of the blue, each of them was pierced by the laser beams from the sky.

The 4 Protector Battleships were considered the strongest weapons of war in the Saint Lands, and their rate of slaughter was even higher than Yue Zhong.

At the same time, each of them opened their flaps, as numerous 5m-tall mech drones came flying out, aiming for the aliens below.

Each of these black mech drones was equipped with 2 particle cannons, and as they soared in the skies, the particle beams shot down at the numerous aliens below, killing them.

Yue Zhong eyed the 4 Protector Battleships, and thought of a term, "Helicarrier!!"

Other than coming out from those Saint Land Protector Battleships, those 5m-long drones continued to shoot out from the Saint Lands as well, turning into a cloud of death machines as they shot towards the 18 cities.

The rain of particle beams brought destruction upon the numerous aliens.

With this trump card deployed, the originally-bad situation was turned around, as the aliens were being taken out swiftly. At the same time, it did not matter if they gathered or not, as they were being hunted down regardless.

All of a sudden, there was a sharp howl from behind the aliens, and those which were chasing the humans quickly turned around and charged towards the forests.

Yue Zhong floated on his bloody radiance and frowned, "Crafty fellows!! If they were to really descend upon Earth, it would be a disaster."

When the aliens burst forth with their maximum speed, they could surpass the sound barrier. Although the drones tried to give chase, they were unable to carry out their mission in full, and only managed to kill a thousand of those aliens.

This time, the aliens had killed over 60,000 soldiers in their attack, while 20,000 were injured. The number of ordinary human citizens that had died numbered about 200,000. Whereas the aliens that had perished were only about 6,000. It was a terrible price.

Everywhere within the cities, there were many human limbs and dismembered body parts, and people wailing and crying.

Yue Zhong soared in the air with the bloody radiance under him. He saw the crying survivors below and sighed. He knew that this was just the beginning of the apocalypse. The aliens would continue to propagate and overrun the humans. In the end, all the biological life forms on Uros would perish sooner or later.

Zhang Xuan came up to Yue Zhong and said, "Yue Zhong, let's go."

Yue Zhong wanted to see the Saint Lands, "Sure!"

Under Zhang Xuan's lead, Yue Zhong came up to the mountain.

"What thick spiritual energy." As he stepped on the mountain, Yue Zhong felt a strong sense of energy entering his body.

After reaching the Type 7 realm, he could already sense and control the atmospheric energy. At the same time, his perception became even more sensitive, he could sense the difference in the quality of the energy.

Wherever a place had thicker spiritual energy, the rate of cultivation would be much faster. It was one of the main reasons why the Saint Land could produce so many experts.

Along the way, Yue Zhong also saw many strange beasts and felt curious.

One big-eyed, pretty young girl with 2 ponytails came bouncing up to Yue Zhong' side, smiling sweetly as she invited, "I'm Liu Yan Yan from Green Phoenix Palace! Yue Zhong, come over to the palace for a visit! I have some questions about my cultivation, maybe you can give me some pointers?"

In the Saint Lands, every single Type 6 expert would have their own residence, at the same time, they would have many subordinates as well. Tang Xi was the Palace Master of the Green Phoenix Palace, while Liu Yan Yan and the rest of the female warriors were her subordinates living there as well.

"Hehe, Liu Yan Yan is in love."

"However, it's not hard to see why, such an outstanding man like him, I would fall for him too!"

"Haha, Cai Cai, are you also infatuated already?"

"Don't spout rubbish, or else I'll cut off your tongue!"

"..."

The female warriors of the Green Phoenix Palace began to giggle as they pointed. Since Liu Yan Yan had made the first move, most of them were slightly jealous of her outgoing nature.

Amidst their teasing, Liu Yan Yan was slightly flushed, as she stared at Yue Zhong with her bright eyes, her gaze filled with expectation and some fear, afraid that he would reject.

Yue Zhong responded with a light chuckle, "Alright!"

Yue Zhong's strength came entirely from the God and Devil System, he had never truly cultivated before. However, when he had reached the Type 6 realm, and achieved the God-Devil Body, he was no longer mortal and was considered an existence that far surpassed these demon-level geniuses.

After he reached the Type 7 stage, his wisdom had grown, and regardless of the type of technique or martial art, as long as he took a single, he could achieve an understanding of it. Of course, it would be up to the Seventh Order realm, since he was at the Type 7 stage.

Even so, it was an incredible feat. After all, out of all the humans on Uros, there were not even 10 Type 7 experts.

Hearing his words, Liu Yan Yan's face turned even redder, as she stood beside him and began to explain the situation of the mountain.

"Bastard!!"

Seeing Liu Yan Yan following Yue Zhong around, the elites beside Murong Wang all had ugly expressions, as they cursed out in their hearts.

Liu Yan Yan might not be prettier than Tang Xi, but amongst the women, she was still considered one of the top 3. She was the goddess of many and seeing her taking the initiative to approach Yue Zhong, it was a bitter pill to swallow for many of them.

On the mountain, where the Saint Land was established, the ground was covered in jade-like stones and pebbles that shone brightly. The entrance had a few sculptures erected out of crystal, giving off a resplendent feel and catching attention.

Seeing this entrance, Yue Zhong could not help but praise, "What extravagance!"

"Murong Wang, who is this? How come I have never met him before?"

At this time, a handsome man came walking over, his face good-looking and his black hair short. He wore a star-filled robe with a long sword at his waist. Behind him, there were 20 other extraordinary men with similar sword-like auras as well.

Beside him, there was also an outstanding beauty, who was followed by 10 handsome men and 8 ordinary and plain girls.

Murong Wang replied coldly, "Wang Cheng, he was brought back by Zhang Xuan, you ask him."

Since he had witnessed Yue Zhong's power for himself and was even saved, although he was jealous, he would not antagonize him like a fool.

Wang Cheng's gaze fell upon Tang Xi, as an infatuated look flashed past. He saw that Yue Zhong was closer to Tang Xi, and his face sunk, his tone immediately becoming frigid, "Zhang Xuan, who is this? I remember that the rules of Saint Land prevent any outsiders from stepping in, did you forget this rule?"

Yue Zhong's looks were ordinary, but after so many battles and life-and-death situations, he has long since shed his normal aura, and his entire being radiated an extraordinary feel. Even if he stood in the middle of a crowd, it was not easy not to look. It was because of this that Liu Yan Yan had been attracted.

Wang Cheng was worried that his goddess Tang Xi would be smitten as well, thus he felt uncomfortable.

Zhang Xuan frowned and stepped forward, "Wang Cheng, Yue Zhong is a friend of my invitation. As long as he doesn't step into the forbidden areas, there's no problem."

"Look at him. If he walks around as he pleased and hurt the ladies

of our Saint Land, who is going to be responsible? Scram. This is not a place a bumpkin like you can come." Wang Cheng swept a look at Liu Yan Yan, before laughing condescendingly, and reached forward with his hand suddenly, intending to slap Yue Zhong.

As one of the few Palace Heads and a Type 6 expert, arrogance was already bred deep into his bones. Not to mention slapping him, even if he did kill Yue Zhong accidentally, no one would step forward for him.

Seeing that, many of the elites revealed expressions of schadenfreude.

Zhang Xuan did not expect Wang Cheng to be so overbearing and not give him face. He reacted slower than he could, and watched in rage as the palm swung towards Yue Zhong, "Wang Cheng!! You dare to?!"

Chapter 1015: One-hit K.O.!

Yue Zhong saw that Wang Cheng was being unreasonable, stepping out just to hit him, and his eyes flashed with rage. He twisted his body slightly, dodging the incoming slap by a hair's breadth before his own right fist shot out like lightning as it slapped Wang Cheng's face.

Pa! Pa!

Yue Zhong did not even have to use his Type 7 strength, with just his flesh, it was tyrannical enough. Wang Cheng did not expect him to even react and was not able to defend when Yue Zhong slapped him twice. Due to the impact, some of his teeth were sent flying amidst some blood.

Murong Wang's gaze constricted, as he felt slightly better, "Nicely done!"

Murong Wang's subordinate had been slapped by Yue Zhong before, seeing Wang Cheng suffer the same fate, his grudge eased slightly.

Tang Xi's gaze was also full of shock, "What an insane speed!! If he was dealing with me, I wouldn't be able to dodge that either. How strong is he exactly? Peak-Type 6? Or half-step Type 7?"

Although she had thought that her evaluation of Yue Zhong was already high enough, never in her imagination would she guess that he had already reached the Type 7 realm. Among the Saint Lands, while there were many Type 6 experts, the number of Type 7 experts barely numbered 10.

"You dare to hit me!! I will kill you bastard!!"

Wang Cheng's face stung from the hit, and he was filled with humiliation, as he bellowed out in shame and rage.

Who was Wang Cheng? He was the Palace Head of the Red Leopard Palace, a demon-level genius, and was used to lording over

others. Outside of the Saint Lands, even the hegemony of the rest of Uros would have to bow to him. It had only been him humiliating others, never the other way round. Even when he was still weak, experts would think twice due to his background and gave him face. Ever since he reached the Type 6 realm, no one dared to humiliate him. Yet, in front of all these people present, he was slapped twice, and he was naturally furious.

"Sky-Swallowing Red Leopard!!"

In order to vent his rage, he channeled his strongest secret technique, as a powerful might burst out from him. A figure of a powerful scarlet leopard appeared behind him, 10 meters in height, and exuding a powerful aura. Its eyes flashed dangerously.

The Sky-Swallowing Red Leopard technique was one of the top 10 techniques, at its peak, it could congeal a powerful Type 7 Red Leopard, and with a wave of the user's hands, it could level cities and cause destruction.

When the Red Leopard appeared, a dangerous aura spread forth from it.

All the Type 5 experts around felt a sense of fear as they gazed at the image of the Red Leopard, feeling as though it would kill them with just a single swipe.

Even Murong Wang, Zhang Xuan and Tang Xi could not help but take a step back. If they did not utilize any life-saving techniques or treasures, their lives would be in danger too.

The Red Leopard instantly charged towards Yue Zhong in the blink of an eye, smashing down with the pressure of Mount Tai. Even a Type 6 expert would be injured beneath such a strike, if not crushed dead.

"Watch out!!"

Liu Yan Yan watched the demonic Red Leopard slashing at Yue Zhong, and could not help but scream out in worry.

"Interesting, break for me!!"

Facing the image, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and did not dodge, directly using his Second Order God-Devil Body to resist the strike.

Hong!

With a loud impact, the image was actually dispersed by a single fist from Yue Zhong, revealing Wang Cheng within.

Wang Cheng watched in horror and disbelief as his strongest skill was broken down, "Impossible!! How is this possible?!!"

After destroying Wang Cheng's skill, Yue Zhong flashed on top of him and kicked downwards viciously.

Wang Cheng took the full brunt and his entire figure was sent shooting down, slamming into the ground. The force of the impact caused the ground to break, as a large amount of blood flowed from his body.

Zhang Xuan looked at Yue Zhong, his eyes full of shock, "Strong!! This man is truly strong!! Only the Saint Children could possibly match up to him."

Tang Xi stared at the awe-inspiring image of Yue Zhong in the sky, a slight ripple in her heart, "What a strong man, seems like my evaluation of him was too low! He's likely on par with the Saint Children."

"Strong!!"

"So cool!!"

"The Palace Head of the Red Leopard Palace was actually 1-hit-KOed by him!! Too strong!"

"Seems like only the Saint Children can take him on."

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong killing Wang Cheng in a single move, the

young female warriors of Green Phoenix Palace began to discuss animatedly with gleams in their eyes.

One other beautiful female from the Green Phoenix Palace, who had long slender legs, hugged Liu Yan Yan's arms and spoke softly, "Yan Yan, I'm sorry, I think I've fallen for him too. I will compete with you, fair and square."

Liu Yan Yan's face was resolute, "Mei Ying, I will not lose to you."

"Husband! Are you ok?!"

The outstanding beauty who had accompanied Wang Cheng saw how he was defeated in a single move, and rushed up beside him to support him up.

When she saw his entire face covered in blood and his body riddled with injuries, her face fell. She turned to glare at Yue Zhong with a venomous gaze, shrieking sharply, "Go!! Kill that little bastard!! Everyone go!! I will throw those who don't dare into the Black Water Prison for 20 years!!"

When they heard her orders, those Type 5 experts around her had ugly expressions. They had no choice but to charge at Yue Zhong with gritted teeth.

The beautiful young woman was the daughter of a Greater Elder in the Saint Lands. Although she did not possess many capabilities, due to her background, few dared to go against her orders. These Type 5 warriors would really be forced to suffer and be under torment for 20 years if they did not carry out her will.

Yue Zhong smirked coldly as he eyed the incoming experts, and shot forward. In a flash, countless clones split from him, appearing in front of those Saint Land elites and smashing a fist into their chests.

The guards were thus sent flying by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong himself went towards the young woman, his eyes flashing with a cold, killing intent. Regardless of who it was, as

long as the other party wanted him dead, he would not let the other party go. After the apocalypse, his mindset had changed, a dead enemy was the best kind of enemy.

The beauty, Li Zhu, could feel the pressure Yue Zhong was emitting. She was so frightened that she crumpled to the ground, as a puddle of yellow liquid formed under her dress, "Don't come over!! Don't kill me!! My dad is the Greater Elder Li Gang Tie! If you dare to kill me, he will not let you off!!"

Since ancient times, it was extremely common to have old heroes who had begotten useless children. This Li Zhu might have a Type 7 Divine Warrior for a father, but her character was despotic and loved to play rather than cultivate. Thus, she was only at the Type 4 realm. She relied completely on medicines to obtain her strength, and her actual combat strength was weak till it was pathetic. Even an elite Type 1 expert could kill her with proper skills and technique.

Right at this time, an immortal fairy came towards Yue Zhong, her attire white, and her long, black hair flowing past her shoulders. She had skin as fair as snow, her features as though sculpted by the greatest of artists. She bowed gently in front of him and apologized, "Sir Yue Zhong, I'm Duanmu Bing Xue, one of the guards under Saint Child Red Dawn. Please be appeased! I shall apologize on the behalf of Miss Zhu'er, as she's still young and doesn't know any better. We seek your grace and forgiveness."

Yue Zhong glanced at her, and could not help but praise in his heart, "What an exceptional beauty. The Saint Lands do have their fair share of beauties."

This Duanmu Bing Xue was extremely pretty, not necessarily losing out to Luo Qing Qing in her demeanor or looks. And yet, she possessed a different charm from Luo Qing Qing. She was like the epitome of a demure fairy, exuding such a peaceful aura that anyone who set their sights on her would feel calmed and refreshed.

"Since this is the case, then forget it." After seeing Duanmu Bing Xue, Yue Zhong retracted his killing intent. After all, he had not really suffered any loss.

At one side, Tang Xi's eyes lit up with joy when she saw Duanmu Bing Xue, her coldness and aloof expression melting away. She ran up to her with a bright smile, "Sister Bing Xue! I have not seen you in a long while. I've missed you so!!"

Duanmu Bing Xue looked at Tang Xi, a gentle look in her eyes as she patted Tang Xi's head, "Little Xi, you're already a Palace Head yourself. What would others say if they saw you like this?"

Tang Xi scrunched her face and hugged Duanmu Bing Xue even tighter, "I don't care about those."

Tang Xi's current behavior caused those under her to stare wide-eyed.

Duanmu Bing Xue then patted her shoulders, "Alright, Little Xi, I have things to do, let go first."

Tang Xi let go reluctantly.

Duanmu Bing Xue then turned to Yue Zhong and extend an invitation gently, "Sir Yue Zhong, my Lord, Saint Child Red Dawn, invites you to her Red Dawn Holy Palace."

Chapter 1016: Red Dawn Holy Palace!

When the male elites heard this, their faces turned to one of shock, as they looked towards Yue Zhong with envy and jealousy, "What?! Saint Child Red Dawn actually invited him?!"

Saint Child Red Dawn, or Hong Xia, was one of the 2 female Saint Children of the Saint Lands. They were sometimes referred to as the Holy Maidens as well. Other than the 2 male Saint Children, only a few pure maidens and Type 5 elites, as well as Palace Lords could enter the Red Dawn Holy Palace. Although these Type 5 existences might be overbearing characters outside, compared to the Saint Child Red Dawn, there was a huge difference.

Liu Yan Yan gazed at Yue Zhong, who had shown enough of his strength and was standing with a natural overbearingness, her eyes filled with a complicated gaze, "Has he gained the attention of the Holy Maiden? If she makes a move, I can't possibly compete against her..."

Yue Zhong agreed, "Ok!"

Along the way, due to Zhang Xuan's idle chatter, Yue Zhong had already gotten a grasp of the structure of the Saint Lands.

The current highest authority was the Saint Lord, while directly beneath him were the 4 Saint Children, as well as the Greater Elders.

The Greater Elders were all powerful cultivators that trained hard, thus, the bulk of authority fell into the hands of the Saint Children. As long as he could get to meet them, Yue Zhong was certain that there was a chance to succeed in his motive.

Zhang Xuan quickly walked over, gazing at Duanmu Bing Xue with a passionate look, "Miss Duanmu, this Zhang here wonders if I have the honor to join the feast organized by the Holy Maiden?"

One handsome man with a fan in his hands came over with a

warm smile as well, surrounded by dozens of elites. He asked Duanmu Bing Xue, "This Shao here also hopes to attend the banquet hosted by the Holy Maiden, may I be so daring as to ask if there's a seat available for me?"

Duanmu Bing Xue smiled in neither a servile or overbearing manner, "Palace Head Zhang and Palace Head Shao, you naturally can attend if you're interested. However, you guys should be clear about the rules of the Red Dawn Holy Palace."

Duanmu Xue Bing was one of the 4 personal guards of the Saint Child Red Dawn, and although she was recognized as a maidservant, she was also known as a true powerhouse at the Type 6 realm. If she was placed anywhere else, she would definitely be qualified to have her own palace. Thus, none of the Palace Heads treated her like an ordinary maidservant.

The handsome man with the fan who walked over was called Shao Hai Feng, the Palace Head of the Sirius Palace. His martial technique, the Sirius Roar had been trained to a smooth mastery stage, and it was extremely lethal.

Shao Hai Feng swept his subordinates a gaze and ordered, "Got it, all of you head back and rest first."

The many elites of the Sirius Palace were disappointed, but they still responded with respect, "Yes! Palace Head!"

Murong Wang stepped forward and spoke solemnly, "I would like to attend the gathering as well."

Duanmu Bing Xue laughed gently, "Palace Head Murong is naturally welcome," before turning to Tang Xi and asked, "Xi'er, are you coming?"

Tang Xi nodded, "Of course, I'd like to."

"Then, please come with me, everybody."

Duanmu Bing Xue smiled once more, before grasping Tang Xi's hand in hers, and headed further into the Saint Lands.

"What a lavish atmosphere!!"

The moment Yue Zhong stepped into the Saint Land, he felt as though he had stepped into a different world.

Further in the Saint Lands, there were a number of mountain peaks, each of them covered with thick spiritual energy. One could see numerous rare beasts roaming about as well. Amidst the many mountain peaks, 4 500m-tall peaks surrounded one which towered above the rest, looking like a sharp sword pointed at the heavens.

Upon going through the entrance of the Saint Lands, Duanmu Bing Xue waved her hands, and an anti-gravity vehicle suspended in mid-air zoomed over.

Everybody present boarded the vehicle, which then flew up, and transformed into a beam of light that shot towards one of the 4 tall peaks.

"Is this made entirely out of Crystal? Saint Child Red Dawn does know how to enjoy herself."

Yue Zhong came down from the vehicle and looked around, only to discover all the structures constructed out of red crystals. It looked beautiful and lavish, and there had never been such exquisite structures back on Earth.

All around the palace, there were many female guards wearing red armor and wielding halberds, their looks extraordinary and exuding powerful auras.

"What a strong-armed force!"

Yue Zhong swept a glance over those female guards, and could not help but sigh with a somewhat envious gaze. These guards were actually all at least at the Type 4 realm.

The Saint Lands had monopolized the resources of Uros, producing many talented young men and women, thus giving rise to such might.

Under Duanmu Bing Xue's guide, Yue Zhong and the rest entered the palace and went through a few corridors, before finally arriving at a magnificent hall that surpassed even the Forbidden City's Golden Temple on Earth.

On the two sides of the palace, there were long tables, as many demure maidens came walking out and guided Yue Zhong's group to their seats.

Duanmu Bing Xue smiled apologetically, and clapped her hands lightly, "Everyone, please wait a moment, her Highness will be coming soon. In the meantime, please try our Red Dawn Holy Palace's cuisine."

A few elites of exceptional beauty then came out from the 2 sides of the palace, bringing with them plates of delicious looking cuisine.

One of them came up to Yue Zhong, raising a wine pot and poured a cup for him, as her voice sounded sweet, "Please enjoy, this is Bi Xian Lu, made from a hundred different rare herbs as well as the sweet pollen of a thousand flowers. It has the anti-aging properties, nourishes the blood, as well as increasing Yang vitality. It is a truly rare wine of this world."

Yue Zhong received it and with a thought, he could sense the elation of Zhang Xuan, Murong Wang, Tang Xi and Shao Hai Feng when they received their own cups. They had gulped it down immediately and revealed expressions of drunken ecstasy.

With a light laugh, Yue Zhong shot out a thin strand of blood without anyone noticing, controlling it to flow around the cup of Bi Xian Lu. After it absorbed a tiny sliver, there was no change, instead, it became slightly larger.

Although he had the Second Order God-Devil Body and it was unlikely that any poison could do any harm to him, he was still wary. After all, it was a foreign place and not exactly safe.

Seeing this, he relaxed and downed the contents.

When the Bi Xian Lu wine hit him, the fragrance and sweetness exploded in his mouth. It was as though there were a new scent and flavor with every breath, spreading throughout his palette, before finally gushing down his throat in a warm flow.

When it entered his abdomen, it transformed into a hot current of energy that spread throughout his limbs, before being absorbed entirely.

He opened his eyes, and there was a glint as he breathed out a long breath, "Good wine!! One more!"

Yue Zhong had never been a drunkard, but this Bi Xian Lu was exceptional, and he felt that it was truly enticing.

The long-legged beauty smiled sweetly, "Due to the difficulty in production, there isn't much in our Red Dawn Holy Palace. You only get one flask. Sir Yue Zhong, it's better that you indulge in the delicacies along with your wine slowly. That would prolong the taste and enhance the appreciation and experience."

Yue Zhong glanced at his table, noticing that it was filled with various delicious dishes, each one of them appetizing and sumptuous.

He took up a piece of unknown meat and bit down on it, feeling the juice burst out from within and filling his mouth. At the same time, as it entered his abdomen, it transformed into thick energy that coursed through his body.

"Such flavor should be from a Type 5 Mutant Beast, and it's extremely fresh!"

Yue Zhong thought silently while gobbling up the meat and enjoying his wine. He did not care about how others viewed him. He had been risking his life on the line for so long, searching for opportunities to become strong. It was a rare moment of relaxation and indulgence for him.

Murong Wang glanced at Yue Zhong, and gloated condescendingly, "A bumpkin will forever be a bumpkin!!"

Shao Hai Feng was also the same, but he did not reveal any expression on his face.

All of a sudden, the music stopped, as a beautiful maiden stepped out, dressed in extravagant red palace clothes, exuding a confident and valiant aura.

Within the hall, there were many extraordinary beauties that could easily topple societies, and yet, when compared to the Saint Child Red Dawn, or Holy Maiden Hong Xia, they were reduced to leaves while she was the eye-catching rose.

As Holy Maiden Hong Xia entered the palace, Zhang Xuan, Murong Wang, and Shao Hai Feng were instantly attracted, their eyes filled with a passionate gaze.

The Holy Maiden Hong Xia and Holy Maiden Qing Xi were renowned to be the goddesses of every male Palace Head in the Saint Lands

Holy Maiden Hong Xia then revealed a dazzling smile, as she spoke, "My apologies, I've let everyone wait. In order to express my regret, let me present this Sky Fragrance Dance for your enjoyment."

After that, she clapped her jade-like hands.

Duanmu Bing Xue pulled out a Chinese zither and began to play.

Within the palace, the various beautiful maidens also pulled out their instruments to play.

Chapter 1017: Sky Fragrance Dance!

An ethereal melody began to resound throughout the hall, intoxicating all who heard it.

As the music played, Holy Maiden Hong Xia began to twist her lithe figure, flowing according to the music, putting on a performance that seemed fit for immortals.

The moment she began to dance, she exuded an eye-catching charisma through her moves, and Zhang Xuan, Murong Wang, and Shao Hai Feng were all captivated, their eyes revealing dumbstruck expressions.

"Beautiful!!"

Yue Zhong watched her dance, and his heartbeat also quickened, his eyes gleaming with a drunken expression. He felt as though nothing else mattered, and that as long as he could obtain a kiss from this immortal fairy, he would be willing to give her anything, even his own heart.

As he was about to fall deeper in that entranced state, his body suddenly trembled and his eyes regained their clarity, his back breaking out in cold sweat, "Not good, there's something wrong!!"

After experiencing so many battles and killings, Yue Zhong's heart had been forged over and over again, even the most beautiful ladies had not caused his heart to waver in the slightest. At most, he would feel like there's a minute desire to possess them, but he would never fall into such a state.

He shot the dancing Holy Maiden Hong Xia an alarmed look, "What a terrifying demonic lady, had I not been at the Type 7 realm, or lacking the God-Devil Body, I would have really been entrapped in that desire, becoming a mindless suitor. The most terrifying thing is that I would be willing because I would have fallen for her completely."

The Sky Fragrance Dance and the ethereal music played by Duanmu Bing Xue was a special form of charming technique, bringing out the deepest desire of men and controlling while allowing the user's own charm to be boosted by 20%.

Due to the special circumstances of the combination technique, it was not a direct Spirit attack on the consciousness, thus, even Type 6 and Type 7 experts might fall into such a trap if not careful, and would really fall head over heels for the Holy Maiden.

Yue Zhong's Second Order God-Devil Body was able to resist countless charms, but it was also helpless against such a combination technique. Had it not been for the countless experience and his heart hardened after so long, he might have already been far gone.

As for the Holy Maiden herself, as she was dancing, she swept a glance and could tell that Yue Zhong had already extracted himself, her heart was full of shock, "No one has ever been able to escape from this combination of my Sky Fragrance Dance and Xue'er's Immortal Ode, except for the Saint Lord and those who are neither male nor female. This man was able to recover, truly capable. I need to test him once more."

She turned around gracefully, and smiled brilliantly at Yue Zhong, fully displaying her beautiful countenance as well as a strange glint in her eyes as she danced past Yue Zhong.

"Another charming technique? Truly underestimating me! Break!"

At the time she shot Yue Zhong a smile, his eyes went dazed for barely a second, and again, he felt that this woman was the only woman he truly loved in his entire life. However, his body trembled once more and he collected himself. His eyes then flashed coldly, as an image of him appeared in his sea of knowledge, blasting out at the spiritual energy attacking his mind.

At the moment his image destroyed the spirit attack, Holy

Maiden Hong Xia turned pale, and her body trembled uncontrollably, as she quickly motioned slightly with her hand.

When Duanmu Bing Xue saw that signal, her eyes swept towards Yue Zhong, and she quickly brought her Immortal Ode to an end.

The tune ended and the Holy Maiden went back to her seat.

Shao Hai Feng regained his senses after a long while, sighing out sincerely, "Marvelous, truly marvelous! This Sky Fragrance Dance of yours was incredibly beautiful and fascinating to watch! I am still so enthralled each time. If I could see it often, I can die with no regrets."

As he spoke, he kept his heated gaze fixed upon her, his passion apparent. He was currently truly smitten with her, and even if she wanted him to kill himself, he would gladly do so without hesitation.

"Brother Shao is flattering me." Holy Maiden Hong Xia laughed gently, her face putting on an expression that caused one to feel comfortable and cannot help but love.

Murong Wang was also staring at Holy Maiden, his eyes flashing with a passionate gaze, "No, Palace Master Shao is right. It was truly an astounding immortal dance. Other than your Highness, no one else would be able to perform that dance. It is truly an honor and a fortune across 3 lifetimes that I, Murong Wang, was able to witness it."

Zhang Xuan also responded simply, "Precisely!"

Holy Maiden Hong Xia's eyes then flickered towards Yue Zhong, who had maintained silent, and smiled lightly, "Mr. Yue Zhong, was my dance not up to your standards?"

When her words came out, the gazes of the 3 men fell upon him, and they were sharp with envy and fury.

Even Zhang Xuan, who had sought to build good relations with him, was currently looking at him in a dangerous way.

All three of them had been thoroughly bewitched by the Holy Maiden, and since she was looking at Yue Zhong with a different gaze, they were naturally jealous.

Yue Zhong ignored their gazes and spoke indifferently, "I'm not educated about dance, I'm afraid that I will have to disappoint your Highness."

After that, he stared straight back at her, "Holy Maiden Hong Xia, this time, I've come to the Saint Lands to seek a business transaction. I want to obtain the technology on the particle cannons, the mech drones, the Gauss rifles as well as those Saint Land Protector Battleships. Of course, I will put forth something equal in value for the trade. It is a win-win situation for both sides."

Shao Hai Feng's face turned ugly, as he barked out immediately, "Preposterous!! These are our classified information, who the hell do you think you are, to come here and spout this bullshit?!"

Hong Xia waved her hands, however, causing him to shut up, before she asked with interest, "What can you bring out to exchange?"

P.S. The author mentioned in this chapter that he had something on in real life that he had to attend to and could not write more, but the next few chapters might be longer in length. In fact, he's frequently dealing with stuff, just that it's mostly the same message.

Chapter 1018: Deal!

"Audacious, just because you have little capabilities, you dare to ask for our technology, encroaching on our bottom line. What a fool." Hearing Holy Maiden Hong Xia's question back to Yue Zhong, Murong Wang swept him a gloating glance and sneered inwardly.

On planet Uros, where cultivation and technology went hand in hand, not only were the cultivators rampant in numbers, technology was likewise advanced. However, it was just that the most advanced technology were all kept in the control of the Saint Lands. The technology employed in the other cities were similar to that of Earth before its own apocalypse.

It was because the Saint Lands had monopolized the technology and cultivation techniques that they maintained their rule.

Murong Wang and the rest were clear that since these technologies were their lifelines, it was impossible for them to be spread out.

Zhang Xuan and Shao Hai Feng looked towards Yue Zhong and sneered as well, although they did not say anything.

Zhang Xuan was always on good terms with Yue Zhong, but after Hong Xia treated Yue Zhong differently, he was filled with a fury stemming from goodness knows where, and all he felt was animosity now.

Yue Zhong chuckled and flipped his hands, sending a document over to her, revealing his precise control over his energy, "What do you think about this? I feel that your Saint Lands truly need something like this."

She smiled and received the document, glancing through it with a carefree expression, when suddenly, her eyes narrowed and she revealed an expression of shock. She gripped the document tightly

and her face changed multiple times, her gaze complicated.

The document in her hands was the technology of the enhancing armor that Yue Zhong obtained from the 3rd World, if they were to be utilized fully, they could push the might of a cultivator by almost an entire realm. It was truly powerful.

If a peak-Type 3 expert wore a Type 3 Enhanced Battle Armor, it could boost him or her to possessing a Type 4 strength. Although it could not compare to a true Type 4 expert, it was extremely helpful.

If a peak-Type 4 expert put on a Type 4 Enhanced Battle Armor, then he or she would reach the Type 5 realm.

These Enhanced Battle Armors were extremely useful equipment. With them, they could challenge enemies of a higher realm. To any faction, it was an important equipment.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia narrowed her gaze as she asked Yue Zhong, "Do you have any of these items with you right now?"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly and swept a glance at the slender Type 5 beauty beside him. He waved his hands and a Type 5 Enhanced Battle Armor flew out, landing beside her. "Your Highness, her strength is only at the initial Type 5 realm, thus, using this will only boost her to the peak of the Type 5 realm."

The armor was not all-powerful, directly raising the person's realm. It could help a person at the peak of his strength to achieve a momentary breakthrough, but not someone who had just entered the Type 5 realm to jump straight into the Type 6 realm.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia nodded silently at the beauty and ordered, "Xiang Lan, try it."

"Yes!"

With a resolute reply, she began to put on the Type 5 Battle Armor.

The Type 5 nucleus behind the armor glowed brightly, as a huge energy traveled through Xiang Lan's body, pushing her towards the peak-Type 5 realm.

Her strength began to radiate from her, shocking everybody present.

"That's the strength of a peak Type 5 expert!! This armor is so miraculous?!"

Feeling the strength emitted by Xiang Lan, everyone's face turned. They could see for themselves just what the armor did. If it was mass produced, they could easily groom and equip a powerful army.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia's face was no different, her gaze showing her emotions as she looked at the armor. If she could obtain 10 Battle Armors, her Red Dawn Holy Palace would be able to produce 10 more Type 6 experts.

The difference between a Type 5 and Type 6 expert was vast, and it was tough for somebody at the peak of the Type 5 realm to achieve a breakthrough. Holy Maiden Hong Xia only had about 4 subordinates that had broken through to the Type 6 realm.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly and turned to Hong Xia, "How is it? You can return me the armor now."

The armor required the powering of a Type 5 nucleus, and if the armor landed in the hands of the Saint Lands, they would be able to reverse-engineer it. He had no choice but to be a little selfish right now.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia's eyes flashed, and she started to speak with a coquettish tone towards Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, I really like this armor. Why don't you gift one to me? I'm willing to dance privately, just for you."

"Damn it! In order to gain her favor, I've given her so many treasures. She has never treated me any different! Yet this

bumpkin appeared and got her attention!! Damn it!! Damn him!! He was able to hoodwink her, I will kill him!!"

The moment Hong Xia spoke, Shao Hai Feng's face turned steely, as his right hand crushed the crystal cup he was holding, his eyes practically shooting fire as he stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, his killing intent billowing.

Murong Wang and Zhang Xuan also had similar expressions, eyeing Yue Zhong with killing intent.

A beautiful woman could bring about calamities. Such a saying referred to women like Hong Xia. Based on her looks and charms, it was easy for many men to fall for her. Many would die and kill for her, and few could reject her requests.

Yue Zhong rejected without much hesitation, "I'm sorry, I'm not interested in dance. Holy Maiden Hong Xia, you'd better return the armor to me."

To Yue Zhong, the most important thing was to raise China's strength. If he indulged in pleasure, China would fall easily.

Seeing Yue Zhong reject her so easily, Hong Xia's face also fell. She had always been the one to reject men, and she had not seen one reject her for a very long time. She felt slightly uncomfortable.

She recovered, before speaking out, "Xiang Lan, return the armor to this petty man."

At this time, Shao Hai Feng barked out, "Wait!"

Yue Zhong frowned and shot him a glance.

Hai Feng pulled out a box and opened it, revealing a Type 5 nucleus that was shining brightly.

He shot Yue Zhong a condescending glance, full of arrogance as he uttered coldly, "This is a Type 5 Mutant Beast Nucleus, it came from the Frozen Beast. I can use it to exchange for your armor, that should do it, right?"

Every single Type 5 nucleus was extremely precious, and it was also difficult for Shao Hai Feng to kill one by himself. Even in the Saint Lands, they were considered a precious resource, not all Type 6 experts had an abundance of them.

If Yue Zhong had not defeated Wang Cheng in a single hit, he would not have taken out such a precious object to propose such an exchange.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze past him but still extended his hand towards Xiang Lan.

She could only take out the Enhanced Armor helplessly and returned it to Yue Zhong.

When he took it back, he opened up the energy compartment, retrieving the Type 5 nucleus behind as he shot Shao Hai Feng a condescending gaze, laughing coldly and sarcastically, "Palace Head Shao actually wants to use a Type 5 nucleus in exchange for my armor that makes use of Type 5 nuclei as energy, truly magnanimous eh?"

Shao Hai Feng saw the nucleus in Yue Zhong's hands and felt as though he was given a tight slap. His entire face turned beetroot red, as he snorted coldly, and sat back in his seat, grabbing his table tightly. The force he exerted caused the edge of the table to be reduced to dust.

Yue Zhong eyed Hong Xia, "Your Highness, I think it's perfectly fair to exchange my technology for yours. What do you think? Uros is already under the attack of those aliens, and their combat strength and reproduction ability are astonishing. Without advanced technology, our human race cannot compare to them. Let's exchange our technology, it is beneficial for both of us."

He was eyeing the technology of the Saint Lands. If he could gain them, China would improve tremendously within a short time.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia hesitated a while, her jade-like fingers

tapping her table for some time, before she finally spoke, "This is an important issue, let me consider it for a few days."

Yue Zhong frowned, "Your Highness, the aliens have already invaded, and the entire planet is under threat. If you continue to waste time considering, I'm afraid that it's not too proper."

Holy Maiden Hong Xia laughed out gently, as she clapped her hands together, "Such a big matter, you still have to let me think through it. Tell you what, I'll give you an answer tomorrow. Today, let's enjoy ourselves a little."

16 beautiful women then walked out gracefully and began to dance.

Duanmu Bing Xue and the other musicians started to play their instruments as well, as an ethereal melody sounded out once more.

"It's unlikely that they will deal, seems like I need to make some preparations of my own."

Yue Zhong glanced at the dancers, but his mind was somewhere else, making plans.

Before he had arrived, he had already prepared himself mentally. Had the other side agreed to the deal, it would be for the best. Everybody shared their technology and improved together. If they were not willing, he had a backup plan.

Chapter 1019: Stealth!

"Sir Yue Zhong, this way please!"

After the dance, Yue Zhong was escorted towards a room under the envious gazes of the other men, led by Duanmu Bing Xue.

When he stepped into that room, he saw that the furnishing was just like a 5-star hotel back on earth, extremely luxurious and well-equipped.

He swept Duanmu Bing Xue a glance and spoke in a superior tone, "You may be dismissed, I want to rest."

Duanmu Bing Xue trembled slightly, although she was a servant in status, other than Hong Xia and the other Palace Lords, no one had dared to speak to her like this.

"Yes!"

However, she recovered quickly, responding in neither a servile nor arrogant tone, and retreated out of the room.

Once she was gone, Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and the tablet containing Bai Yi appeared.

The tablet had been constructed from the nanotechnology obtained from America. It was as small as a notebook, but its capacity and computing strength had already surpassed the most powerful computer prior to the apocalypse.

With such a powerful hosting body, Bai Yi was able to exhibit even more of her abilities.

After he took it out, Yue Zhong spoke softly, "Have you already gained control of the surveillance systems here?"

Bai Yi's image then appeared on the screen, "In this room, there're 18 of these systems, they have already been completely blocked by me."

"Are you able to control the central computer of this Saint

Lands?"

Bai Yi quickly responded, "I'm unable to. I discovered that the central computer also has a simple form of A.I. I might be stronger than it, and could assimilate it in a face-off, but there are many technicians and experts around it right now. If I were to act, they could likely interfere."

Yue Zhong frowned, "So in order to control it, we need to be near its physical site then?"

Bai Yi responded, "Yes! Furthermore, if I can assimilate that simple A.I., I think I might be able to evolve a little."

Every faction that had its legacy could not be simple. Uros had already been through so many apocalypses. Since they had survived, it was likely that they had plenty of formidable areas.

With a thought, Yue Zhong caused a clone to appear.

At the same time, he put on the Stealth Armor obtained from Xue Shi, completely isolating his presence, before getting the clone to open the door.

In that split second, his true body had already flickered out.

"Sir Yue Zhong, do you have any instructions?"

On either side of the doors, there were 2 maidservants of the Type 5 strength. They blocked the clone's way, asking with polite smiles.

His true body shot them a glance, before leaving noiselessly.

Yue Zhong's clone then spoke through a device controlled by Bai Yi, allowing for his voice to sound, "You're monitoring me?"

One of them spoke gently, "Sir Yue Zhong, be appeased. We don't have that intention. It's just that the palace has many ladies, and you're a man, it's not too convenient for you to move around. We're here on Sister Duanmu to attend to your needs. Please let us know and we'll get it done for you."

His clone slammed the door shut in a cold voice, "No need!"

Seeing that, the 2 servants exchanged looks and smiled, continuing to guard outside his door as though watching over a prison inmate.

"She's over here!"

After reaching the Type 7 realm, Yue Zhong's body had undergone so many evolutions. He could easily lock onto a target within a 5-kilometer radius. It was truly almost god-like.

Other than him, with his God-Devil Body at the Second Order, no other Type 7 experts would possess a similar strength.

"Got it!"

Yue Zhong followed his senses and came to a warehouse, discovering the fairy-like Hong Xia and her trusted aide Duanmu Bing Xue embarking on one of the anti-gravity floating vehicles.

His gaze sharpened and he shot towards the vehicle noiselessly, landing on it.

"Set off!"

Following the orders of Hong Xia, the vehicle shot towards the sky, heading towards the core mountain of the Saint Lands.

After going through countless checkpoints, the vehicle came to a stop in a carpark within the mountain.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia then disembarked and brought Duanmu Bing Xue along with her towards the inner depths of the mountain.

Yue Zhong maintained a distance of about 5 steps behind them, just like a ghost. At this distance, if he were to burst forth with his strength, it could definitely take out a Type 7 expert. This was the true terror of the Stealth Armor.

All of a sudden, Duanmu Bing Xue came to a stop, and turned around abruptly, her eyes focused in the direction of Yue Zhong's position.

Seeing that, Yue Zhong was taken aback, and his body went taut, preparing for battle.

Hong Xia turned around and asked, "What is it, Bing Xue?"

In response, Duanmu Bing Xue frowned slightly, and said with some doubt, "It felt like there's somebody following us, but it must be my imagination."

Holy Maiden Hong Xia turned around, and laughed confidently, "You must have imagined it. In this world, those who could move around undetected by me are almost non-existent. Even if the Saint Lord were to attack me, he would not get to a distance of 30 steps without me knowing."

Duanmu Bing Xue relaxed lightly as she grinned, and her steps became lighter, "I must be overthinking things."

Yue Zhong continued on like a specter.

This Saint Peak was the core of the Saint Lands, and its defenses were tight. There were numerous Type 5 guards stationed everywhere. Some places were even guarded by Type 6 experts. It was really marching into the lion's den. If Yue Zhong did not have the Stealth Armor, he would have to slaughter his way in.

Hong Xia's charm was incredible, along the way, almost all the guards and experts were staring at her with their passion and lust apparent.

Since their attention was on her, no one discovered Yue Zhong following behind her.

The party continued forward, finally coming into a palace within the Saint Peak.

The Saint Lord was seated on the crystal throne, waiting.

Below him, there were the 2 Holy Sons and 1 Holy Maiden.

Holy Maiden Hong Xia came to her seat, and asked the Saint Lord, "Your Majesty, what do you think about Yue Zhong's

suggestion?"

The Saint Lord was exuding a terrifying aura as he snorted coldly, his killing intent spreading out, "Hmph! Yue Zhong dares to set his sight on our capital, he deserves death!"

"Strong!! This damned old man should be at the Type 7 realm."

Yue Zhong stood behind Hong Xia and could feel the might of that aura. His heart ran cold, at the same time, he was also filled with a killing intent. Since the Saint Lord dared to kill him, there were no more burdens in his heart. As long as there was a chance, he would deal them a vicious blow.

The Ghost Dragon Saint Child, or Holy Son Gui Long, frowned slightly, "Yue Zhong was able to defeat Wang Cheng in a single move, his strength is not be underestimated. He could likely be a Type 7 expert."

The Saint Lord laughed coldly, "The Oracle truly is not simple. He should be a Type 7 expert, yes. However, based on Zhang Xuan's report, he should have only just recently ascended. Once night falls, I'll join you guys to go crush this bastard that dares belittle our Saint Lands. No matter how strong he is, if the 5 of us join hands, as long as he's not a Type 8 expert, we can definitely crush him. At that time, all of his things will be ours."

The voices of the 4 Saint Children rang out in unison and respect, "Your Majesty is wise!"

Hearing that, Yue Zhong's back broke out in cold sweat, "How vicious and decisive!! If I had not snuck over here, I would have fallen at their hands!"

After Yue Zhong reached the Type 7 realm, his strength had really undergone huge changes. If any Type 7 expert were to engage him, even if he could not defeat them, he could escape. However, under the circumstances of being caught unprepared, the sudden sneak attack of 5 Type 7 experts would be able to take

him out.

The eyes of the Saint Lord flashed with greed, his heart bursting with anticipation, "After we suppress this Type 7 Oracle, I will take his God-Devil Nucleus and God and Devil Imprint to push through the Type 7 bottleneck. Once I reach the ancient Type 8 realm, I'll be invincible, and live up to a 1,000 years!!"

Evolution was a difficult process, even the Saint Lord, who had been a genius at cultivation, reaching the Type 7 realm after a 100 years, was still stuck after 200 years. He could feel his age catching up slowly every day. If he did not breakthrough soon, he had another 50 years left at most. He feared death greatly, thus, seeing Yue Zhong's appearance, he was filled with greed. He truly wanted everything about Yue Zhong's, just so he could evolve and live longer.

Chapter 1020: Great Harvest!

As night fell, about 200 kilometers away from the Saint Lands, within a dense forest, a number of bladed-aliens crawled out of a large mountain cave in droves.

Once they exited, they quickly hid among the great trees and behind the huge boulders.

A terrifying number came out, all hidden within the dark of the night.

Compared to the figure that had assaulted the 18 cities in the daytime, the current number was incomparable.

After some low howls, one winged-alien shot towards the sky. It was only 50-cm long, with an incredibly tough green exoskeleton, sharp claws, and a 20cm-long beak.

When that first one flew off, an entire cloud of similar aliens shot out of the cave.

As they flew off, another form of winged-alien that looked more like a wild chicken followed out. They were then followed by other forms of bird-typed aliens, soaring into the skies.

In the end, the entire procession was rounded up by a 20m-long strange dragon-like alien, its entire body covered in a gold exoskeleton. The exoskeleton was filled with spikes, and there was a single horn on the ferocious visage of the beast.

This dragon-alien was a peak-Type 7 existence, possessing terrifying combat power. Some weaker Type 8 experts might not be its match as well. This was the leader of the aliens, also known as the Alien King.

The dragon-like Alien King shot a cold, ferocious look towards the Saint Lands. The aliens were different from zombies, possessing high intelligence and adaptability in situations. Furthermore, they were made for killing, and this made them

tougher to deal with compared to the zombies.

Its eyes flashed coldly, as its wings flapped and raised a hurricane around it. It then shot towards the skies.

In the palace of the Saint Lands, the Saint Lord swept the crystal display a glance, and ordered out sternly, "Adjust the image of Co876."

With that order, the crystal display blurred slightly, and Yue Zhong's room appeared.

Currently, his clone was sleeping soundly.

The Saint Lord saw that and the corners of his mouth curled up, his eyes flashing cruelly, "It is the time where he's most tired now, let's go."

"Yes!"

The 4 Saint Children stood up, heading out of the palace.

Yue Zhong watched them leave, his eyes also flashing with a cold glint, "Since you guys want to kill me, don't blame me for being ruthless."

Yue Zhong stood there quietly, waiting for 2 minutes before the watch on his right hand lit up, and Bai Yi's voice, "They have already left the Saint peak, heading towards Red Dawn Holy Palace."

Yue Zhong ordered, "Immediately open up this place!"

The central computer here was located at the deepest recess, and the entrance was directly under the crystal throne.

With the Saint Lord standing guard here, no one had ever dared to enter the place, nor was there any enemy that could have made it so far.

"Yes!"

Bai Yi responded, her eyes flashing with numbers, and the crystal

throne suddenly shifted, revealing a deep tunnel.

Yue Zhong shot forward, arriving at the entrance in a single step.

"This is an infrared-sensing tunnel!"

When he entered, he saw that there were countless infrared sensors everywhere along the tunnel. If an ordinary person were to enter, they would have been swept by the scanners and reported.

However, the sensors had no response now, allowing Yue Zhong to pass through easily.

Inside the tunnel, all the sensors, surveillance cameras, and automatic defenses could cause any ordinary person to be entrapped and engulfed by all sorts of traps.

Under Bai Yi's guidance, he continued to traverse through, passing by countless huge tunnels, before finally coming in front of a huge metal alloy door.

In front of it, there was an old man seated on the ground, his eyes shut, and his hair white, as though he was just one breath away from death.

Yue Zhong could sense the power radiating from the man, and his heart turned cold, "Strong, this old man should be some peak-Type 6 expert."

After sweeping the old man an eye, his gaze landed on the alloy door, his eyes flashed with a look of greed.

Behind this old man, it was the treasury of the Saint Lands, where the heritage of the countless ages was kept.

Yue Zhong breathed in lightly, hiding his killing intent, and entered the mindless state. He then edged closer towards the position of the old man, his muscles taut.

With his current Type 7 Divine Warrior realm, and his Second Order God-Devil Body, it was no problem to deal with a Type 6 expert. However, if the commotion from the fight became too big,

and alerted the guards, then it would be even more difficult to gain control of the central computer.

When Yue Zhong was about 10 steps away, his eyes flashed coldly, and he channeled his Dou Qi. His speech reached its maximum, as his fist shot towards the old man viciously.

The old man was a Type 6 expert after all. The moment Yue Zhong's killing intent burst forth, he could already sense it. He opened his eyes but unfortunately, he discovered Yue Zhong's fist already blasting towards his head.

Peng!

Following a clear crack, the old man's head was shattered by Yue Zhong, his blood turning into ash under Yue Zhong's Dou Qi.

After killing the old elder in a second, Yue Zhong then came up to the door and saw that it required a key. He laughed coldly, placing his hands on the door. The light-gold God-Devil Flame began to burn, as the door began to melt.

He walked in with big strides, only to catch sight of countless treasures placed atop numerous crystal shelves.

He took a look, and was immediately excited, "Dragon Blood, 10,000-year Tree Core, the brains of Type 7 Mutant Beasts, Heaven Spring Water, Life Water, 10,000-year Dragon Blood Fruit, Ice-cold Frozen Fruit, all of these are amazing items!"

After coming to this world, Bai Yi might be unable to get the control of the central computer, however, it was definitely able to do so for any other computer.

Since she had already infiltrated most of the computers around the Saint Lands when they came here, she had absorbed countless information, thus, she knew everything on the shelves.

Yue Zhong eyed all the precious valuables, his heart overjoyed. He quickly proceeded to keep them in his ring, while, ascertaining the effects, "This Dragon Blood was obtained and refined from

killing a dragon-like beast of the Type 7 realm, and it can help a Type 4 expert into the Type 5 realm. The Life Water could transform a person's cultivation talent, pushing his speed of training up by numerous times. The Ice-cold Frozen Fruit could awaken ice-related abilities. The Heaven Spring Water can boost the growth of precious plants. The 10,000-year Tree Core might not be effective to a peak-Type 7 expert, but to me, it will help boost my strength a little. I've struck it rich this time... I'm really rich!!"

"Ah! This is!! A Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus!! This is great!! There's a Type 7 nucleus here."

Yue Zhong had been collecting everything he could and discovered over a 1,500 Type 5 nuclei, 60 Type 6 nuclei, and even 3 Type 7 nuclei.

Seeing the number of high-level Mutant Beast nuclei, Yue Zhong was elated. The total number of nuclei was the heritage of a few thousand years.

These thousands of years, the numerous controllers of Uros had only managed to collect 3 Type 7 nuclei. The rarity of such nuclei was apparent.

Of course, it was also likely that there were not only 3 at first, but most of them could have already been expended in the past few apocalypses. Otherwise, the treasury could not possibly possess so little Type 7 nuclei.

After sweeping the entire treasury clean, Yue Zhong quickly dashed out, heading towards the position of the central computer. Meanwhile, he thought to himself, "With such resources, it is possible to produce a new batch of Type 5 experts, or even 1 or 2 more Type 6 experts."

The experts of the Saint Lands were numerous, and because of their resources, since Yue Zhong had obtained them, it would definitely be possible to groom a number of experts.

It was especially so since many of the warriors within the Central Army had experience killing zombies, and their combat skills were decent. Once they obtained enough resources to push their evolution, they could truly become powerful experts.

Chapter 1021: The Saint Lord Spits Blood!

Outside Yue Zhong's room within the Red Dawn Holy Palace, the Saint Lord and the 4 Saint Children stood quietly.

The Saint Lord swept Hong Xia a glance, who smiled lightly and pressed on the door.

The door immediately slid into the ground noiselessly.

At that same instant, the Saint Lord burst forth with his Type 7 strength, his eyes flashing coldly. His hands were stretched out like claws, grabbing the sleeping 'Yue Zhong'.

The 4 Saint Children also rushed forward to occupy the various points of the room in a flash.

"Got it!!" The Saint Lord chuckled, as though he had already seen the image of him breaking through to the Type 8 realm, becoming invincible. His dreams of living to a thousand years were within reach. He slapped out at 'Yue Zhong's head and a powerful violet energy blasted out.

However, at the next moment, his face flashed with shock, as the clone on the bed dissipated.

Seeing that, it was as though all his dreams and hopes disappeared, replaced by a sense of despair. His anger burst forth, causing his handsome face to contort, and he roared out like a wild beast, "Fake!! How can this be?!?! Where's the real one?!? Where's the real Yue Zhong?!"

A peak-Type 7 expert was already considered a true powerful existence towards the path of gods.

In his fury, even without any movements, his aura thrashed out, causing the bed in front of him to be chopped up in multiple pieces.

The faces of the 4 Saint Children also fell, their bodies trembling.

They knew that while the Saint Lord was usually cordial with them if he was truly enraged, he could end their lives. It was not the first time that he had killed a Saint Child.

The Saint Lord raised his head, his eyes flaring with flames of fury, locking onto Hong Xia. His quiet voice was thick with killing intent, "Hong Xia!!! Where is he?!!"

Having his dreams and hopes disappearing like that had caused the Saint Lord to become like a ferocious beast. His aura was now filled with rage and killing intent.

Hong Xia was pale, as she tried to placate him, "Your Majesty, since he's here to obtain our technology, he shouldn't have gone far. Our defenses are tight and powerful. It would definitely be tough for him to move about himself. He should still be around here somewhere. We just have to be on the lookout, and we should be able to capture him."

The Saint Lord stared at her deeply, ordering slowly, "Convey my orders, the Saint Lands is under lockdown now, Level 1 Status, and our target is Yue Zhong."

Hearing that, the faces of the 4 Saint Children turned worse.

The states of emergency within the Saint Lands were separated by 9 levels, with the 1st being the highest. The Level 1 Status refers to only when it was truly a life-and-death situation for the Saint Lands. Once activated, even those cultivating old freaks would come out and fight for their home.

Although it felt improper, the 4 Saint Children did not dare say anything to refute.

Regardless of how mighty a person was, once old age caught up, there will be lapses in judgment. Qin Shi Huang, Wu Ze Tian and even Li Long Ji, there were all wise and powerful leaders when they were young. However, as they grew older, they became muddled. The Saint Lord might be a demon-level existence, but he

was old after all. In order to live on, what more it was an additional thousand years, he could not care any less.

At this time, one of the beautiful Red Dawn guards came running in, "Palace Head!! Something's wrong!! Something's happened!!"

The Saint Lord's eyes turned frosty, as he reached out and grabbed the guard, barking, "What happened?! Speak!!"

The Red Dawn Guard saw that the Saint Lord was a little crazed and she was shocked, as she quickly explained, "Your Majesty, it is those aliens. They're here, and their numbers are more than 10 times than the daytime. All 18 cities have sent signals for help. 2 of them have already lost all their resistance, while the rest are barely holding out."

The Saint Lord grabbed the clothes of the Red Dawn Guard, his voice turning chilly as he barked out with killing intent, "Impossible!! In order to defend against those aliens, I've already sent out 2,000 Saint Soldiers to every single city. There are even 6 other Palaces in charge of defending, how could they be taken out so fast?! Are you lying to me?!"

One other elite guard who had come right behind knelt in front and quickly spoke in a loud voice, "Your Majesty!! Yu He is speaking the truth!! The aliens are too many to count, and their assault this time is much more ferocious!! Please come and take command!!"

The Saint Lord swept his gaze across them and finally calmed down. He released the Red Dawn Guard and spoke out, "Wen Yuan, it's you. Seems like this is true. Shit!! Those beasts deserve death!! I will definitely kill all of them!! That's the only way I could be appeased!!"

"Let's go!!"

After that, the Saint Lord headed back towards the Saint Peak. It was where the command center was, and the central computer

could be controlled from there.

Soon, he came into the palace.

"This is...? Shit!! He went down!!"

The Saint Lord saw the crystal throne that was shifted, and his scalp turned numb, and a sense of crisis welled up in his mind.

Deep within the basement, in front of the central computer, there were many technicians lying in pools of their own blood.

Yue Zhong was in front of the central computer, his handheld tablet connected to the central computer. All of a sudden, there was a notification from his wrist, as Bai Yi spoke, "The target has appeared."

Yue Zhong laughed, "He's here? Good. Show me the images."

"Yes!"

All of a sudden, the crystal images in the palace showed Yue Zhong's image.

"Hello there, Saint Lord. Pleased to meet you. I'm Yue Zhong, and I'm very thankful for your generosity, your gifts of heritage are truly appreciated." Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and the image flashed to the treasury.

When the Saint Lord saw the now-empty treasury that was once filled with the collection of resources over centuries of hard work, he was overcome with shock and anger, that he spat out a mouthful of blood. He had been the one intending to steal everything from Yue Zhong, but the opposite had happened instead.

The killing intent within his eyes disappeared, as he spoke slowly, "Yue Zhong, I know you can hear me. Return the things immediately, and I'm willing to exchange technologies with you. I know you represent a faction from another world. As long as you return the items, our Saint Lands can be your ally."

Yue Zhong waved the handheld tablet in his hand as he chuckled, "My apologies, I'm no longer interested in your proposition. Can you see this? My computer had already obtained all the information and secret of your Saint Lands. Even the top 10 martial techniques. Once again, I thank you for your gifts. I've truly gained big this time. Oh yes, this time, I have to thank Hong Xia. Hong Xia, thank you, if you had not given me so many secrets, I would not have made it in so easily. You had better run, the Saint Lord will definitely not pardon you. Let's meet at the agreed place!"

After that, his image disappeared from the crystal screens.

Hearing his words, the Saint Lord was so infuriated and agitated that his eyes turned bloodshot, as he swiveled around to stare at Holy Maiden Hong Xia, his body emitting a terrifying aura.

Hong Xia turned extremely white, as she stammered, "It wasn't me!! I'm not his partner!! If I had been, how would he expose me in front of you?! It was the first time meeting him today!! Your Majesty!! Please believe me!!"

Holy Son Gui Long fell silent, before speaking up, "Your Majesty, it should not be Hong Xia. He must have spoken nonsense to drive a wedge between us, causing us to kill among ourselves. That would be the time he used to escape. The matter at hand is important, we need to capture him first, and prevent him from leaving."

The Saint Lord fell silent as well, before nodding slightly, and swept a glance at the tunnel, "I need to command the battle. The 4 of you, go chase after Yue Zhong. It doesn't matter if you bring him to me dead or alive."

"Yes!"

The 4 Saint Children responded respectfully and charged towards the tunnel.

"Damn brat Yue Zhong, when I catch you, I will tear you apart!!"

Once the 4 Saint Children left, he let out an enraged howl and slammed down with his feet. The crystal ground that could withstand even a missile blast started to crack. It was apparent that the force of the enraged Saint Lord was truly even more terrifying than a missile back on Earth.

Just as he vented his frustrations, all of a sudden, the Saint Peak started to rumble. A few of the mountains opened up, as the most powerful trump card - Saint Lands Protector Battleships soared into the skies.

A total of 12 of them flew up into the skies.

"NO!!!!!"

Seeing that, the Saint Lord let out a roar of despair, he could no longer care about commanding the battle, as he channeled the atmospheric energy to chase after the Saint Lands Protector Battleships.

The 12 Protector Battleships were the final weapons created over thousands of years. Every one of them required 2 Type 7 nuclei to work, and over dozens of Type 6 nuclei.

In terms of assault power, a single one of them was many times more powerful than the Storm Battleship obtained from the 3rd World.

Yue Zhong had gotten it as a form of transport from the floating city previously, thus its firepower was naturally incomparable to these Protector Battleships.

In front of these 12 Protector Battleships, even the Sky Fortress built by China was merely a toy.

After they flew off, countless drones and fighter jets flew out from the Saint Lands, forming a huge fleet that joined the 12 Protector Battleships, flying off into the distance.

From one of the Protector Battleships, a holographic image was shot out, revealing Yue Zhong's image that laughed, "Your Majesty,

thank you for your gifts, you don't have to be so kind as to send me off. Please head back!"

Seeing that, the Saint Lord was further agitated, coughing out another mouthful of blood. He gritted his teeth and yelled, "Yue Zhong, I'm going to kill you!!"

Yue Zhong had made use of Bai Yi to steal all the airships, crippling the Saint Land's might by half. This was a huge blow to the Saint Lord.

"Enough!!" Zi Long!! Your task is to command the Saint Lands and defend against those aliens!! We will avenge today's matters in the future!!"

Just as the Saint Lord was about to throw all hesitation in his mind to give chase, 8 old men shot out from the Saint Lands, and one of them barked out.

The Saint Lord swept them a gaze, and suppressed the fury in his heart, "I got it! Greater Elder!"

These 8 old men were the Greater Elders of the Saint Lands, each of them possessing a mid-Type 7 realm strength. The 2 leaders were at the peak of the Type 7 realm, their combat strength surpassing the Saint Lord's.

The Saint Lord shot one last glance towards Yue Zhong's direction, before turning around to head back, "Yue Zhong, today's matters, I will not forget it!! I will definitely tear you apart!!"

Currently, all around the Saint Lands, the countless aliens were pouring into the cities, taking to the darkness like fish in water. They slaughter the humans that they saw, consuming them. Many of the armies were defeated in their relentless assault.

Even if the Saint Lands had sent out Type 6 experts, there was no way of resisting the assault of the aliens.

After all, within those of the same rank, the aliens were terrifying existences. Furthermore, this time, the numbers of the

experts defending could not compare to the aliens, the result would be worse than the daytime.

As the alien swarm continued to pour into the cities, all of a sudden, a huge light beam covered with mysterious runes extended from the 18 cities.

Chapter 1022: The Powerful Saint Lands Protector Battleships!

The mysterious light beams shot towards the skies, turning into a bright, radiant ball of light in the skies.

The bright ball immediately illuminated all 18 cities, causing everything to be glaringly white.

Beyond the stratosphere, a number of satellites adjusted their aim and fired down beams of light at the aliens on Uros.

With the cannons firing such high-intensity light beams, many aliens were instantly fried upon contact.

Satellite Orbital Cannons, this was one of the many weapons researched by the Saint Lands. Outside of the atmosphere, there were numerous satellites floating around the planet. When 10,000 of them were engaged, it was a truly spectacular sight, and the strength of the attack caused many aliens to be wiped out.

Yue Zhong saw the rain of light beams and felt even his eyes stinging, "Satellite Orbital Cannons! What a powerful weapon. If I had a few thousands of them on Earth, how great would that be?"

Just as Yue Zhong was watching the scene while inside the Protector Battleship, he felt the familiar warmth on his wrist, as Bai Yi's voice sounded out, "Master, the Saint Lord is intending to use the Satellite Orbital Cannons to attack us. I've already blocked that order. Please advise on the next step."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chilly light, "What a bastard. I haven't gone looking for him for trouble, he still wants to add on more. Bai Yi, adjust $\frac{1}{3}$ of the cannons to aim at his location."

Bai Yi's eyes flashed with doubt, "Master, why not control all to blast the Saint Lands to smithereens? If we joined hands with the aliens, it's possible to wipe out the Saint Lands."

As a Super A.I., Bai Yi was already beginning to ponder like a human.

By now, all the automatic weapons in the Saint Lands have already been controlled by Bai Yi. As long as Yue Zhong willed it, all the automatic defenses would open fire. Coupled with the intense assault of the alien, the Saint Lands would fall.

Yue Zhong looked at the 18 cities below, and sighed lightly, "While there's no problem with destroying this decaying Saint Lands, the humans in these 18 cities are innocent. If we were to wipe out the Saint Lands, these humans would become food for the aliens. They have no grudge with me, nor do I have any reason to wipe them out, it's better to live them a way out. As long as they learned their lesson, after all, we're all humans."

Yue Zhong had not intended to take the core weaponry of the Saint Lands, he was in fact, trying to exchange technology and information. Both sides would have benefited. Unfortunately, the Saint Lord had prioritized his own breakthrough and wanted to kill him. Yue Zhong would naturally not be courteous any longer. However, deep in his heart, he did not wish for the 18 cities to fall anyway.

"Yes!"

Bai Yi responded, and immediately adjusted the Satellite Orbital Cannons according to Yue Zhong's instructions.

The cannons then changed their trajectory, causing a light beam to tear into the Saint Peak of the Saint Lands.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As though it was a punishment from the heavens, the light beams slammed into the Saint Peak, causing the majority of the structures to be destroyed.

However, the crystal palace's defense was incredible. Even as the light beams shot down, they only caused part of the crystal to be

chipped off, but it was not enough to destroy it fully.

Even so, the impact caused the palace to shake violently, as though on the verge of collapsing.

Under the violent shaking, the majority of the human experts quickly escaped from the crystal palace, afraid that the structure would collapse on them.

The Saint Lord's expression was steely, as he spat out another mouthful of blood from his anger. His eyes were bulging right now, causing him to look like a madman.

With blood trickling from his mouth, he let out another enraged howl like a demon, "Yue Zhong!!! I will not forgive you!!!"

Yue Zhong did not want to eliminate the entire Saint lands, thus, after a bout of light beams blasted the Saint lands, everything readjusted and went for the aliens.

When the Saint Lord saw this, he felt like his heart was bleeding as well. He knew that this huge trump card, the Satellite Orbital Cannons, was already under Yue Zhong's control.

Those cannons were truly formidable, covering the entire Uros, and it represented the control the Saint Lands had over Uros.

In the thousands of years, that had been rebellions, but each time any resistance forces appeared, the Satellite Orbital Cannons would fire out the light beams to wipe out these rebels.

It was because of this that there had not been any faction capable of overthrowing the Saint Lands.

Thus, everyone in the Saint Lands had grown accustomed to being high and mighty, looking down on every other person on Uros. Many of them even thought of themselves as gods, compared to the ordinary people, who were like ants to them. Thus, Yue Zhong was considered a bumpkin and mortal to them as well.

However, the 2 trump cards of the Saint Lands were stolen by

this bumpkin from right under their noses, causing the Saint Lord to be enraged until he puked blood many times.

He gritted his teeth, his fists clenched tightly as he thought to himself, "I will not let you off!! Yue Zhong, one fine day, you will die at my hands!!"

As for Yue Zhong himself, he got Bai Yi to fire down at the aliens below, while he led the 12 Protector Battleships towards the Gate of Hell where Yin Shuang was defending. This time, he had earned quite the haul, not only were there 12 Protectors, he had obtained all the technology and cultivation manuals. With enough time, he could develop a whole new batch of experts.

Yue Zhong continued for a few kilometers when suddenly, a dense cloud of flying aliens appeared in the skies and charged right towards him.

"Warning! Warning!! There is a large number of flying aliens heading over, please make preparations for combat!"

Following her notification, the images displayed the flying aliens coming over.

These aliens were already natural killing machines, each and every type of them being extremely terrifying. If a Type 3 human warrior were to come across any of them, it would be game over.

Now that there were even flying types, so numerous that they covered the skies, there were at least over a few hundred thousands of them. Such a number was definitely enough to wipe out a country.

Yue Zhong's heart sunk, "There are aerial types?! This alien species is too terrifying!! If they multiply to a certain extent, there would be no one capable of defeating them."

Initially, there had not been any aerial types in the morning, and it was a huge weakness of theirs. However, now that they have compensated for it, without any advanced weaponry, there was

only death for the humans.

Yue Zhong looked at them and gave 2 simple orders, "Open all firing weapons, and wipe out these flying aliens!!"

Upon receiving that order, the 12 Protector Battleships immediately extended out with countless cannons. At the next moment, a flurry of light and particle beams fired upon the flying aliens mercilessly.

All 12 Battleships were under the control of Bai Yi, and their aim was accurate and true. All it took was at most 2 shots for an alien to be blasted down.

In the skies, the corrosive blood splattered out like nobody's business, raining down upon the ground.

Within 10 minutes, the once-dense cloud of flying aliens was blasted apart by the 12 Protector Battleships, leaving a clear sky.

Yue Zhong swept a glance through the surroundings, and could not help but praise in his heart, "Powerful!! A Super A.I. coupled with such advanced weaponry is truly incredibly savage!!"

The fact that they could wipe out these many flying aliens in this battle, was because of Bai Yi's calculations as well as the terrifying firepower of the Protector Battleships.

If it had not been for Bai Yi's control, the 12 Protector Battleships might be able to wipe out the aliens in the end, but it would likely at the cost of more energy expenditure.

When the Type 7 Alien King saw his subordinates being killed by Yue Zhong, its eyes flashed with a ferocious glint. It flapped its wings, raising its speed to Mach-10, shooting towards one of the Battleships with a meteor-like speed.

At that instant, the Type 7 Alien King flickered across a few thousand meters, arriving above the Battleship.

Just as it was about to slam into the Battleship, the entire

helicarrier lit up, as an energy shield appeared and blocked the impact.

This was Bai Yi's retaliation the moment she sensed the arrival of the Type 7 Alien King.

Hong!!

The powerful Type 7 Alien King slammed into the energy shield, with its own body surrounded by the black energy, and caused a terrifying collision. The energy shield rippled violently, threatening to break apart.

Under the impact, even the Battleship shuddered.

Chapter 1023: Defeating the Alien King!

"Warning! Warning! No. 7 Protector Battleship had suffered a 10% damage to its shield. Based on estimations, the enemy is 80% likely to be a peak-Type 7 or Type 8 alien."

Yue Zhong's eye flashed with a hint of shock, "What?! A 10% damage in just one hit?! Doesn't that mean that the Battleship will fail after just 10 attacks?! That alien is that strong?!"

Since every Battleship required at least 2 Type 7 Mutant Beast nuclei, their defenses were quite astonishing. Even a Type 7 expert might not necessarily be able to tear apart this shield so easily.

And yet, a single strike from the Alien King was enough to whittle 10% away of the shield. Its might was truly frightening.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The Alien King continued to flicker in the air, slamming into the shield continuously. Although each hit was not as strong as the 1st one that took off 10% of the energy, they were still enough to wear down between 4 to 6% each time.

Under the constant barrage, No. 7 Protector Battleship continued to shudder.

The remaining Battleships opened fire, under Bai Yi's control, blasting mercilessly at the Type 7 Alien King.

Its speed was truly terrifying, managing to dodge just barely even with Bai Yi's control over the particle cannons. Only a few beams were able to strike its body.

When those beams slammed into it, they were directly consumed by the black energy surrounding the alien, not even scratching it.

On board each and every Protector Battleship, there was the main cannon. When deployed at full might, a single beam could kill a Type 7 Divine Warrior. However, due to the close proximity

of the ships, they were unable to utilize it. Against this Alien King, it was like using a cannon against a mosquito. It was likely that they will miss.

Even with Bai Yi's control, it was not a 100% guarantee, that they could use the Protector Battleships to take out the Alien King in one hit.

Yue Zhong suddenly gained clarity, "No! I need to act! At the very least, I have to force it away, otherwise, all 12 Battleships will fall at its hands!"

He frowned, "But, I've just reached the Type 7 realm, while the Alien King is at the peak. It's going to be damn difficult!!"

After Yue Zhong reached the Type 7 realm, coupled with his Second Order God-Devil Body, he had the confidence of defeating most peak-Type 7 human experts.

However, the Alien King was a different case altogether. It could slaughter a peak-Type 7 human expert in barely a second. No matter how strong Yue Zhong was, he had no confidence he could survive from a clash with it.

"That's right! I still have this!!" Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, as he whisked out 10 jade-like 10,000-year-old Tree Cores the size of 2 fingers. He then gobbled them all up.

The moment he consumed them, they transformed into a cooling nourishment that traveled through his body. The light-golden blood in his body absorbed the contents, and the golden-hue intensified.

After absorbing the cool energy, it began to course through his body, and the huge life force within him started to mix with it, transforming into a new energy. His strength began to rise by another 30%, breaking through to the mid-Type 7 realm.

Yue Zhong sensed the changes and frowned slightly, "Still not enough!"

The Alien King could fly in the sky and had terrifying combat strength, even if Yue Zhong grew by a small stage, it was still far from enough.

"I still have this Treasure of Hope."

His eyes brightened, and pulled out the Stealth Armor, causing all signs and presence to disappear.

After being completely hidden, Yue Zhong flew out from the No. 1 Protector Battleship, sneaking his way over towards the No. 7 Battleship.

Currently, the energy shield of the Battleship was flickering, already on the verge of dissipating.

While the attacks of the Alien King was able to wear down on the energy shield, the shield itself could continually repair. As long as the Alien King could not totally destroy it, it would continue to recover.

However, there was still a limit to it. Right now, the damage of the Alien King far outstripped the rate of recovery. Given enough time, the energy shield would soon crumble.

Yue Zhong flew over to the middle of the ship, before stopping all motion and giving an order, "Bai Yi, force it over here!!"

"Yes!"

Receiving his order, Bai Yi adjusted the aim of cannons. At that instant, countless laser beams fired at the Alien King.

At the same time, numerous Satellites Orbital Cannons adjusted their aims, firing down upon the Alien King.

Under Bai Yi's control, the countless laser and light beams formed a firenet that had no gap, firing at the Alien King's position.

The innate combat potential of the Alien King was terrifying, it sensed the weakest link of the fire net and charged right through.

Of that countless beams, only 40 plus beams struck it but were easily blocked by the black energy surrounding it.

At the moment it thought it had bested the fire net, the hidden Yue Zhong exploded out with all his strength, the God-Devil Flame shrouding his hands as he punched at the body of the Alien King.

The Alien King had not expected a person to be there, and by the time it felt the intense killing intent, it was too late. Yue Zhong's fists enveloped with the God-Devil Flame blasted into its protecting energy.

Hong!

Following a terrifying energy shockwave, Yue Zhong's fists slammed into the energy around the Alien King, burning through it like a hot knife through butter, and struck the body of the Alien King viciously.

Dang!!

Yue Zhong already had the Second Order God-Devil Body, his fists could destroy an entire building, and a single slap could flatten a tank. If he threw a punch with all his might, he could even obliterate an entire mountain.

However, when that strike of his slammed into the Alien King, all it did was cause a loud bang as though he had just struck metal. The exoskeleton of the Alien King was crushed in about 20cm, but that was the limit. It could be seen how overpowered the defense of the Alien King was.

Even so, Yue Zhong channeled his God-Devil Flames to start burning the exoskeleton, as it melted and released a strong stench of rotting.

The God-Devil Flames could burn through anything, even the exoskeleton of the Type 7 Alien King could not withstand.

The Type 7 Alien King felt a wave of pain and swung its huge tail against Yue Zhong's position viciously.

Although it could not see him, it could sense the rough position based on the killing intent Yue Zhong released earlier.

All of a sudden, 16 bloody radiances congealed around Yue Zhong.

As the tail of the Alien King slammed into the bloody radiance, it almost collapsed, but it had managed to block the strike.

"Die!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with an icy light, as he channeled his God-Devil Flames, causing it to envelop the entire frame of the Alien King. At the same time, he channeled the Seventh Order Gravity Manipulation, causing it to sink.

While the Alien King was being bombarded by Yue Zhong's ruthless assault, Bai Yi continued to control the weapons to fire light and laser beams at its position, thoroughly enveloping it.

The display of flames and fire and light beams caused a spectacular and dazzling display of fireworks.

All of a sudden, a number of black lights glowed out brightly among the explosions, forcing the God-Devil Flames away.

At the center of the black radiance, the heavily injured Alien King appeared, its abdomen charred black, its exoskeleton dented in many areas, as well as huge amount of corrosive blood flowing.

The moment it appeared, it flapped its wings, turning into a meteor as it tried to flee. It was extremely intelligent and knew that it was currently outnumbered. Since it had suffered so many grievous injuries, if it chose to fight on, it would likely perish.

Its maximum speed was Mach-10, but with its current injuries, it could only reach Mach-8, in a few breaths, it had disappeared entirely.

Yue Zhong watched it disappear and frowned, "What a terrifying enemy. Crafty and slippery!"

If the Alien King continued to fight on, Yue Zhong had a 70% confidence in killing it. However, it fled, and Yue Zhong knew that he could not do anything about it. Even if he utilized all his trump cards, it would only be sufficient to injure it further, but not killing it. This was how terrifying it was. The next time he came across it, it was bound to be even stronger and tougher to deal with.

Yue Zhong cast another deep look at the direction where the Alien King fled, and returned back to the No.1 Protector Battleship.

Chapter 1024: Request for Aid!

In the wilderness near South Origin City, over hundreds of cultivators were fleeing madly, chased by 6 aliens.

One bladed-alien flashed and appeared behind a Type 3 martial cultivators, as slashed out with its limbs, directly slicing the human in two.

A Type 4 expert roared out his technique, Seven-Star Steps, and appeared in front of the bladed alien with his profound movement techniques, directly sending a Seven-Breaking Fist into the head of the alien, "Die, you beast!"

Within the South Origin City, the Seven-Breaking Fist was also a top fist technique, when trained to the utmost peak, one would be able to crush a tank with a single punch.

Dang!

When the Type 4 expert punched the head of the alien, it caused a loud sound as though he had struck metal, while the exoskeleton barely dented inward.

Following that, the bladed alien slashed out at the martial artist.

A gust of wind blew past, and the Type 4 martial artist was also sliced in two, fresh blood pouring all over the ground.

Seeing the human expert killed, Pi Zhi Wen, who had been at the side, roared out in rage and sorrow, as though his eyes were about to bleed, "Zhi Feng!!!"

That Type 4 human cultivator was called Luo Zhi Feng and was the favorite disciple of Pi Zhi Wen, and a genius who had a high chance of breaking through to the Type 5 realm. Now, he had been killed, leaving Pi Zhi Wen full of pain and anguish.

However, he could not allow it to affect his mental state, as he quickly joined hands with the other Type 5 expert nearby, Clear

Wind Martial School's Bai He Lian, as well as 10 other peak-Type 4 experts to take on a Type 5 alien.

There were only 6 aliens chasing after these hundreds of cultivators, 1 of them Type 5, the rest Type 4.

Even though there were only 6, their speed was incredible, and due to their joint efforts, none of them had suffered at the hands of the humans. Instead, they hunted, and from time to time, they would launch a sudden assault to take down as many human experts as they could, before moving on.

Dang!

One human expert wielding an alloy blade slashed out with all his might, just to block the claws of the Type 5 alien. The claws were sharp and instantly left 4 deep marks on the blade of that expert.

Furthermore, the force behind the attack was not light, causing the Type 4 expert to stumble back a few steps.

All of a sudden, there was a flash of black, slamming into the head of the Type 4 expert, causing his brain to burst apart.

A human-shaped alien retracted its tongue from a 100m away, before flickering and disappearing.

With the death of the Type 4 expert, there was a breach in the encirclement, which the Type 5 Alien made use of to send a claw flying out at the other Type 4 experts.

In an instant, of the 9 peak-Type 4 experts, 6 of them lost their heads in a shower of blood.

After killing 6 experts in a second, the Type 5 Alien had a ferocious glint in its eyes, as it appeared mysteriously in front of Pi Zhi Wen, slashing out at his head.

Pi Zhi Wen was at the peak-Type 5 realm, and he made use of a top blade technique to make a name for himself. It was how he managed to barely resist the Type 5 alien with Bai He Lian and the

rest.

If it had been any other ordinary expert, even if there were 4 Type 5 experts, they might have been killed. It was because of this that Pi Zhi Wen suffered the most of the hatred from the Type 5 alien. Once it broke out of the suppression, it quickly charged over to kill him.

Pi Zhi Wen looked at the Type 5 alien with multi claws in front of him and did not panic. He took up a stance, preparing to use his blade to break through everything, as he retaliated with a huge 1m-blade beam towards the head of the Type 5 alien.

On the other side, Bai He Lian was shocked, as she quickly thrust out with her own battle spear, executing a Clear Wind Thrust. It shot towards the alien amidst countless wind blades. If the alien continued to attack Pi Zhi Wen, it would be pierced by Bai He Lian.

The combat ability of the Type 5 alien was incredibly frightening, as it assessed almost immediately that it would be injured heavily if it chose to continue attacking Pi Zhi Wen.

The tail of the Type 5 alien slapped down on the ground, causing a huge hole. It made use of the recoil and twisted its body, before it shot backward, dodging both Pi Zhi Wen and Bai He Lian's attacks.

Even while dodging mid-air, the Type 5 alien did not relent, opening its huge jaws to fire its tongue out at Bai He Lian.

Since Bai He Lian had executed the Clear Wind Thrust, her body balance was off. Against the sudden attack from the Type 5 alien, she could only twist to one side.

However, even after Bai He Lian exerted all her strength to dodge, the tongue of the Type 5 alien still struck her chest, causing a huge wound with blood pouring out.

The remaining 2 half-step Type 5 elites roared out in rage and tried to attack the Type 5 alien before it regained its footing.

Unfortunately, just as they got close, 2 claws shot out from the

body of the Type 5 alien, blasting into the heads of the 2 human experts.

If it were a formation with Pi Zhi Wen and Bai He Lian assisting, these 2 half-step Type 5 experts might still be able to defend the attacks of the Type 5 alien. However, now, they were instantly KO-ed.

Seeing the state of Bai He Lian, Han Ying'er screamed out in anguish, her face pale, "Master!!"

"It's over!!"

"We're dead!!"

"Even Headmaster Bai is going to die, we are dead!"

"..."

All the cultivators of South Origin City were filled with despair.

Without the support of the Type 5 experts, all these lower-ranked cultivators could only wait for the aliens to slaughter them. It was just a matter of time.

Even the resolute Pi Zhi Wen had a look of desolation, "It's over, am I going to die here tonight?"

Among the humans, Jin Xuan'er, who was wearing a Type 4 Battle Armor, riddled with injuries, sighed with regret, "What a pity, I didn't manage to kill enough aliens."

She had worn the Type 4 Battle Armor gifted by Yue Zhong, her battle strength at the initial-Type 5 realm. Although she was not a match for the Type 5 alien, she was able to suppress the Type 4 ones.

It was because she had killed a few Type 4 aliens that this human group was able to maintain their wits and not collapse. However, they were already at their limit.

Thinking about the possibility of her death, a strong sense of fear overcame her, as she trembled uncontrollably. No matter how

much of a genius she was, she was a young girl, she was also afraid of death.

If Bai He Lian died, then there was only one outcome for the rest of the cultivators here - Death!

After injuring Bai He Lian heavily, the Type 5 alien flashed in front of her and slashed out with its claws. The aliens did not have any concept of having pity on beauties.

"Am I going to die here?" Bai He Lian slumped to the ground, eyeing the ferocious visage of the alien, her eyes flashing with despair.

All of a sudden, a huge particle beam shot down on the Type 5 alien, instantly causing it to disintegrate, leaving behind a huge, smoking hole.

Everyone was stunned, and they lifted their heads to the sky.

Only to discover 12 gargantuan helicarriers in the sky, exuding a powerful presence.

5 other particle beams shot down, taking out the remaining 5 aliens. These aliens that had killed numerous humans were instantly taken out, not even leaving a single ash.

"We're saved!!"

"We're saved!! Thank goodness!!"

"Haha!! I'm alive!!"

"..."

Seeing the 12 Protector Battleships, the cultivators below could not help but cheered and laughed out in excitement.

Pi Zhi Wen was also looking at them, "Who's the master of these airships? Why would they lend us a hand? Are they from the Saint Lands?"

In front of everybody, the doors of the No. 1 Protector Battleship

opened up, and Yue Zhong stepped out on thin air, descending slowly like an immortal, as he approached Jin Xuan'er.

Yue Zhong looked at her and spoke indifferently, "Jin Xuan'er, come with me to Earth."

Jin Xuan'er looked at him, her eyes filled with joy, as she smiled and replied, "Yes!"

Han Ying'er immediately leaped out from the crowd, kneeling in front of Yue Zhong as she kowtowed, "Sir Yue Zhong, please help me, please save my Master!!"

Chapter 1025: Besieged South Origin City!

The various beautiful cultivators of the Clear Wind Martial School also came up to him and kneeled, "Please save our Master!! Please!"

On Uros, the relationship between a master and disciple was extremely close, almost equivalent to that of parents and children. Although Bai He Lian was traditional and old-fashioned, she was extremely good to her disciples.

"Fine! I'll save her this once."

Yue Zhong swept Bai He Lian a look and immediately pointed at her. A small red liquid shot out from a bottle that appeared out of thin air and went into the wound.

The moment the red liquid touched her wound, it stopped bleeding, and the wound began to twitch and heal, stabilizing her condition.

Yue Zhong swept her a look, "Alright, she won't die."

"Thank you, Sir Yue Zhong!!"

The women of the Clear Wind Martial School rejoiced, as they quickly gathered around Bai He Lian.

Pi Zhi Wen and the hundreds of cultivators came up with a complicated gaze.

Pi Zhi Wen immediately bowed and apologized, "Yue Zhong, it was our fault. We shouldn't have been so small-minded and rejected your invitation. Please extend your magnanimity and mercy once more, and help us out. The South Origin City is already besieged by those aliens, and a lot of our people are still trapped inside. Please help them, we're willing to become your subordinates and citizens."

"Please help us!!"

"Rescue our South Origin City's residents! Please!!"

"If you can save our people, I, Liu Wu, will give you my life."

"..."

The cultivators behind Pi Zhi Wen began to beg with aggrieved faces. Some even got on their knees and kowtowed till they bled.

When the initial wave of aliens had been forced back by Yue Zhong and the cultivators, many of them went into hiding in the water tunnels. At the same time, there were some humans who had already been infected.

Soon, those parasites began to mature and commenced their attacks on the other humans within the city.

Of the 3 remaining Type 5 experts of South Origin City, Peng Liang had also been assassinated by one of the Type 5 aliens, instantly dying.

Pi Zhi Wen and Bai He Lian had seen that the situation was bad and quickly led the experts that they could gather to escape the city.

Even so, there had been over a thousand cultivators who escaped out, and the death toll had resulted in only a few hundred left. Yet, they had only managed to kill 8 Type 4 aliens.

A thousand martial cultivators could not even deal with 20 aliens, instead, they were almost wiped out, this was how terrifying the aliens were.

Of course, it was also largely due to the humans being caught unprepared. The defense of the aliens was astonishing, and even when Type 4 experts attacked their exoskeleton, there was not much effect, not to mention killing them.

Yue Zhong looked at the begging people and did not even hesitate, "Come with me! Let's go save some people!!"

"Thank you so much!! Thank you, Sir!!"

"..."

Hearing his words, the cultivators of South Origin City were overjoyed, as they kowtowed profusely. Inside the city, there were still family members and friends inside, every additional person rescued was an additional life. Otherwise, these cultivators would be feeling guilty the rest of their lives.

With a thought, a number of yellow lights shot down from the Protector Battleships, enveloping the cultivators from the South Origin City.

The beams transported the cultivators up into the Protector Battleships.

After that, the 12 helicarriers then made towards South Origin City.

The speed of the Battleships was incredibly fast, reaching Mach-8 at their maximum. In barely a minute, they had arrived over South Origin City.

By now, the city was a scene right out of hell, as 600 aliens were ravaging through the city, slaughtering any humans they came across.

The humans of South Origin City seemed to become trapped livestock, anywhere they wanted to run, there would be aliens.

The speed of the aliens was terrifying as well, if they went all out, they could easily kill a dozen humans in a single breath. Furthermore, with the help of the parasite-controlled humans, they managed to trap the hundreds of thousands of humans within the city.

Even if the humans tried to hide within the city, they would still be discovered and killed.

A number of big-bellied aliens pierced their tails into the humans, injecting them with the spawn, causing those infected to become carriers. Once the spawn matured, they would burst out of

the humans and consume them.

There were various ways for the aliens to propagate, one of them was the direct larvae production by the Alien Queen. Another was the direct birth of matured aliens if the Alien Queen absorbed enough food. The 2nd method was more terrifying, as Type 6 and Type 7 aliens could be produced this way.

Another was the matured aliens producing their own larvae, infecting some other humans. The larvae would then mature within their hosts, before breaking out to consume them. This was to see the strength of the larvae survivability. Many human-shaped Type 4 and Type 3 aliens were produced this way. They were the weakest, but such ensured the variety of abilities. Furthermore, if such larvae could infect a larger beast, they would be able to produce a Type 5 or Type 6 alien.

The entire South Origin City was already becoming a hunting ground and breeding farm for the aliens. There were many who stared wide-eyed in fear as the alien larvae crawled into them, and consumed them from within.

Amidst their despair, many of them chose to commit suicide. Some even went crazy and gave in to their darkest desires. They began to kill, rob, rape, and commit arson, making the situation worse.

The remaining humans hid within their homes, trembling with fear. They were already full of despair, awaiting their impending doom.

Chapter 1026: Alien Spawn!

On the hellish streets of South Origin City, 7 male thugs with obvious signs of madness in their eyes were pressing down 2 beautiful women beneath them, letting out perverted laughs. They were no different from beasts right now.

The 2 women were crying and pleading, "No! Please!! Let us go!! Please!"

The leader of the group, a burly and muscular bald man with a scorpion tattoo on his right arm, had a fierce look as he barked out, "Damn it, bitch, keep quiet!! This senior is going to be eaten by those freaks, why the fuck should I care about anything else? If you girls let us have a good time, I will let you leave alive! Otherwise, I will chop off your arms and legs!!"

Under that harsh threat, the 2 women became pale and did not dare to struggle any further. They were truly afraid of having their limbs dismembered. At that point, it would be no different from being dead.

The muscular man then had a lustful look in his eyes, as he sniggered obscenely, "Hold them down, this senior will have his way!! Haha! Haha!!!"

Under the threat of death, this bald man with a scorpion-tattoo had truly gone crazy.

At this time, one of the men beside him, who had blond hair and piercings, had a vicious glint in his eyes. He directly swung his huge hammer and smashed down viciously on the head of the bald man.

Pu!

Following a sickening crunch, the head of the bald man burst apart like a watermelon, as red and white matter splattered all over the ground.

After killing the bald man, the blond guy let out a maniacal laughter full of hatred, "Haha!! Boss Liu, you never expected for me to kill you right?! You damn bastard, actually raping this senior's girlfriend last time, making me a cuckold! This senior has been thinking of killing you for a long time!! Haha!! Haha!! Now that you have died at my hands, it can be considered your retribution!! Haha!! Haha!!"

After that, his eyes turned even more crazed and violent, as he looked at the other 5 hooligans, muttering, "Oh yeah, there's still you bastards. Since I've already killed Boss Liu, why not just do away with you guys as well?"

"He's mad!"

"Everybody!! Kill him!!"

"..."

The eyes of the 5 thugs flashed with fear and anger as they pounced for the blond man.

"For this day, I've spent so much to learn from Deep Cloud Martial School, just to kill you bastards! Haha!! Haha!! Other than Boss Liu, all you dogs are not my match at all!"

As he spoke, his eyes flashed viciously, and he charged into the midst of the 5 thugs, smashing down on the head of the thugs, busting their heads apart one by one like watermelons.

When he was done, his entire body was covered in brain matter and blood, looking like a demon.

The 2 women looked at him, their eyes filled with fear as they trembled.

He then turned to look at the 2 women with a savage expression, while licking his lips with an obscene gaze, "Hehe, lucky! Before I die, I get to toy with decent goods! Haha!"

The blond-haired man quickly took off his pants, revealing his

naked bottom, as he laughed obscenely and walked towards the 2 women.

"Haha! Give me..."

As he was about to grab the hair of one of the women and push her towards his groin, there was a flash, slicing through the man.

His body was split in two, as blood splattered out on the woman in front of him.

A bladed-alien turned to stare coldly at the women, its eyes filled with a violent, killing intent.

"Ah!!"

When the woman saw the crumpled half of the man, she could not help but scream out in horror, as a puddle of yellow liquid flowed from her waist.

As though agitated, the bladed alien shot forwards.

With its speed, the lady was definitely going to be killed before she could react.

At that critical moment, a white light beam shot down from the skies, blasting the alien, and obliterating it.

Only then did the woman regain her senses, as she broke out crying, both from relief and fear.

The other woman turned to look up, noticing the 12 Protector Battleships, as particle beams fired out continuously, taking out the aliens below.

She was moved, as tears flowed down her cheeks, "We're saved!! We're saved!! We're alive!!"

The aliens within South Origin City did not number more than a thousand, thus, they were easily taken out by the Protector Battleships that could easily wipe out tens of thousands.

There had been an alien nest near the city, however, as Yue

Zhong had gone to storm it, the number of aliens were lesser. Had Yue Zhong not gone in to annihilate the aliens at that time, it was likely that there not even be corpses left to bury by the time he got back to South Origin City.

After an hour, every single alien within the city had been cleaned up and taken out.

Once that was dealt with, all the cultivators saved by Yue Zhong quickly disembarked to organize the citizens within for an evacuation.

With the orderly instructions and overseeing people, the survivors all quickly went up the Protector Battleships.

There was soon a long queue in front of the entrances of the helicarriers.

The citizens of South Origin City boarded the Battleships in an orderly manner.

One fashionably-dressed young lady, who had beautiful looks, was about to enter the Battleship when a beam scanned past her, and immediately, a mechanical voice sounded out, "Warning, warning, parasitic life form detected. Likely to be infected by the alien spawn! Kill immediately!"

Once the voice sounded, a panel opened up to reveal a particle cannon.

Another survivor had a look of shock, as he hurried in front of the beautiful girl and shouted, "What?! Infected?! Impossible!! She's my sister!! She can't be infected! Don't kill her! If you want to, take me down first!"

His words had barely sounded when a particle beam fired right through his head, blasting it apart.

At the same time, the beam penetrated through the chest of the woman, causing a huge hole as blood flowed out profusely.

She did not die, however, as her mouth opened and a number of alien spawn shot out, intending to leap for the humans nearby.

"Alien spawn!!"

Seeing the sudden appearance of the alien spawn, the people began to panic and chaos broke out. They were not willing to be infected by those spawn and devoured.

However, the moment those spawn jumped out, the particle beams quickly made short work of them, blasting them to pieces.

At the same time, the beautiful woman who had been a host disintegrated as well.

Yue Zhong's voice sounded coldly from the battleships, "Do not panic. I've taken care of those aliens. Quieten down and go through the checks as you're supposed to. Those who aren't willing to board, if you're clean of any infections after the scan, you may go. Those who reject the scans will be executed immediately."

Hearing his words, many of them began to relax. The tests might be strict, but it was to ensure their safety.

One burly man roared out, "That's too overbearing! We're not your slaves! Why should we listen to you?! Everybody, come charge with me! He definitely can't deal with us all!"

The moment he said that a particle beam blasted his lower body, disintegrating it.

He slumped to the ground, and his mouth opened, revealing more alien spawn that crawled out from any available crevices.

The moment those alien spawn crawled out, particle beams fired out on them and incinerated them.

As though sensing the threat of death, those infected hiding within the crowd began to open their mouths, as slime-covered alien spawn crawled out from their mouths, pouncing towards the other humans.

Unfortunately for them, the moment they appeared, the readied particle beams blasted out, obliterating them as well as their hosts.

Of the 160,000 survivors, 40,000 had been infected. Yue Zhong could not afford to be merciful as he ordered for all hosts to be annihilated. In the end, there were only 120,000 survivors left.

Chapter 1027: Type 7 Yin Shuang!

Yue Zhong was forced to kill those infected 40,000 humans. If there were just one or 2, he might try to utilize surgery to extract the spawn out, and save the hosts' lives.

However, with such a number, he had no way of helping them. Furthermore, he wanted to bring them back to Earth. The moment one infected host got past, the entire China would be in danger.

Just one single alien spawn would evolve into a new Queen if it migrated to a place without any of its kind. It would then grow to become the single propagator of the alien species, and if left to evolve, it would only be a matter of time before it destroyed Earth.

After wiping out those hosts, the remaining 120,000 human survivors quickly embarked the Protector Battleships.

While every single Battleship was packed with the survivors, they were still able to ferry all 120,000 survivors.

After accommodating them and settling them in place, the 12 Battleships soared once more and shot towards the Gates of Hell.

Outside the gates, there were piles of corpses belonging to aliens and Mutant Beasts, as a silver-haired girl sat atop a humongous red ape the size of a bungalow, looking bored.

The huge Type 6 Blazing Ape of over 6 meters in height looked at Yin Shuang atop its head with a hint of fear in its eyes.

Just a day ago, this Type 6 Blazing Ape had tried to get past the Gates of Hell into Earth. When it met Yin Shuang, although it was a powerful Type 6 Mutant Beast, it was completely suppressed by her. In the end, it had submitted and became her pet. That was how it retained its life.

The Type 6 Blazing Ape thought to how Yin Shuang had flung it about like a rag doll, and its heart turned cold.

Yin Shuang's feet continued to dangle over its head, as she held up her head, "Hey Little Red, say, why isn't Father back yet? I'm already bored of killing these monsters."

Little Red?

When it heard this name, the Blazing Ape's expression contorted. With its intellect, it could understand Yin Shuang's words, and with its size, how could it be considered little? However, in front of this violent master, as well as the reminder of the alien corpses in front of it, it could only roar out affectionately.

Among the pile of corpses, there were 6 Type 6 alien corpses. They were all blasted in the head by Yin Shuang, and this Type 6 Blazing Ape did not want to join them.

Yin Shuang chuckled, "Hehe, you like this name too? The names I chose are not too bad, right? Is the standard good? Let me tell you, I learnt all these from Father. Yin Shuang loves Father the most."

The Type 6 Blazing Ape lamented in its heart. Such an awful name, who would want it? It wanted to curse Yin Shuang's father so much. However, it could only force out an ugly smile and roared back in agreement.

Yin Shuang's face crunched up, as her eyes flashed with a violent and sadistic light. A killing intent billowed out from her, "Why isn't Father back yet? Yin Shuang is getting angry, and wants to kill something."

Yin Shuang was, after all, a life form produced from the Mutant Infected Womb, and possessed an incredible talent and strength, which came from the violent blood of the infection. Only Yue Zhong was able to suppress her nature and violent tendencies.

When faced with that incredible killing intent, the Blazing Ape was filled with fear, quickly kneeling on the ground as it trembled, afraid that its master would kill it with a single slap.

Right at this time, the 12 enormous helicarriers soared through the skies, flying towards her.

Yin Shuang turned her gaze up, her eyes filled with combat intent, when suddenly, her right wrist turned warm, and Yue Zhong's image appeared.

Yue Zhong spoke, "Yin Shuang, it's me! I'm in those Battleships! I'm back! It's been hard on you."

These few days, she had been stationed here guarding the gate, preventing any aliens from entering Earth through the Gates of Hell.

If it had not been for her, most of them would have entered and infiltrated China, causing the calamity-stricken China to be under threat yet again.

"Father, I'm coming!"

Yin Shuang laughed sweetly, and leaped up into the sky, soaring towards the 12 Battleships.

Yue Zhong stared in shock, "Flight! She's already able to manipulate the atmospheric energy! This is the realm of a Type 7 Divine Warrior, has she already evolved to become one? That pearl is truly a treasure."

When Yue Zhong had separated from Yin Shuang, she had only been at the high-Type 6 realm. In just a few days, she had already broken through to the Type 7 realm, her speed far surpassing Yue Zhong and his God and Devil Imprint.

Although her talents were heaven-defying, she had no way of comparing to Yue Zhong's God-Devil Body and his God and Devil Imprint. It was because of the treasure from the lake that had bolstered her speed.

Yue Zhong watched her arrive, his gaze pleased, "In any case, it's good. With her and myself, there are now 2 Type 7 experts in China. Adding on the 12 Battleships, we finally have some decent

power."

Yue Zhong might already be at the Type 7 realm, and invincible throughout Earth, but there were still other worlds out there.

There was Emperor Ba Long from the 3rd World, the Type 7 aliens and Alien King from Uros. At the same time, he was extremely clear that above him, there was still the even more terrifying Type 8 and Type 9 Divine Warriors.

Inside the Battleship, Yue Zhong thought quietly, "A Type 7 Divine Warrior can control the atmospheric energy, while a Type 8 Divine Warrior can comprehend spatial laws, and a Type 9 Divine Warrior has direct control over it. In the 3rd World, that fearsome entity that had transcended worlds to attack me must be at the very least a Type 9 Divine Warrior who could control space. Such an entity must already be almost equivalent to God. Only those at the peak can claim to be free from God's control. Otherwise, we're just all his toys, life and death at his whim."

After reaching his current stage, Yue Zhong had begun to understand many things, pinpointing the next step in his cultivation, at the same time, he had started to get a clearer picture of the Type 8 and Type 9 existences from the notifications.

He thought to himself, "My God-Devil Body, together with the Imprint, contain many secrets. The cultivators of Uros had been stuck at a bottleneck, unable to breakthrough. AS for me, as long as I kill enough experts, and absorb their life force, I can evolve, possessing countless abilities. Such potential is truly heaven-defying. There must be some form of a secret to them. However, with my current strength, I cannot peer past the veil. Right now, I should focus on leading the people of China to live on."

As he was pondering, the 12 Battleships managed to make it past the gate.

When the 12 Battleships got close to the Gates of Hell, a number of black beams shot out from the Gate, falling upon the

Battleships.

The Battleships began to shrink, while the humans were also shrunk until the fleet passed through smoothly.

Yue Zhong watched himself shrink, and sighed out in amazement, "Incredible, the Gate of Hell is a link between space after all. That entity called God is truly powerful, to be able to do something like this."

The rest of the survivors did not feel anything, as they were huddled within the ship, not knowing they had been shrunk.

On Earth, right in front of that gate, there was an entire regiment of China's finest soldiers.

20 Reapers had been deployed out.

Countless laser-mounted vehicles were also aiming at the Gate.

Even the powerful Storm Battleship was ready to fire its ultimate Raytheon Cannon at the Gate, at a moment's notice.

Due to their uncertainty of Uros before the exploration, Yue Zhong had ordered Bai Yi to deploy China's elite forces to guard the gates, not allowing any monsters from escaping.

Ji Qing Wu was decked in a suave military uniform as she stared at the Gates, her teeth clenched tight, "It's already been 5 days, how come he isn't back yet?"

The 5 days that Yue Zhong had entered the gate, Ji Qing Wu had been waiting throughout.

Chapter 1028: Concept of a Large City Base!

Outside the Gate of Hell, a number of off-duty soldiers were huddled near a vehicle, engaging in small talk.

One of them had his laser rifle slung behind his back, as he asked his fellow soldier, a tanned and muscular man, "Old Wang, we heard you recently got married, she used to be a female TV anchor from G City, not bad eh? When are you bringing her out for us to meet?"

Another soldier chuckled, "We heard she's pretty caring as well. After Old Wang became a lieutenant, a number of beauties took the initiative to chase him."

Old Wang chuckled smugly, "You guys just have to work hard to reach this rank as well. By that time, with our Central Army's system, you guys will naturally be taken care off."

The Central Army was the strongest armed force under Yue Zhong's command right now, equipped with laser guns, ray guns, including the Reapers, Sky Fortress, and multi-purpose scanning helmets. They were all peak-grade equipment of the world currently.

The treatment and remuneration of the soldiers were decent, and most of the female survivors hoped to marry an officer. In case of danger and emergencies, they would have some sort of backing.

After the baptism of the apocalypse, the remaining female survivors outnumbered male survivors. This was because most of them were usually captured and treated as toys and harem members of powerful experts. Although there was no dignity, they had managed to survive. In fact, in some factions, it was not uncommon to see hundreds of women being kept captive.

In comparison, most male survivors were drafted into becoming soldiers and fighters, pitting their lives against zombies, Mutant

Beasts, and other humans, thus, there was a higher death toll.

After establishing the new China, although things were much better, there were still many male warriors and hunters who took risks to kill zombies and Mutant Beasts in order to evolve. Many of these solo warriors died out there. Women stayed within the cities, and few had the desire to become strong warriors themselves. Only those who wanted to control their own fates would take the risk to head out and kill to become stronger.

Under such circumstances, every mature man would be like a hot commodity, with a few women throwing themselves on them. This Old Wang was a lieutenant in the army, thus, he had a bevy of suitors.

He sighed, "Truly, life now is so much better! A year ago, it was practically hell!! It's all thanks to Leader Yue Zhong. If not for him, we might still be living like corpses, if not already zombies."

A year ago, this Old Wang had been one of the survivors at the lowest rungs of society, having difficulty even with his meals. Not to mention women, even if he was given one, he could not afford to take care of her.

One shorter soldier with a yellowish complexion took out a cigarette, taking in the flavor as his eyes revealed an expression of bliss, "That's right!! A year ago, it had been the worst of times. Just a cigarette like this would have been more precious than life. Now, it's still a luxury, but at least, all of us here in the Central Army can afford to smoke it!"

Such cigarettes were found everywhere before the apocalypse but were a rare luxury during the early days of the apocalypse. Even after the New China had been established, they were still a luxury, reliant on the stock of the pre-apocalypse days.

After all, Yue Zhong had directed efforts and resources into military spending and factories, otherwise, how could have produced so many military resources.

Although they had established the New China and reclaimed most of the land, Yue Zhong was clear that their foundation was still weak. Earth was still in peril, once those zombies and Mutant Beasts attack all the human bases, they would still perish.

One of the soldiers stared at the cigarette with greed, "Monkey, give me half!!"

Monkey chuckled and admonished him jokingly, "Shadow, scram! We're all given 2 every month, go smoke your own."

Shadow grumbled, "2, I've already spent mine. It's too little, not enough for me!"

As they were chatting idly, one of the soldiers went wide-eyed, as he called out, "Look!! What's that?!"

All the soldiers narrowed their gazes and looked towards the Gate of Hell, and were greeted by something majestic that they had never seen in their lives.

12 gigantic battleships flew out from the Gate, soaring towards the sky, every few meters they ascended, they seemed to grow larger one more, until by the time they fully expanded above, the entire patch of the sky seemed to be blocked out.

Old Wang immediately grabbed his rifle, barking out at the rest as he pulled down his helmet, executing a combat movement, "Get ready for battle!!"

The rest of the idling soldiers also revealed their elite standards through training and countless battles, swiftly getting into position and hiding behind cover as they stared at 12 Protector Battleships in the sky warily.

Although the soldiers were shocked, they had long since been trained to react calmly and bravely. They were the elite and most outstanding of the Central Army, not some motley bunch.

"Everyone, please be notified that these aircraft belong to Leader Yue Zhong. Do not engage! I repeat, do not engage!"

Immediately, warnings sounded off in every single helmet.

"That's Leader Yue Zhong's ride?! Holy shit!! Mother-effing cool!!"

"That's really too damn awesome, none of our Earth's helicarriers are that crazy!!"

"Haha, with those 12 helicarriers, our China is going to become unstoppable in the aerial department."

"Shit, those air force guys are going to enjoy themselves so much."

"..."

Eyeing the Battleships in the skies, there was not a single soldier that was not filled with pride and joy. The stronger China became the higher their positions. These Battleships were definitely not simple, and they were naturally excited.

The Battleships began to descend, and many humans walked out, eyeing their surroundings with wariness and caution.

Yue Zhong brought Yin Shuang out, and he immediately caught sight of the valiant and beautiful Ji Qing Wu.

Ji Qing Wu also smiled a rare smile, walking towards him, with Chen Yao by her side.

Yue Zhong looked at Chen Yao and gave a flurry of orders, "Chen Yao, there're 120,000 people here, go get someone to settle them in. Furthermore, 2,000 troops are to stay here to guard this location. Everyone else is to go back. I've brought back these 12 Protector Battleships to guard this location, one of them will be my own vehicle, the rest can be used for some of the guys to get used to."

As the ruler, there were many things Yue Zhong did not have to see to personally, he just had to assign someone to it.

The beautiful Chen Yao replied, "Understood!"

Yue Zhong smiled gently, and reached out with his right hand, "Come, let me show you my victory prize."

Ji Qing Wu smiled and reached out with her own hand.

Seeing this, Yin Shuang revealed an expression of dislike, as she shot Ji Qing Wu a death stare, before hugging Yue Zhong's right arm tightly.

The 3 of them then headed towards the Protector Battleship.

Chen Yao watched them go with a complicated gaze, before turning around to leave and issuing orders.

Inside one of the rooms, Yue Zhong then narrated the events on Uros.

Ji Qing Wu had been sitting quietly listening, and when he was done, she frowned, "Yue Zhong, I think our current situation is incredibly dangerous. Most of the survivors are in various cities, spreading out what we can do. Against the zombies, it isn't too much, but if those aliens were to come, then any small city would fall to them."

Yue Zhong also frowned, and knew that she was right. If the aliens were to invade, then those spread-out cities would become food and prey for the aliens.

He asked, "What ideas do you have?"

Ji Qing Wu replied, "Build a large city base and gather all survivors there. After that, we will tighten the security with our various technology and identity scanners, engaging in periodic checks and scans. It will help ensure no hosts get past us unchecked."

Yue Zhong frowned, "But that would mean giving up many regions and tightening our defense lines. Some of the production cities will also have to be sacrificed. Furthermore, if the proposed city is breached, that would mean our end."

Ji Qing Wu swiftly countered, "I know, we can still assign drones and robots to those areas of resources. Furthermore, we can build the large city base near those current locations with resources. As to the possibility of the city being attacked, it's nothing to worry about. There will be all our strongest forces gathered there, if even that is defeated, then humanity is destined to be doomed, no matter how scattered we are, the outcome will be the same. It would just be a matter of how early."

Chapter 1029: America's Calamity!

Yue Zhong pondered silently, "True, if we were to gather our forces, and cannot withstand those aliens, then it just means that it's fate. Now that we're all scattered, once those aliens, the Dino-race and the Saint Clan were to attack, those cities without protection will still die. Why not just gather them to make things easier? That will reduce the pressure on the soldiers as well."

He then spoke, "Alright, let's do it according to your suggestion. We will immediately commence construction on such a city, and bring all our citizens in."

If such a plan was proposed before the apocalypse, it would definitely not be feasible, due to the sheer numbers. However, it was much simpler now.

The capital was able to accommodate over a few million people, whereas the current count of survivors was nowhere near that many.

He just needed to choose a few important cities, and then make use of the technology that he had obtained to transform those cities to become fortresses similar to the Xue Luo Forts.

Yue Zhong's gaze then narrowed, as he directly asked, "Wait, Bai Yi, on Earth, how many other new Gates of Hell are there, other than the one here?"

Bai Yi's eyes ran numbers and swiftly replied, "According to the satellite images, there were 63 new Gates of Hell. Based on the locations and distribution, those not yet discovered should be between 163 and 345 of them. This is just the number on land. If there are Gates within the oceans, then it's likely that there's more."

"Our Earth's humans are in danger!"

Yue Zhong bolted up, his heart filled with a sense of crisis. A single Gate of Hell with those aliens was enough to wipe out all of

humanity.

To think that there were so many Gates of Hell that appeared, it was likely that more terrifying species and races would descend upon Earth soon.

When his thoughts came there, even with his Type 7 realm strength, Yue Zhong still felt a chill in his heart.

After Yue Zhong reached the Type 7 stage, together with his Second Order God-Devil Body, he comprehended many secret and profound ways. He could be considered one of the strongest among the Type 7 realm. Even if countless races descended, if he could not defeat them, he could still run.

But in China, there were many loyal subordinates, his close brothers, his loved ones, and many of his countrymen. He could not just abandon them all for his own life. He could only brave it all and defeat all his enemies. Once he fell, China would be reduced to hell. Such a terrifying future presented a strong pressure on him.

He quickly calmed himself down and became resolute once more, "I will not fall! Never! For myself, for the millions, I will defeat all enemies and gain victory in the end!"

Over at Canada, out in the wilderness, there was a Gate of Hell.

When it had appeared, the American satellites had already caught wind of it.

Currently, there was an elite troop gathered outside the Gate of Hell, on top of that, there was also a hundred American elites, as well as 500 super soldiers dressed in the nano armor.

A large number of cannons, rocket launchers, missiles, and even a nuclear warhead was pointed right at the Gate of Hell. Once there were any existences that humanity could not deal with, they would utilize all of these!

Canada had already come under America's control under the

agreement of the Earth's Federal Government. They were naturally not willing to allow any foreign species to invade their regions.

If it wasn't for the Gate being so hardy, impervious to even missiles and projectiles, America would have long since bombed the gate to smithereens. No country was willing to keep such a horrendous thing in their own backyard.

The Gate was invulnerable, and could not be shut, even Yue Zhong, a Type 7 expert, could not do anything to it.

Leo, the leader of the Superhuman Alliance, one of the 3 top experts on Earth stood on a small hill, looking at the Gate of Hell with a complicated gaze. He thought silently, "Who knows what kind of world is on the other side? The technology and experts? Should I go over? However, what if I can't come out when I go over? With so many new Gates of Hell, once I leave, if America were to fall under monsters, I would become a sinner."

Just as he was in a dilemma, the gate suddenly contorted, and a huge Dino-Warrior covered in scales and sharp spikes stepped out, a ferocious glint in his eyes.

"Open fire!!"

The moment the Dino-Warrior appeared, the American commanders immediately gave the command.

At that instant, many soldiers opened fire, causing a rain of bullets to fall upon the Dino-Warrior.

These American troops were also elite soldiers that had gone through job changes under the System and had incredible aim. Most of the bullets fell upon the head of the Dino-Warrior accurately.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

Following the sounds of impact, the bullets just bounced off the head of the Dino-Warrior, not causing any harm at all.

"Impenetrable!!"

Seeing this, all the commanders frowned.

Firearms were a weapon the humans employed against the zombies. Other than a few L-Types, all the other low-level zombies would usually be taken out by headshots. If guns were ineffective, then it would be a tougher fight.

When struck by those bullets, the Dino-Warrior was enraged, and with a flash, his speed reached the sound barrier as he disappeared from his location, charging towards the humans.

All of a sudden, a laser beam shot out, striking in between the head of the Dino-Warrior. It immediately burnt a huge hole, causing him to fall out of the air.

Among the Superhuman Alliance, one 15-year-old rebellious youth held a laser gun as he blew a whistle, "These laser guns are truly incredible, actually killing that guy in one shot. Oh, yea, Leo, when will our America be able to produce such laser guns ourselves?"

Another expert, Cole, spoke out, "Wayne, you think it's so easy to develop such laser guns? Even if we have the tech, it would need time to mass produce them."

Right now, only China had the ability to mass produce the laser guns. While America and the Kingdom of God had exchanged technology with Yue Zhong, in order to make it into reality, it required time.

It was just like how Yue Zhong had obtained the Beast Warrior Transformation technology, but he could only produce about 500 of them.

Wayne asked curiously, "Then why don't we ask for more?"

Cole replied, "China doesn't even have enough, we should be celebrating the fact that they've agreed to sell us a 1,000."

Leo eyed the Gate of Hell and felt a sense of foreboding, as he quickly barked out, "All of you shut up! The enemy is here!! Prepare for battle!"

Once Leo got angry, no one dared to chit-chat, as their gazes fell upon the Gate of Hell.

Right after the Dino-Warrior was taken out, more of them walked out from the Gate of Hell.

This time, the human soldiers knew better, and quickly armed their laser rifles and fired.

Before the dozens of Dino-Warriors could react, they were already reduced to corpses.

All of a sudden, 30 of them charged right out at a terrifying speed.

Due to their speed reaching the sound barrier, it was hard for the human soldiers to get an aim at that instant.

Even with the peak snipers of the Superhuman Alliance, they only managed to take out over 20 of them, while 8 managed to retreat back.

Seeing the 8 escape, Leo's face fell as he felt a sense of danger, "Not good!"

Not long after the 8 Dino-Warriors escaped, in a breath, numerous more charged out right through to the human base.

"Open fire!! Open fire!!"

The moment they came out from the Gate, the commanders began to roar out in panic.

The numerous prepared heavy weaponry were let loose, as all sorts of projectiles and bullets buffeted the area.

Under that terrifying fire, many Dino-Warriors were blasted apart, however, these were those at the Type 3 level. Some managed to break through the suppressing fire and quickly arrived

in front of the humans.

Those soldiers in the nano armor quickly engaged those Dino-Warriors, fending off after much difficulty.

Chapter 1030: The Mighty Tyranno-King!

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The sounds of cannons rang out continuously, as the Gates of Hell was bombarded constantly, without a moment of rest. Based on the strength of these Dino-Warriors, once they got close, it would be a nightmare for those American soldiers.

Every single Dino-Warrior was at least at the Type 3 realm, and their close-combat potential was terrifying. Even with the Superhuman Alliance being known for their close combat strength, if they were not careful, they would perish at the hands of those Dino-Warriors.

Under the bombardment, many of the Dino-Warriors were blasted into smithereens. However, there were still those that managed to escape and got entangled with super soldiers.

Even with some Type 5 human experts leading the charge, there were a dozen Type 3 human experts that were torn apart by the Dino-Warriors.

More Dino-Warriors were pouring out from the Gates of Hell, but under the concentrated efforts of the American troops, they died miserably, and the threat was never too overwhelming.

Leo stood on a hill, eyeing the battle. He was the trump card of the American troops, and would not act too easily. His main mission was to wipe out the peak experts of these Dino-Warriors.

Every single Dino-Warrior was an expert, if they were able to charge into the midst of the human soldiers, then only Leo would be able to deal with them.

All of a sudden, 20 shadows charged out from the Gates of Hell.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Under a huge explosion, a dozen of those shadows was directly

enveloped in a huge cloud of dust.

Leo swept those shadows a look, his face changing as he shouted loudly, "Watch out, the experts of the enemy forces have arrived!! They're above the Type 5 realm."

Leo's words had not fallen when the Tyranno-King erupted out with a vicious and savage aura, appearing in front of a Type 5 expert. He revealed a cruel smile, as he blasted out with a violent fist.

The Tyranno-King was a peak-Type 6 expert, his combat strength terrifying. Even some Type 7 experts might not be a match for him. The Type 5 human expert was not able to react in time, and his head directly exploded.

Leo saw that, and his eyes flashed with a ferocious glint, roaring in fury, "Jess!!!!!"

Jess was Leo's good friend, and one of the Elders in the Superhuman Alliance. Both of them had fought side by side for America's sake, after going through countless cruel battles, they had become the best of comrades. Seeing Jess's death, Leo was filled with sorrow and anguish.

The Tyranno-King grabbed out at another Type 4 expert and crushed him beneath his claws, "Haha! Haha!! Weak!! These humans are so weak!!! Time for me to go all-out!"

One burly Type 6 Diplodocus-King stepped out, wielding a 500m-long Beast Bone as he declared loudly, "Stop fooling around! Kong Bao Zhen, quickly take out these humans, otherwise, Emperor Ba Long would be angry!"

"You dare to kill Brother Jess!! Die!! Monsters!!"

One golden-haired babe with a sexy figure stepped out and roared in fury. She slapped her hands and in an instant, thousands of sharp ice shards that could pierce even tanks shot out at the Tyranno-King.

Another man slapped the ground, causing numerous ground spikes to explode out at the Tyranno-King.

One other warrior roared out in rage, using his mind to control a powerful gravitational field to envelop the Tyranno-King.

A hippie-looking soldier with braids waved her hands, shooting out wind blades that sliced towards the Tyranno-King.

"Leave this fellow to us!"

3 human soldiers wearing Type 4 Battle Armors that enabled their strength to reach the Type 5 realm charged towards the Diplodocus-King.

Generally speaking, most large-sized beasts would have some weakness in their speed or agility. Many of those Type 5 Mutant Beasts might be incredibly strong, but when comparing speed, they might not even be on the same level as some peak-Type 3 human Divine Warriors.

"Weak!! You, humans, are too weak!!"

The Tyranno-King laughed out savagely, and with a tap of his foot, he turned into a beam of light that shot towards the experts of the Superhuman Alliance.

When those ice shards and wind blades struck his body, they were directly smashed into pieces, not harming him in the slightest.

At that instant, the Tyranno-King appeared in front of the beauty that controlled ice, swiping out with his powerful claws, and directly crushing her head.

After killing her in one strike, he laughed out and charged towards the human group once more, easily digging out the hearts of the lower-leveled soldiers of the Superhuman Alliance. He then proceeded to devour the hearts, his expression relaxed yet cruel.

A few peak-Type 4 human soldiers with speed had arrived behind

the huge Diplodocus-King.

"Damn ants, become meat paste for me!!"

He turned around, sweeping them with a disdainful gaze, as he swung down with his massive bone. At that moment, 3 of the human experts were instantly crushed flat, unable to react to that strike.

Although the size of this Diplodocus-King was huge, his speed was not slow. It was just slightly slower than the Type 6 Tyranno-King, but compared to the humans, it was still enough to cause them despair.

"These ants shall be left to you, Tyranno-King, Stego-King, I will go destroy their weapons of war."

The Type 6 Diplodocus-King swept his surroundings a look, before disappearing. It then reappeared among the heavy weaponry of the American troops, and swung out viciously, smashing the tanks and armored vehicles into the skies. When they landed, they were all destroyed.

"Stego-King? Another Type 6 monster?"

Leo's heart turned cold, as he felt a bad premonition. He then activated his cape's life-saving skill Teleportation, reappearing over a hundred meters away.

At the moment he disappeared, a blade flashed past his original location, slashing through thin air.

Leo's eyes narrowed, as he saw clearly who the perpetrator was.

It was a Dino-Warrior covered entirely with sharp bone plates, emitting a powerful killing intent. He had a Stegosaurus head, while his eyes contained a violent glint.

The Type 6 Stego-King swept Leo a look, laughing coldly, "Human, you're not too bad, to be able to evade the sneak attack of mine. Kneel and submit, I can let you become the king of the

human race. Otherwise, today will be the day you die!"

"Forget about it! I will never surrender to you, damn freak!"

Leo was also a resolute and strong defender of humanity. With a thought, a nether void appeared in mid-air, and from it, a 5m-tall Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape leaped out, clad entirely in black scales.

As the peak expert of America, and possessing a God-Devil Body as well, Leo had his own trump cards, and this Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape was one of them.

It was a Mutant Beast at the peak of Type 5, its combat strength stronger than Leo if he did not employ any special means.

The moment the Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape appeared, it roared out in anger and flashed towards the Type 6 Stego-King.

"Type 5 Mutant Beast? Strong! However, I am still stronger!"

With a flash, the Stego-King also transformed into a beam of light and clashed with the Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape.

While the Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape could absolutely crush some initial and mid-Type 6 experts, the Stego-King was still a peak-Type 6 expert, with half a step into the Type 7 realm. It was almost toe-to-toe.

With just the first clash, the Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape was almost riddled with injuries. However, its recovery speed was still astonishing. Furthermore, it was a battle-hungry creature, and did not lose out even with its initial disadvantage.

"3 peak-type 6 experts, we cannot handle this! I have to escape!"

Leo swept a gaze throughout the battlefield, his eyes flashing with a strange glint. He sighed deeply before his back glowed and a pair of treasures appeared, covered in runes and powered by a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus. He charged towards the skies and disappeared.

Amidst the blade flashes, the Type 5 Ferocious Spirit Ape was ripped apart, fresh blood flowing everywhere. The Stego-King stood over its corpse, his hands grabbing the Type 5 nucleus from the Ape, as he eyed the fleeing Leo. Frowning, he thought, "So fast in escaping!! Although these humans might not be our match, their abilities to preserve their lives are truly not weak. Even Emperor Ba Long might not be able to chase him. I guess only the swift Ptero-King or even Emperor Fei Long can chase up to that ant and kill him."

The treasure on Leo's back was a Treasure of Hope - Wings of Hope. When powered by a Type 5 nucleus, he would have the flight speed of a Type 5 Mutant Beast. When powered by a Type 6, likewise, his speed would reach the Type 6 realm. It was a powerful life-saving tool, and one of his trump cards as well.

In the air, Leo retrieved a walkie-talkie, as he spoke low into it, "It's Leo, time to engage Operation Destruction!"

"Operation Destruction, activated!"

"Operation Destruction has been activated!"

"5!"

"4!"

"..."

"0!"

Chapter 1031: Nuclear Attack!

In the capital of China, Yue Zhong's eyes were glued to the screen, sighing deeply, "Operation Destruction, are we finally forced to that state? Those Dino-Warriors are truly terrifying."

As a Super A.I., as long as there's any place with connection on Earth, it would be Bai Yi's territory. She had already long since gained control of all the super computers of Earth, as well as the satellites.

Even the Kingdom of God and America did not know that their satellites have already been brought under Yue Zhong, and every single move they made was displayed for Yue Zhong to see.

Operation Destruction was a plan Yue Zhong knew well. It referred to the usage of the final trump card - the nuclear missile!

Leo also had been to the 2nd World ravaged by nuclear warfare and knew the terrifying after effects. The radiation would make it hard for humans to survive, and there would be a growing number of pitiful Mutants, savage and barbaric Irradiated Devils, as well as Irradiated Beasts, causing even the Earth to be sick.

It was a measure meant as a last resort. This was the consensus among all countries, and even though Leo knew the consequences, he had been forced to choose it. It was evident just how far he was backed into a corner.

"O!"

When the countdown hit 0, a number of nuclear missiles fired out from America, aiming for the direction of the Gate of Hell as targeted by their satellites.

By the time the nuclear warhead soared right above the Gate of Hell, there were more than 200,000 Dino-Warriors as well as warriors of their various vassal clans.

Most of the armored forces of America had already been

vanquished, with 60% of their equipment destroyed.

The Dino-Warriors were not used to utilizing technology, their bodies were their weapons.

As he stood among the corpses and heaps of metal, the burly Diplodocus-King suddenly lifted his head and saw the incoming 5 nuclear warheads.

Each Type 6 Divine Warrior had powerful senses. Although the Diplodocus-King could not compare to Leo with his God-Devil Body, his senses were enough to detect the incoming warheads.

He spoke solemnly, "The humans had fired 5 warheads at us, who wants to go destroy them?"

"Missiles? They're pretty slow eh?" The Tyranno-King leered with sarcasm, as he grabbed a broken tank beside him, and continued, "Let's all go, see who can destroy the most."

The Stego-King laughed out confidently, and flashed in front of another demolished tank, as he grabbed it and declared, "It will be me!"

The Diplodocus-King sneered, and hoisted 3 tanks by himself, as he looked towards the sky.

As the missiles reached about 3km away from the gate, the 3 of them flung the projectiles in their hands.

Each of them was at the peak of Type 6, having stepped into it for hundred of years, thus, they were extremely clear about their own strength.

The broken tanks shot towards the missiles like meteors, slamming into each of them.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!!

Following 5 earth-shaking explosions, the entire Canada seemed to tremble.

The terrifying explosions engulfed the entire area near the Gate

of Hell, causing a blinding light that spread outward, as the resulting shockwave blasted in all directions as well.

Mushroom clouds rose, as countless electronics in Canada failed.

"No!!"

The 3 sniggering Dino-Kings felt the incredible danger at that moment, and quickly channeled their Radiance of Life, retreating maniacally.

Unfortunately, it was too late, as the entire region, including the 200,000 Dino-Warriors around the Gate of Hell, was enveloped by the powerful explosion and consumed.

As the dust settled, and all was calm once more, every single one of the 200,000 foreign species had been reduced to nothing more than broken corpses.

Although the majority were peak-Type 3 experts, as well as Type 4 and Type 5 Dino-Generals among them, in front of the nuclear weapon, they had still perished.

"Is it over?"

Yue Zhong continued to observe through the satellite.

He discovered that the Gate of Hell was still standing fine, without a single scratch, emitting an ancient and powerful aura.

With a flash, another batch of Type 3 Dino-Warriors stepped out.

At the center of the aftermath of a nuclear explosion, an ordinary human would have been subjected to radiation and died instantly.

However, the Dino-Warriors continued to pour out without stop, as though not affected by the radiation.

When the American government saw this through their feed, they were all filled with ashen expressions.

"What the hell? Do we continue firing?"

"No! Any more than this, and before we take them out, our Earth

will be destroyed!"

"Canada is too near to our country, if this continues, America will also suffer from the radiation!"

"..."

Discussions broke out in the meeting hall, arguing if they should or should not use the nuclear missiles.

Right as the government was still debating, the Dino-Warriors quickly left under the command of their Dino-Generals, leaving the region of the Gate of Hell.

Numerous armies quickly gathered and set off in all directions from Canada.

"Damn it!! What do we do? What do we do?"

Within the command center, Leo saw the number of enemies stepping out of the Gate of Hell, and he was gripped with anxiety.

One intelligence officer came running up to him with a pale face, "Reporting! The Kingdom of God has fallen! The 1st Apostle, Edward, had already been killed by the foreign species!"

Chapter 1032: The Beastmen Race!

Somewhere in Europe, near to the original capital of France, Paris.

In the skies, there were countless fighter jets, bomber planes and unmanned drones firing at the ground.

On the ground, the explosions rang out incessantly.

All over the chaotic battlefield, a number of Beastmen warriors covered in scales, their heights between 3 to 6 meters, were currently engaged with the soldiers of the Kingdom of God that had undergone the Beast Transformation technique. Both sides were clashing viciously, as though beasts of different sizes were slaughtering one another.

In the skies, about 5km above the center of the battlefield, there were large floating devices the size of clouds, and on them, similar monsters of about 3m to 8m stood.

One of them had a single, black horn on his head, with a snake-like visage, and a human-like body. He eyed the battle below and laughed, "These humans are interesting, to be able to create Beast Transformation warriors."

Another one had a horse-face, exuding a Type 6 strength, "Your Highness Taylor! These humans might have created the Beast Transformation Warriors, but they can't compare to us true Beastmen Warriors!"

Taylor looked down and laughed coldly, "That is true! What's fake will always be fake!"

Currently, while the Beast Transformation warriors might not be utterly devastated, but it was true that under the assault of the actual Beastmen Warriors, they were being taken out one by one, as the tide of the battle flowed against them.

If it was not for the heavy weaponry of the humans to support

them, they would have long been wiped out by the Beastmen Warriors.

At this time, 36 Thunder Fighters flew over, immediately launching an assault on the upper echelon of the Beastmen up in the clouds.

A number of rockets and missiles slammed towards their floating devices.

"What irritating pests, die for me!"

Taylor frowned slightly and reached out his right hand that was shining with the God and Devil Imprint, as 4 beams of black light shot out, radiating an evil energy.

The rockets immediately dissolve when they came into contact with the black beams, turning into a melted liquid that dripped down to the ground.

As the 5 black beams swept past the 36 Thunder Fighters, they also began to corrode and dissolve, turning into metal liquid.

In front of Taylor, the trump card of the Kingdom of God was reduced to nothing.

After he destroyed the 36 Thunder Fighters, Taylor shook his head and sighed, "The life force of these ordinary humans are too little, even after 36 machines are destroyed, they are not even 1% of the life force from those human Apostles. Hong Ying! I'll leave these flies to your Red Eagle Tribe!"

"Yes!"

One Type 6 expert with red crystal-like feathers and a hawk-like head nodded and responded, before flapping his wings and soared to the skies, letting out a sharp shriek.

Immediately, countless similar hawk-like beastmen flew out of their respective floating castles, making for the Thunder Fighters and commencing their assault.

Each of them flew at a speed surpassing the sound barrier, and within seconds, they already caught up to the aerial troops of the Kingdom of God.

On one particular Thunder Fighter, 4 35mm machine guns were still punching bullets of death into the ground.

Under the relentless assault, the Beastmen were heavily injured and bled profusely.

Some of those 3m-tall Beastmen warriors had peak-Type 3 strength, but they were unable to withstand bullets at their level.

Amidst the rain of bullets, one 5m-tall bull-head creature had a few more large holes in his head, as he slumped to the ground lifelessly.

The pilot inside the Thunder Fighter blew a whistle as he laughed out in triumph, "Another one down!"

Most of these Beastmen warriors were impervious to blades and smaller bullets, even heavy fire might not necessarily be able to take them down. Only those powerful Thunder Fighters could possibly take out the enemies.

Just as he was reveling in the excitement of the kill, 4 red-winged hawk-men flew atop this Thunder Fighter.

One of them grinned viciously, as he thrust out with his red battle spear, aiming for the reinforced glass windshield.

Kuang lang!

The windshield that could block even heavy bullets shattered immediately, as the red spear went right through the head of the pilot.

After taking out this ace pilot, the hawk-man entered the Thunder Fighter.

There was soon sounds of gunfire before everything died down and the hawk-man exited the aircraft, covered in blood, but not a

single wound to be seen on him.

After losing the pilot, the Thunder Fighter then descended unmanned, before slamming into the ground with a loud explosion.

When the Red Eagle Tribe took to the air, many of the human planes started to fly out of control, descending towards the ground and exploding in large fireballs.

Within minutes, the aerial advantage of the Kingdom of God was practically wiped out.

Taylor then swept a glance as he ordered coolly, "Lei Hu, time for your Thunder Tiger Tribe, wipe out the human resistance below!"

Taylor had already known that the Kingdom of God could not possibly be a match for his own aerial forces. That was why he had confidence in dealing with them. After all, almost everyone from the Red Eagle Tribe was at the Type 3, 4 and 5 levels, their speed insanely fast, and there was almost negligible pressure on them in dealing with those Thunder Fighters.

One tiger-head man with a thunderbolt symbol in between his eyebrows responded respectfully, "Yes!"

After that, with a Type 6 expert leading the way, the entire tribe charged towards the human army.

They did not enter the fray, instead, they made a beeline straight for the armored forces, where all their firepower was gathered. Along the way, almost no one could stop them, as the elite human soldiers were taken out one by one, their fates tragic.

Soon, the KoG troops in France collapsed, with many of their soldiers dying at the hands of the various Beastmen tribes.

"The 1st Squad of the Thunder Fighters wiped out!"

"The 2nd Squad of the Thunder Fighters wiped out!"

" ... "

Inside the command center of the Kingdom of God, the messages came in a flurry.

The expressions of the elders within the room were ugly, and some even had looks of despair.

One of the elders asked out in fear, "Great Elder, what do we do now? Edward is already dead. 5 of the 12 Apostles have already fallen. Our elite troops are being wiped out! What do we do now?"

The rest of them looked towards Jonas with similar expressions. As the pillar of the Kingdom of God, Edward had actually been killed by Taylor in a mere instant.

The trump cards of the Kingdom of God, the 12 Apostles and elite soldiers were not a match for these Beastmen warriors, and the elders were starting to panic now.

The France troops were already $\frac{1}{3}$ of the total army of the Kingdom of God. Now that they were wiped out by those foreign species, there were no more defense lines over in the west.

As for Jonas, the Great Elder, he was still calm, as a resolute look appeared in his gaze, and he declared, "No need to panic! Implement the final plan, while we seek China for help. Let Yue Zhong know of our plight, and plead on account of humanity, to come and rescue us."

One of the elders spoke up in worry, "But he was just our enemy not too long ago, will he come?"

Before the Earth Federal Government was formed, Yue Zhong and the Kingdom of God had been enemies, since both sides had backstabbed each other countless times. In order to deal with the foreign species and zombies, they had agreed to a truce at the summit, putting their hatred for each other down, to fend off the invaders.

Many of them were worried that Yue Zhong would not help.

"He will come! Rest assured, he will definitely come." Jonas

declared with a resolute glint, at the same time, sighing, "He will come, but, once he does, our Kingdom of God will most likely fade into history."

"Understood!"

"Implement the Final Plan!"

"..."

Jonas's calm infected everyone, as they quickly collected themselves to issue a flurry of orders.

A number of nuclear warheads then fired out from their headquarters, heading towards the Paris.

The bulk of the upper echelon in the Kingdom of God were Germans. Their old base was also in Germany. However, in these 2 years, they had obtained a number of nuclear weapons from France. Now that they were at this juncture, they could not care anymore.

Soon, the nuclear missiles arrived above Paris.

"These are missiles? Watch how I destroy them!"

In the skies, the Type 6 expert from the Red Eagle Tribe saw the incoming projectiles and frowned, pulling out a huge bow and fired off a powerful arrow.

The bone arrow slammed into one of the missiles.

Chapter 1033: S.O.S from the Kingdom of God!

Hong!!

The moment the arrow slammed into the missile, it caused the nuclear to explode, resulting in a terrifying shockwave, as the extremely blazing hot flames swept out in all directions.

"Not good!!"

At the moment of explosion, the Type 6 Red Eagle Tribe member quickly turned around to flee. Unfortunately, he was still consumed by the shockwave and was sent flying like a cannonball.

Due to the assault of the Type 6 Red Eagle, the nuclear warheads were detonated early in mid-air. However, the resulting explosions, shockwaves, and heat still managed to consume and obliterate all humans and monsters of the Type 4 stage and below, within Paris.

Many Type 4 and 5 freaks were also blinded, their ears rocked till they bled and turned deaf, becoming handicapped.

When the resulting shockwave swept past those floating castles, even Taylor and the other Type 6 experts were sent flying around.

Many of them could not handle the shock and spat out blood.

Taylor suppressed the energy, his face turning pale, "What kind of weapon was that!! Those weak humans...how could they come up with something like this?! If that had not been detonated earlier, even I would have been killed!"

After the explosion died down, many of the Type 4 and Type 5 Beastmen warriors stood up shakily, some struggling in pain, however, many stood in the center of the battlefield.

"Not wiped out!!"

"Those freaks actually did not die!!"

"Fuck!!"

"..."

Seeing the Beastmen Warriors standing up, the Kingdom of God watched all this through the satellite feeds with ugly expressions.

Although the soldiers were far away from the epicenter of the explosion, they had still been caught in the radius of the shockwaves. If they were human, they would have died instantly. However, these monsters still survived, showing the terror of their resilience and strength.

Jonas immediately declared solemnly, "Send an S.O.S to Yue Zhong now!"

Within the capital of China, Chen Yao came up to Yue Zhong, handing him a document, "Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God had sent a request for aid. They have lost 5 of their Apostles, and even Edward had been killed by a single-horned creature. The elite soldiers have been wiped out. Even after using a nuclear weapon, they were not able to deal with those forces. Should we help them?"

Yue Zhong frowned and began to ponder.

Chen Yao stood one sight and watched this man quietly. Her fellow schoolmate, an ordinary student back when they were still in university, while she was one of the school's belles. Her background was powerful, and she had many suitors. They were on such different levels that there was no way there could have been any form of interaction.

Yet, every since the apocalypse happened, she had watched as this man trudged through step by step, braving all difficulties and obstacles, becoming mature and stronger. While he still looked as ordinary, he had already grown to become the leader of China, a leader of humanity, and was the pillar that everyone was relying

on.

Looking at his sharp features, Chen Yao felt that he was even better looking the more she looked at him. Before the apocalypse, she had seen countless good-looking men, but it was hard to compare to the current Yue Zhong.

Through his experiences, Yue Zhong had come to possess a superior bearing. At the same time, with his Second Order God-Devil Body, his looks might not have changed much, but the aura he exuded, as though everything was within his control, was astonishingly charming and attractive.

After being silent for so long, Yue Zhong spoke, "I've decided! I will personally go and save them!"

When he suddenly spoke like that, Chen Yao was taken aback, and her heart skipped a beat, as her face flushed. She quickly tried to cover her embarrassment, "Yue Zhong, aren't they our enemies? We can just sit back and watch them be taken out by those freaks. The supremacists over there are truly irksome and disgusting."

Before the apocalypse, Germany still had its fair share of supremacists. However, their numbers were less than those in Japan. Nonetheless, there were still factions.

By the time the apocalypse happened, most of them had banded together, forming the new Kingdom of God. With the notion that the Aryans were still the most superior, they treated the rest of the world like garbage.

Every single one in the upper echelons was an Aryan, only a few talented and heaven-defying geniuses could join their ranks.

Yue Zhong had captured a number of them before, obtaining intel about the Nazi-leaning factions. However, the Kingdom of God was not as maniacal as Hitler, slaughtering people needlessly. They only looked down on the other races or used them as cannon fodder.

Yue Zhong stood up and spoke as he walked out, "No, it is now war between us and those monsters. If humanity still does not band together, we'll die out even faster. While the upper echelon of the Kingdom of God might be good people, their citizens are largely innocent. If I don't have the ability, then I have no choice. Now that I have the strength, I should be acting to save them. Furthermore, if we can bring them to China, our strength will increase. Chen Yao, go make preparations to receive the survivors from Europe."

"Understood!"

She looked at his leaving back with a slightly smitten look, at this moment, she felt that this man was truly so much suaver than any others.

"Too bad, he's Qing Wu's man." Chen Yao watched him leave, and she sighed. However, she also had another thought, "He already has so many women, yet Qing Wu does not care. It shouldn't be an issue if there's an additional me. Furthermore, if the 2 of us act together, we can control him and prevent the other women from getting a foothold."

In Europe, more Beastmen warriors poured out from the Gate of Hell.

They continued to plow through, making their way towards the Kingdom of God.

All around Europe, other than the Beastmen warriors, there was another terrifying existence, which was the zombies.

The Beastmen were truly terrifying and savage, the moment they met any zombie, they would just tear them apart.

100,000 zombies, a million zombies, they were all wiped out without an issue.

There was a huge church within Belgium, where a dozen intelligent zombies were gathered.

The leader among them, was a handsome intelligent evolved zombie, with a golden ponytail, looking just like any ordinary person, but his eyes were filled with a vicious glint, "Damn it!! Damn it!! Those beasts dared to kill my citizens!! I will not let them go."

This was one of the Kings of the evolved zombies in Europe, Zombie King Limo. His subordinates were over 15 million. He had also reached the Type 6 stage. Under his lead, there were 30 other Type 5 intelligent zombies, and over 300 Type 4 others.

Following the flow of time, the zombies were also evolving at an insane speed, with even more intelligent ones popping out. As for the first batch of evolved Mutant beings, like Yin Shuang, Amaterasu, and Limo, they were heaven-defying talents, and their speed was faster than the rest, the Type 6 realm was not considered much.

If the mutation of Earth continued, then these evolved zombies would definitely reach the Type 8 realm within a hundred years.

If it were any other planet or world, if a being wanted to reach the Type 8 realm, it would be incredibly difficult. Even in the 2nd World, many of the Saint Clan Ancestors had been stuck at the peak of Type 5 for so many centuries, not to mention Type 8.

However, on Earth, the various Saint Clan experts that had been stuck at the Type 5 realm broke through within a short time. This was the allure of the changing Earth.

Zombie King Limo had a cold look as he ordered, "Eden, Bertrand,... Imai, deploy your subordinates to surround those beasts. I want to teach them a good lesson. Let them know, in this world, we are the true lords of Earth"

The rest of the evolved zombies responded, "Yes, Your Majesty!"

After that order, the rest of the zombies immediately charged out, making their way for other locations.

The 15 million zombies quickly moved away from the paths of the Beastmen.

As for the Beastmen, they disregarded the zombies and continued making their way towards the Kingdom of God.

When the Beastmen had appeared out of the Gate of Hell, they had captured some people and obtained the position of the Kingdom of God. This time, they wanted to make use of a blitz attack to take out the resistance of the Kingdom of God.

Chapter 1034: The Miserable Plight of the Kingdom of God, Berlin's Fall!

Outside Berlin, the capital of Germany, countless cannons were deployed and the soldiers of the Kingdom of God were busy at work, setting up their defenses and fortifications.

The strong Beastmen warriors were charging fearlessly towards them, and amidst the bombardment of the rockets and cannons, many of them were blasted to pieces. However, it did not deter them in the slightest.

The current number of the Beastmen army was about 300,000, and other than the land troops, there were also the aerial forces. Both sides converged towards Berlin in a pronged-attack.

Berlin was considered the main base of the Kingdom of God, with plenty of top-grade equipment and weapons stored. The numerous cannons continued to fire at the incoming Beastmen. Their anti-air defenses were also spitting out fire without stop, punching into the aerial-type Beastmen.

About a dozen kilometers away, Taylor's expression was vicious, as he snarled out in hatred, "Is this the human base? The base of the damned Kingdom of God? Attack!! Kill them all!! Leave no one alive!"

The Beastmen army had actually been over half a million. However, due to the nuclear missile sent by the Kingdom of God, 200,000 weaker Beastmen had been wiped out, while their elites had suffered injuries. Even Taylor himself had been injured.

After all, it was not like their numbers were endless. As the Crown Prince of the Beast World, he could only command one elite force.

These originally-500,000 soldiers were his direct subordinates and his capital. Having lost 200,000, if he did not wipe out the

Kingdom of God to show for it, it would be hard to garner support back home.

As for the aftermath of the nuclear explosion, the 300,000 remaining Beastmen had been separated into 30 smaller units, attacking Berlin from 30 different directions.

The weakest of the Beastmen were at least at the Type 3 realm. To the many of the humans of Earth, it was a tough bottleneck, but it was nothing to them. Anyone of the Beastmen could take on any of the Kingdom of God elites with no problems.

"G3 had been breached!"

"The 3rd Armored Battalion had been wiped out!"

"The 4th Beast Transformation Battalion had been wiped out!"

"..."

The bad news just kept flowing into the main headquarters. All the upper echelon were pale by now, as they listened in despair.

"What do we do? Based on their speed, they will reach us within a day!"

"It's over! We're surrounded!! Evacuate!! It's still not too late to evacuate!!"

"Let's retreat into the underground base! We still have that!"

"Oh, God Almighty! Holy Spirit, please bless us!!"

"Why aren't they coming?! Why aren't China and America responding?!! If they're still taking their time, we're going to be wiped out!!"

"..."

By now, some of the Elders were beginning to become frantic, their voices rising. In the past, they had been enjoying themselves in pleasure and luxury, yet now, their behavior was pitiful, to say the least.

"No!! I don't want to die!! I will definitely live on!"

Seeing their defenses lines being breached one by one, and many of their elite soldiers being torn apart, one of the Elders swiftly left his location and made his way out.

Some others also exchanged looks and followed after.

One of them who chased after asked the first guy who left, "Lake, are you leaving?"

Lake swept a look at the dozen elders that followed him out, as he declared solemnly, "Of course! Jonas is insane!! If we stay here, there's only death!! We can still make it out now! Before those freaks reach here, this is our only chance! Leo, are you guys coming?"

Leo frowned and asked, "Where to?"

The Kingdom of God's headquarters had been meant to be the safest place on Earth. Now, the only 2 factions capable of resisting the foreign species were America and China.

There might still be other factions, but if they could not even deal with the zombie hordes, there was no hope there.

Lake spoke, "America! There's a chance with them! I'm heading there!!"

Leo replied, "Fine! We'll go together with you!"

The rest of the Elders nodded, deciding to head there.

America had been an ally of the west in the past, and since they were all white people, it was easier to communicate. Although China was considered the strongest faction now, the Aryans still could not let go of their superiority complex and were not willing to head to China.

Just as they were about to make their move, a dozen elite Kingdom of God soldiers appeared, wielding weapons aiming at the Elders, "Stop right there!"

Lake stared at the leader with a sunken expression, as he barked out, "Jerry, are you going to stand in our way?! Are you sick of living?"

Within the organization, an Elder's position was extremely high. It was not hard to deal with a simple commander."

Jerry had a dark look as well, "Great Elder had given us his orders, no one is to leave. Those who betray will be executed! Even if they are Elders!"

Hearing that, the rest of the Elders turned pale. They knew how powerful the Great Elder Jonas was. If they were to force their way, they would definitely be executed.

"Good! Good! Good! You can all die for me!!"

Lake's eyes suddenly turned dark, as though they could absorb the souls of those who peer into them, and lunged for the dozen elites in front of him.

The moment the black light flashed by, Jerry and his men all bled from their orifices, as they crumpled to the ground.

After displaying that powerful ability, Lake's complexion was white, as he swiftly fled.

The rest of the Elders were shaken back to their senses, as they hurried after him.

By the 2nd year of the Apocalypse, the powerful Kingdom of God had already researched many types of evolving serums. Most of the upper echelons had become Evolvers, with all sorts of strange abilities.

It was not just the Kingdom of God, even China and America had many of their officials becoming Evolvers. It was just that their combat power could not compare to the true warriors of the battlefield.

In order for a person to become an Evolver, only these 3 factions

could possibly possess the necessary research and resources.

The rest of the smaller factions scattered throughout the world had to rely on their system equipment to kill zombies and Mutant Beasts to become stronger. It was rare for an Evolver to appear. Of course, once they had one, they would be outstanding, heaven-defying geniuses, their potential far surpassing those that relied on serums.

Lake and the rest of the Elders quickly rushed towards where the Thunder Fighters were kept. They quickly embarked on a few different ones. Along the way, due to their statuses, many soldiers did not dare to stop them.

Only those soldiers who had been under Jonas's orders dared to obstruct them. Otherwise, these Elders were basically free to go anywhere.

Lake barked out at his pilot, "Quick, fly!!"

"Yes!"

The pilot did not dare to disobey and controlled the Thunder Fighter towards the sky.

One by one, a number of Thunder Fighters flew into the air, heading towards America.

"Are they fleeing?"

"Damn it, those higher-ups are escaping?!"

"They've abandoned us!!"

"Bastards!! Why the hell are we fighting then? For those bastards?!"

"Brothers!! You have died a wrongful death!!"

"Goodbye!!"

"..."

Seeing the dozens of Thunder Fighters fleeing, those soldiers on

the frontline instantly lost their morale, letting out curses and wails of despair.

If not for the Beastmen not keeping any captives, they would have since surrendered.

In the midst of their desperation, many soldiers directly put their weapons in their mouths and pulled the triggers.

"Fools!! Damn fools! Attack them!! Blast them out of space!!"

Within the command center, Jonas saw the fleeing Thunder Fighters and cursed out in rage.

He was smart, but he was not God, and could not expect that those Elders had killed their way out, and snatched the Thunder Fighters.

A number of guided missiles shot out from the base, heading for those Thunder Fighters.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

6 Thunder Fighters were hit directly, exploding, while the rest took the opportunity to soar further out of range.

At this moment, a quivering voice sounded out in the command center, "Not good! The 3rd National Guards have been breached, all Beast Transformation Warriors have been killed."

"What!!"

"It's over!!"

"We're finished!!"

"..."

Hearing this, everyone slumped in their chairs within the command center, their eyes filled with despair.

Even Jonas himself was pale, his calm countenance finally breaking.

The 3rd National Guards were the last defense line of the

Kingdom of God. Once they were breached, there was nothing else that could stand in the way of the Beastmen. The destruction of the Kingdom of God was imminent.

Jonas had a look of despair, "Are we over? Are we all going to die?"

(Author's notes: there are lesser words today, I know I owe a lot. My tenosynovitis is acting up again, and it's hard to type. I'll make it up! Sorry!)

Chapter 1035: Jonas's Choice!

In Berlin, the headquarters of the Kingdom of God was in a state of chaos. Many of the soldiers had already lost their will to fight. The news of the frontline defeat had already spread throughout the rest of the forces.

No matter how elite the soldiers were, they were still humans who knew fear and valued their lives. Once the number of deaths reached a certain number, they would also start to panic.

"It's over!"

"The frontlines were defeated!!"

"The damn government, they've grown fat living off us and now, they've fled!!"

"..."

The sounds of despair and fear rang out, as the soldiers quickly became savages, indulging in their darkest desires, as they raped, killed, set fire and caused Berlin to be plunged into further chaos and panic.

"Go to hell!! Go to hell!! Everyone can go to hell!! Especially the families of those damned old men, you can all go to hell. Haha!! Haha!! Trash!! Aren't you guys usually high and mighty?! Must have been fun stepping on us right?! Go to hell!! Hahaha!"

With one hand wielding a heavy machine gun, one burly soldier roared out in deranged anger, as he laughed out maniacally, firing out at family members of the Elders.

Children and women were among the victims, as they were punched full of holes under the relentless gunfire.

One exceptionally beautiful woman pleaded in fear, "Don't kill me!! Please!! I'm willing to do anything!! Please, don't kill me!!"

The soldier shot the woman a vicious look, as he fired off, "Go to

hell! Bitch!"

The bullets punched into the woman's body, as holes appeared and blood flowed profusely.

The face of the elite soldier was twisted and contorted, as he laughed out loud, "Haha! Haha! Haha!"

Right behind, a huge blade came slashing down, chopping the head off the soldier, as blood splattered out from the neck.

One Tiger-head Beastman looked at the fleeing humans with a cold look.

"Monster!!"

"The monsters are here!!"

"..."

Screams rang throughout Berlin, as the Beastmen warriors charged through the final defense, breaching into Berlin.

The Beastmen warriors were truly ferocious, killing anyone they saw. In barely minutes, a large number of survivors had died at their hands.

"No!!!! Don't kill my daughter, please!!! Please!!! Kill me!! Let my daughter go!!"

At a corner of Berlin, one beautiful housewife grabbed hold of her adorable daughter, as she pleaded with a horse-face Beastman.

A vicious look flashed past the horse-face Beastman, and he did not seem to care about the pleas. He laughed out cruelly, raising the blade in his hands, slashing down in front of the despairing of the housewife.

In the sky, a sudden beam of light shot down, striking the Beastman, directly vaporizing his head.

"This is...? Is God finally helping us?! We're saved!! We're saved!!"

Seeing the horse-face Beastman's death, the housewife cried tears of joy, as she lifted her head and saw a huge battleship of over 10,000m in length. It seemed to cover the entire city, and more beams shot out continuously.

As the beams fired down, the Beastmen warriors invading Berlin were instantly taken out.

Even those soldiers that had gone insane were also punished by the beams.

"We're saved!!"

"It's God!! God has sent people to save us!"

"We're saved!!"

"Glorious God, I will serve you with all my heart and soul!!"

"..."

The numerous survivors got down on their knees, crying out with tears of joy. They lifted their heads at the Battleship that was obviously not manufactured of human hands or on Earth and were filled with excitement. Many of them had started to treat the person from the Battleship as an envoy and their hope.

The Protector Battleship flew slowly over Berlin, as it continued to fire out its beams as though raining judgment, wiping out the Beastmen warriors.

Inside the command center of the Kingdom of God, Jonas caught sight of the Protector Battleship, and his eyes were filled with a complicated gaze, "They're finally here."

Jonas and the rest of the ordinary survivors were different, he had guessed who the owner of the Battleship was. He had hoped, and yet, not hoped for Yue Zhong to come.

He looked to the Protector Battleship and frowned, "How come we don't have information on this helicarrier? It seems that our intelligence network is truly too lacking."

The Kingdom of God had spies in China, but under Floxenia's ability to read minds, they had all been uncovered and executed.

Under her Floxenia's efforts, all the higher ranking officials who were spies were all cleansed, leaving behind a few empty positions. No spy had managed to escape her detection.

Taylor stared in horror at the approaching Battleship, watching it slaughter his subordinates and his face fell, as he grabbed a communicator device and yelled, "What the hell is that?! Evacuate!! Evacuate now!!"

Upon receiving that order, all the Beastmen warriors inside Berlin quickly turned tail and poured out of the city.

One green-winged hawkman flew up to Taylor and said, "Your Majesty! Let our Green Hawk Tribe handle this! We will destroy that battleship!"

Taylor's face changed, as his eyes turned bloodshot like an enraged animal. He kept his gaze fixed on the battleship while breathing raggedly, "No! That machine is too strong!! Even if you Green Hawk Tribe were to go up, there's no guarantee of destroying it! Evacuate!! Now!!"

The Green Hawk Tribe was one of the final trump cards in Taylor's hands, his strongest air force. If they were to be wiped out as well, then his entire military might would suffer. He had seen the terrifying capabilities of the Protector Battleship, and he was not willing to send them to needless death.

With a ferocious look, he thought, "This time, I've been too arrogant. I had thought that Earth had backward technology, other than the nuclear weapons, no weapon could pose a threat to us. It's my fault. However, I will not make this mistake again! Next time, I swear to wipe out you damned humans, and turn Europe into our, the Beastmen's, land!!"

In truth, his thinking was not wrong. Other than the nuclear

missiles, the technology of the Kingdom of God was under their control.

Had Yue Zhong not appeared, the millions of survivors in Berlin would have fallen to the Beastmen. Only a few could possibly survive.

Onboard the Protector Battleship, Yue Zhong watched the retreating Beastmen and frowned, "Are they retreating? Their reaction is truly fast, and they cannot be underestimated. After this loss, they will definitely become harder to deal with."

Such enemies that knew how to retreat when they were at a disadvantage, coupled with their strength, was even more of a threat compared to the zombies. Their numbers might be lesser than the zombies, but they were capable of much more destruction and damage.

The first time the Kingdom of God utilized the nuclear missiles to wipe out more than 100,000 Beastmen warriors was the only time it had been effective. The subsequent ones barely took out a few dozen thousands.

While the nuclear weapons were devastating, they had their weaknesses, it was that they could be destroyed. Once a Type 6 expert were to stand far enough and fire a powerful shot, they could detonate the missile before it even posed a threat.

If it were to detonate over a dozen kilometers away, its might would at most injure some Type 6 experts, but not enough to kill them.

All of a sudden, Yue Zhong's image appeared on the display inside the Kingdom of God's control room.

Yue Zhong swept them a glance, announcing indifferently, "I'm Yue Zhong."

This faction had pressured Yue Zhong so much at the initial period of the apocalypse, as compared to now, where he could

meet them straight on. The millions of lives in Berlin were in his hands, as long as he left, they would be killed by the Beastmen. Because of the death of the 1st Apostle Edward, there were no more experts to protect them.

Jonas looked to Yue Zhong and thanked him sincerely, "I'm Great Elder Jonas of the Kingdom of God, thank you for coming to aid us."

Chapter 1036: The Beastmen battles the Zombies!

Yue Zhong looked at Jonas, "Great Elder Jonas, Berlin is no longer inhabitable. I cannot stay here for long. What are your plans?"

One of the Elders immediately shouted in despair, "No! Yue Zhong, you can't leave! Once you leave, the millions of survivors will be killed by those damned Beastmen. You can't leave us like this! Please, stay, power and women will be yours as you wish!"

They had just felt the true threat of death and were shaken. They did not want to be forced to hide and live underground for the rest of their lives.

Yue Zhong eyed the elder coldly, without saying anything, then turned to Jonas.

Jonas could feel Yue Zhong's gaze, as he sighed in his heart. Yue Zhong was China's leader, after all, and could not stay here for long. The elder had been frightened out of his wits, that was why he had spoken out of line.

He sighed in his heart, "Edward, how did you die? If only you had not perished..."

Edward, Leo, Yue Zhong, they were all peak experts on Earth and were the core figures of the 3 large factions. With Edward's death, the morale of the Kingdom of God had fallen drastically, and the 12 Apostles were fractured. 8 of them had fallen, while 3 ran, with no news.

Jonas maintained silent for a short while, before speaking slowly, "Yue Zhong, we hope to migrate our people to China, and hope that you can accept us."

"WHAT?!"

"NO!!"

"Jonas, are you insane?!"

"We are the great Aryans! How can we move to China?!"

"..."

The moment Jonas spoke, all the Elders went into an uproar, vehemently objecting.

Most of them were supremacists and believed the Aryans to be the superior race, while all other races were lesser. Especially the Asians, they were treated as the most barbaric and backward. They truly looked down on the Asians.

Within the troops, even the Asian soldiers were not treated equally as their European and African counterparts. There were few Asian commanders.

Now that Jonas was saying to move the people over to China, they could not accept it. If it became reality, their citizens would definitely be under China's rule. They would not allow that to happen.

One Elder, Barbett, stared at Jonas, "Jonas, you're getting muddleheaded. The Kingdom of God does not need someone like you anymore, you should stand down."

With a sweep, all the elite soldiers within the command center gathered beside Barbett.

These were peak-Type 3 experts, fully armed and equipped. There were even 2 Type 4 elites that stared coldly at Jonas.

The rest of the officials stared in shock.

Jonas was one of the 3 figureheads of the Kingdom of God. His position and authority were high. In normal times, no one dared to question his words. However, the decision to migrate the survivors to China went against all their beliefs and infringed on their benefits. Barbett thus stood up and gained supporters.

Yue Zhong swept the traitors a glance and laughed lightly, "Jonas, do you need my help to cleanse these pieces of trash?"

Having lost Edward, the guards of the Kingdom of God were less powerful, and while they might have a few experts, Yue Zhong just had to send some Type 5 experts and they would be dealt with.

Jonas shook his head, "Leader Yue Zhong, it's not necessary. I can deal with them myself. Eiji, take them out."

At this time, there was one official who looked lost, with a scholarly appearance, suddenly showed a vicious look. He exploded out like an unsheathed sword, and with a single wave, a number of transparent silk shot towards Barbett and the rest.

With a number of bright flashes, Barbett and the rest were instantly sliced up in a shower of blood.

In an instant, all those involved in the uprising were sliced into many pieces.

Seeing how they were dealt with, the rest of the officials turned pale, and quickly closed their mouths, afraid that they might puke.

Jonas looked on with a hint of sorrow. While they had been supremacists, each and every one of them had been talents, and they had prestige in the Kingdom of God. Now that so many had been killed by Jonas, their authority would take a huge hit. However, if he did not do so, then Yue Zhong would leave, abandoning the millions of survivors.

"Very good, Jonas, organize your people and head to this region."

Yue Zhong chuckled, and the images shifted suddenly to the outside of Berlin. A huge floating fortress appeared in front of the city, and it was the Storm Battleship.

It was the largest battleship that Yue Zhong had, and it could accommodate over a few hundred thousand people.

Yue Zhong had obtained 3 Type 7 nuclei from the Saint Lands,

and just a single one could power the Storm Battleship.

With that, the Storm Battleship could make trips freely, as long as it was not forced to use the Raytheon Cannon, it would not face a power shortage issue.

Jonas eyed the Storm Battleship with a complicated gaze, "What a huge battleship. China's capital is truly vast and shocking. How the hell did this Yue Zhong get all these treasures? If only he was Aryan."

Jonas was decisive and quickly passed down orders, getting the survivors in Berlin to board the Storm Battleship.

The bulk of the KoG's might had been destroyed by about 90%, however, their government was still intact. Thus, they quickly organized the survivors to embark on the Battleship.

Yue Zhong observed from afar, noting that those survivors grabbed their belongings and boarded in an orderly fashion. He felt a little sour, "These guys are truly orderly, compared to our Chinese people."

If it were in China, if there were nobody holding a gun or whip, the survivors would definitely fight to be first, squeezing all the way to the front, causing a disorderly mess. There was a huge gap.

Yue Zhong thought silently, "However, in my generation, as long as I enforce things, our Chinese people will definitely improve."

As the Berlin survivors were organizing an evacuation, the Beastmen were also escaping from Berlin, heading towards France.

After witnessing the might of those humans, Taylor knew that there was no way of wiping them out in the short term, and he chose a tactical retreat, turning France into their Beastmen base.

All around the Gate of Hell in France, there were still the 50,000 forces left behind by Taylor to guard the Gate.

He thought viciously, "Damn humans. They actually had such a

powerful trump card. However, this is just a small portion of our actual might. Once the main force invades, Earth will be ours."

The Beastmen Kingdom was also a powerful faction, ruling over a planet of their own. Taylor and his 550,000 soldiers were just the vanguards for the actual Kingdom.

The Type 6 expert of the Green Hawk Tribe suddenly swoop down, reporting, "It's bad, Your Majesty, we're surrounded."

"What?! We're surrounded?"

Taylor frowned, and soared into the air, looking out towards the distance, and his face changed.

They discovered a whole sea of zombies making their way towards them, without end in sight. There were easily more than 15 million zombies, and they had surrounded Taylor and his forces entirely.

The zombies were everywhere, and if it wasn't for the expert of the Green Hawk Tribe scouting, the Beastmen forces might have not even discovered that they were surrounded.

A cold glint flashed in Taylor's eyes, as he ordered, "Break out!! We have to kill our way out as quickly as possible."

Under his orders, the Beastmen soldiers quickly shot towards one particular direction.

The combat ability of the Beastmen was terrifying, within a few breaths, they had torn a path through the zombies, killing any that got in their way.

Countless zombies were swiftly ripped apart by the Beastmen warriors, their blood flowing everywhere.

Soon, a bloody path was carved out of the zombies, as the Beastmen warriors continued to slice them as easily as cakes.

In front of the Type 3 Beastmen warriors, these ordinary zombies were incapable of doing anything.

Chapter 1037: Sneak-attack on Taylor!

As the zombies were being killed in large numbers, the horde suddenly split in the middle. Many Hunters and Devourers appeared, charging towards those Beastmen warriors.

A tiger-head Beastman waved his blade around, sending out beams that sliced through numerous zombies.

All of a sudden, a tongue shot out explosively, like a powerful cannon as it struck the head of the tiger-head Beastman, directly blasting it apart.

A bull-head Beastman was waving his bone mace as it directly crushed a dozen zombies into meat paste.

The horde then suddenly parted, and a Devourer pounced out, lunging for the bull-head Beastman, biting off his head in one snapping motion.

Within the horde, the tank-like L5s charged through the ranks, waving their massive fists as they pummeled Beastmen into meat paste as well.

As the elite zombies continued to charge forward in a frenzy, more Beastmen were directly wiped out, preventing them from even reacting or fleeing.

At the same time, the zombies on either side of them continued to converge in on the center.

In the skies, multitudes of aerial zombies pounced downwards at the Beastmen warrior within the hordes.

Taylor roared out with bloodshot eyes, "Attack!!"

The aerial Beastmen soared towards the skies, clashing with those winged-zombies. Many of the zombies were torn apart by the stronger Beastmen, and their body parts falling to the ground.

In the skies, the winged-zombies were too many, and they made

use of their numbers to devour quite a number of aerial Beastmen, tearing them to bits and pieces.

On the ground, a number of Type 6 experts around Taylor also joined in the battle.

The moment they entered the fray, they were like meat grinders that tore through the evolved zombies. Under their joint attacks, numerous evolved zombies were taken out, increasing the momentum of the Beastmen.

Both sides got into a cruel slaughter, with the death toll climbing every second. In fact, the number of deaths was in the dozens of thousands every passing minute.

In the clouds, Yue Zhong stood quietly, staring fixedly at the Beastmen Prince, Taylor, "Good, fight it out among themselves. I can find a chance to wipe out that fellow."

While Jonas was organizing the people of Berlin up into the Storm Battleship, Yue Zhong left his Protector Battleship over Berlin, while he himself flew over to the intense battle between the Beastmen and zombies.

The moment those 2 armies clashed, Yue Zhong had obtained the information through the satellites. Furthermore, he had gained an important information, which was that Prince Taylor had the God and Devil Imprint.

With the Second Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong could see far, noticing Taylor even when he was over a dozen kilometers away.

Once the top experts guarding Taylor left his side, the Beastmen seemed to have found their morale and momentum, tearing through the horde.

Regardless of whichever evolved zombie that appeared, they would be killed by the Type 6 experts instantaneously.

In order to prevent the Beastmen from advancing, the hundreds of massive L5s appeared suddenly.

"You can all fucking die!!"

One Type 6 Elephant-Beastman of over 8m in height, wielding a 10m bone, leaped up into the sky. He reappeared in front of one L5 and swung his massive bone, directly crushing the L5.

After the Type 6 Elephant-Beastman killed the L5 in a single hit, he turned around and dashed through the crowd in a series of shadows, slamming the heads of the various L5s viciously.

In a matter of minutes, 20 L5s were already destroyed by the Elephant-Beastman.

The rest of the Type 6 experts also charged out at the other L5s, that were considered invincible enemies to most humans, and tore through their heads like it was nothing.

In a few breaths, all the L5s had been wiped out by the group of Type 6 experts, with no one able to stop them.

King Limo, who was hidden deep within the horde, watched on in shock. His face fell as he thought, "Fuck! These damn Beastmen are truly strong! I just lack time!! If only I had enough time, my zombies will evolve and become even more perfect and stronger!! Now, even if I use numbers, it's hard to hold them back."

The trump card of the hundreds of L5s had been dealt with by those Type 6 Beastmen warriors. King Limo did not dare send them out recklessly.

Although the L5s were nothing much to those Type 6 Beastmen, they were truly one of the core trump cards of the zombie army and were extremely useful in many situations.

Led by the Type 6 experts, the Beastmen army continued to carve a bloody path through the zombie horde, making their way forward.

"Finally!!"

Within the Beastmen forces, Prince Taylor saw that the distance

out of the horde was barely about a dozen meters and felt relieved. They would be able to extract themselves from this siege in just a few moments and could escape.

The zombies were after all in the tens of millions. While Prince Taylor was confident of his strength, he dared not be arrogant to think that his forces of 200,000 could wipe out an enemy more than 70 times their number.

While the Type 6 Beastmen were strong, they had their limits as well and were made of flesh and blood. They could feel exhaustion as well, and once they were trapped within the horde, they would still fall.

"Are they almost out? Very good, time for me to send you to hell."

In the air, the Scarlet Reaper, inserted with the Heart of Hope, had already transformed into the Raytheon Cannon form under Yue Zhong's control.

Countless light sparks converged at the mouth of the cannon, and in a flash, a huge beam of over 1 km in width shot down from the skies, blasting towards Taylor's location.

At the split second before it fired, Taylor had felt a powerful sense of doom. He channeled the atmospheric energy and waved his hands, causing a round, jade-like plate to appear. A bright scarlet radiance then enveloped him, covering him entirely.

Also, he tapped his foot, transforming into a blur as he tried to flee towards the distance. He was unsure of the danger, but leaving his original location was the best way to avoid death.

The moment he moved, the powerful beam struck the center of the Beastmen forces.

The dozens of Type 6 Beastmen experts were instantly vaporized into dust, their life force flowing into Yue Zhong.

At the same time, over 2,000 Beastmen had been turned into dust, leaving behind a massive crater in the ground.

However, after that strike, the Type 6 nucleus inside the Scarlet Reaper cracked.

"He did not die!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, as he stared past the dust and into the crater.

Within the crater, Taylor's state was disheveled, his clothes tattered and his armor broken, while the round jade-like plate in his hand was broken. However, he did not die, instead, he was still standing strong.

"I need to take him out!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong controlled the Scarlet Reaper to shoot forwards at a speed of Mach-7, appearing right in front of Taylor as he sent out a vicious punch.

"Scram!!"

Taylor roared out in rage within the crater. The runes on his back glowed brightly, allowing strength to flow into his body. He became 10m-tall, and his visage was that of a wyrm-head while exuding a dark energy.

Taylor was at the initial-Type 7 realm, after transforming into that huge wyrm-head creature, his strength rose to the mid-Type 7 realm. He sent out a powerful fist at the Scarlet Reaper.

When both fists met, a powerful blast occurred, as the resulting shockwave shot outwards in all directions.

Taylor was sent flying over a dozen meters by the recoil, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

As for the Scarlet Reaper, it did not even budge, obviously stronger.

While Taylor was knocked back, 16 blood radiances lunged at him from behind, coiling around him, and a huge suction exerted on him, absorbing his blood and life force.

Taylor was shocked and fearful, immediately channeling his inner strength to force the turbulent blood, "Strong!! What kind of monster is this??! I need to escape!! Otherwise, I'd be killed!"

Having made that decision, Taylor turned and shot towards the skies, intending to flee.

The 16 blood radiances tightened and coiled once more around him.

"Break!!"

He roared out in frustration, pushing with all his might, as he caused a powerful air blade to slice through the blanket of blood.

Unfortunately, the blood radiance rejoined almost instantly, wrapping Taylor within, and began to absorb his blood essence at a rapid speed.

Within a breath's time, his blood essence was almost absorbed cleanly by the terrifying blood radiance.

Chapter 1038: Killing Taylor!

Taylor's face fell, as he channeled his energy frantically, causing a surge of the dark energy to envelop him, blocking the invasive blood radiance, "Shit!! What the hell is this?! How come it's so insidious!!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong stepped out of the Scarlet Reaper, his eyes flashing coldly. He then shot into the blood radiance, his fist blasting out at the head of the monstrous Taylor, using his Second Order God-Devil Body's strength.

Since Taylor was in his transformed state, he could sense the thick killing intent the moment Yue Zhong got within range of himself. He was currently being immobilized by the blood radiance, and could only send his own fist towards Yue Zhong's.

The seemingly small human fist came in contact with that large Wyrms-head Beastman.

A powerful force exploded outward upon impact, and the transformed body of Taylor began to crack and break apart, revealing his true form. At the same time, he spat out a mouthful of blood due to the recoil.

There was a sense of shock and fear in his eyes, "Impossible?! How did he break my Wyrms-Transformation!!"

When Yue Zhong had controlled the Scarlet Reaper, it was at most a match for Taylor. He did not expect Yue Zhong's true body to be so much more powerful.

Since Yue Zhong possessed the Second Order God-Devil Body, in terms of hardness, he was definitely stronger than the Scarlet Reaper. He was evolving towards a perfect state, after all.

Taylor's body could not withstand the aftermath of the blow, and his blood essence continued to flow out of him without his control. It was then absorbed by the blood radiance.

"No! Don't kill me!! No!!!"

He screamed out with fear in his eyes, as his body quickly became a shriveled corpse.

With his death, Yue Zhong waved his hand and grabbed Taylor's right hand that had the God and Devil Imprint.

"Your Majesty!!"

"Your Majesty!!"

When they witnessed Taylor's death, the Type 6 experts of the Green Hawk Tribe and Dragonhawk Tribe roared out with grief and fury, charging madly over. In an instant, they had reached Yue Zhong and slashed out at him.

"2 fools!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 2 Type 6 experts, his eyes flashing coldly, as he reached out with his hands and slapped out with lightning speed. The 2 experts felt as though Mount Tai had struck them in the back.

Both of them spat out a mouthful of blood, as they shot down from mid-air, slamming into the ground.

In front of Yue Zhong, these Type 6 experts were easy targets.

Unless over 20 half-step Type 7 experts appeared, none of these foreign species were Yue Zhong's match right now.

"I'm in need of 2 slaves right now, the 2 of you can become my slaves!"

With a cold glint in his eyes, Yue Zhong slapped out at them once more, suppressing them and knocking them out.

He then sent out 2 Type 6 Puppet Runes into their heads.

When they awoke, they quickly got to their knees and declared with respect, "Green Hawk Li and Dragon Hawk Feng greet Master!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 2 tribes that were engaged with the winged-zombies and pointed while asking, "Are you able to control your subordinates?"

Every one of them was a strong warrior, capable of tearing a fighter jet apart. If they could all come under Yue Zhong, his might would increase on a terrifying level.

Green Hawk Li replied, "Master, we can. However, once the experts of the Kingdom descend upon this world, experts more powerful than us would appear. They will betray us and stab us in the back. Furthermore, they will not listen to you, but our command."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "Kingdom? Before those experts arrive, are you able to get your soldiers to coexist with the humans in the meantime?"

` Green Hawk Li replied, "Can!"

Yue Zhong ordered, "In that case, lead them away from the battlefield!"

"Yes!"

Both of them immediately soared into the sky, and arrived near their subordinates, letting out a sharp howl.

The warriors of both tribes quickly gathered towards the 2 of them, and carved out a path of slaughter through the zombies, arriving beside Yue Zhong.

Those winged-zombies were apparently weaker than the Beastmen tribes and were unable to stop them from leaving.

When the members of the 2 tribes landed near Yue Zhong, they all shot him gazes filled with animosity but did not make any moves.

The Beastmen were a disciplined race, and proud of their elite warrior status. As long as the order was given, even if the lower-

ranking warriors knew that it was a suicide charge, they would obey. If the order was to stand down, even if their hated enemy was right in front of them, they could suppress their enmity.

While most of them did not know how Green Hawk Li and Dragon Hawk Feng had been subdued by Yue Zhong, they stood by obediently waiting for orders.

Yue Zhong looked at them and ignored their apparent animosity. He took one step into the air and shot towards the zombie horde.

In a few breaths, he had arrived above them.

Yue Zhong spoke in a resounding voice, "Zombie King hiding within your horde, I am China's leader, Yue Zhong. I know you can hear me. I want to speak with you."

King Limo's eyes flashed with a cold light, and he could clearly see Yue Zhong in the sky through the zombies he controlled.

He ordered viciously, "Talk? I, the great Zombie King Limo, will never negotiate with anyone. Go to hell!!"

The countless winged-zombies that were engaged in slaughter with the rest of the Beastmen warriors quickly soared into the sky, forming a huge cloud as they attacked Yue Zhong.

"Fool! You're seeking death! Die!"

Yue Zhong eyed the incoming thousands of winged zombies and he frowned, pointing at the zombies.

The 16 blood radiance revolving around him immediately shot forward, turning into a huge blood mist that enveloped the winged zombies.

The moment the blood radiance transformed, its surface area became incomparably large, but its defense and offense were multiple times weaker. Against those zombies, however, it was more than enough.

The blanket of blood swept over all the zombies, and

immediately, the winged zombies fell like rain. Every single drop of blood within them had been absorbed cleanly, and they were all emaciated and killed within seconds.

After all, even if they had turned into zombies, there were still areas where there was fluid within them. Most of it was in their brains, and the moment they were sucked out of them, these zombies would also perish.

"That's insane!! Is he still human?! How come he has such a perverted and overpowered ability?!"

When King Limo saw how Yue Zhong wiped out over thousands of his winged subordinates in a breath, he could not help but recoil in horror. With a thought, the remaining winged zombies quickly separated and spread out.

If Yue Zhong continued like this, then all of King Limo's aerial forces would be wiped out within seconds.

Yue Zhong watched the thousands of corpses drop out of the sky, his face pleased, "Strong. This Blood Manipulation ability is truly strong! It is one of the strongest methods to deal with crowds right now. With this, a small horde is no longer an issue to me."

One of the strongest points of this secret technique was that it consumed very little energy. Compared to the God-Devil Flame, which could also wipe out thousands of zombies in a second, or even hundreds of thousands, it would take him almost $\frac{1}{3}$ of his energy, sometimes even half.

As for the Blood Manipulation ability, there was practically no consumption on his end. Instead, the more the blood radiance absorbed, the stronger it grew.

Having gotten a clearer grasp of his Blood Manipulation ability, Yue Zhong stared down with a fierce gaze, "Shall I wipe them all out?!"

In the end, he retracted his killing intent. He knew that with his

ability, it was possible to wipe out over a million but to deal with all 15 million would be tough, especially since they can escape.

Furthermore, if they were to scatter, then the effectiveness of the blood radiance would diminish. At the end of the day, Yue Zhong was hoping to utilize them to wear down on the Beastmen warriors' strength.

Yue Zhong knew that on Earth, the human factions were the weakest right now, at the bottom of the food chain. Without utilizing all they had, it was hard to survive once the Gates of Hell were to open fully.

Even with his 12 Protector Battleships, if he were to face the incoming Beastmen Kingdom, there was no guarantee of defeating the enemy all by himself, not to mention the addition of the Dino-race, the Aliens, and the various other foreign species.

Chapter 1039: Negotiations with King Limo!

Having experienced Yue Zhong's combat power, there was some movement in the horde, as a number of big-headed zombies with large eyes the size of fists came up to Yue Zhong, speaking in a raspy voice, "I'm Zombie King Limo, despicable human. What do you intend to say to the great King Limo?"

Yue Zhong immediately recognized that this zombie was most likely a puppet used to project King Limo's voice.

"What an arrogant zombie."

Yue Zhong sneered in his heart, but extended a smile towards the zombie, "Great King Limo, I hope to work together with you, and prevent the Beastmen Kingdom from invading us."

He continued, "The Gates of Hell have appeared in France, and there would be even more Beastmen warriors descending upon Europe as time passes. In order to expand their territory, they would definitely attack you. I hope to cooperate with you, and resist the invasion."

King Limo sneered coldly, replying in a raspy voice, "The Beastmen are our enemies, your human race is also our enemy. Since this is the case, how could we possibly cooperate."

As an evolved zombie, King Limo was extremely clear that the zombies and humans were polar opposites, and there could only be one victor between them.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and immediately offered Europe, "Of course it's possible. As long as King Limo is willing to work with me, I can transport all human survivors in Europe over to China, while recognizing Europe to be yours, esteemed King Limo!!"

Yue Zhong's faction was based in China, other than the region over there, there was no need to expand to Europe. In fact, he had already deemed Europe to be a lost cost, thus, he had no qualms

using it as a bargaining chip.

"Oh!" When King Limo heard that, he could not help but be moved slightly. The Kingdom of God had been an eyesore to him. They had wiped out many of his zombies while resisting him from absorbing even more zombies into his power. If they were to be removed, then he could move freely and bring more zombies under his control.

He then gazed at Yue Zhong coldly, "What do you want then?"

"Europe's equipment and resources, as well as the positions of the remaining humans." Yue Zhong directly stated his intentions, "Europe has technology and resources that your zombie clan does not need, but to us humans, they are important and necessary. As long as you let us take those, we will leave Europe."

King Limo pondered for a while, before nodding, "Ok, that's no problem."

Resources, equipment, and technology were important to humans. To King Limo, however, it was just rubbish. While most of the zombies were already evolving some form of intelligence, they could at most utilize an ordinary rifle, or those machine-guns on vehicles. It would be a stretch to get them to work on the resources and technology.

Since King Limo agreed, Yue Zhong grinned and flipped his hand, revealing a Gauss rifle, "Esteemed King Limo, I wonder if you're willing to engage in a trade with me? I'm willing to sell you Gauss rifles in bulk. Each one just requires a Type 3 Mutant Beast nucleus."

King Limo swept the Gauss Rifle a glance, and asked coldly, "How powerful is this thing"?"

Yue Zhong readied it and fired at the Beastmen warriors below.

With a bright flash of light, there were multiple holes in the numerous Beastmen warriors. In that single shot, over 30 of them

had been killed.

King Limo showed a hint of satisfaction, but continued coldly, "It's not too bad, but it isn't worth a Type 3 nucleus."

Yue Zhong frowned slightly and understood. To humans, while these weapons were powerful and could deal with foreign species, useful to even ordinary soldiers, they were useless to the zombies that made use of their own bodies. Unless there was a large supply of them, it would not change much to the battle tactics and combat style of the zombies.

Yue Zhong chuckled, and retrieved a glass vial of a Type 6 Mutant Beast's blood essence, "In that case, how about the blood essence of a Type 6 Mutant Beast?"

"Type 6 Mutant Beast blood essence?" Hearing that, King Limo's eyes widened with greed and haste, quickly replying, "I'm interested! Of course, I'm interested! What do you want in exchange?"

Zombies required swallowing blood essences to evolve. Yin Shuang's evolution path was of a higher level, requiring her to consume Mutant Beast nuclei.

To King Limo, the Type 6 Mutant Beast blood essence was enough to bolster its personal strength.

On Earth, there were currently already some Mutant Beasts that had evolved to the Type 6 realm. However, King Limo had not even killed a Type 5 Mutant Beast before, not to mention a Type 6 one. He was willing to pay any price for the blood essence in front of him.

Yue Zhong chuckled at the look of anxiety, "Esteemed King Limo, if you want this, you need to offer something that can move my heart."

King Limo's eyes flashed with greed, "I can give you 300,000 ordinary nuclei, 20,000 Type 2 nuclei, 3,000 Type 3 nuclei and 20

Type 4 nuclei in exchange for that."

Since he controlled over a dozen million zombies, all the Mutant Beasts within the zombies' territory had been torn apart and consumed. King Limo himself had slaughtered his fair share of them, obtaining many nuclei in the process.

He was not like Yin Shuang that was able to consume nuclei to evolve. They were basically no different from rubble to him. However, he knew the value of it, thus he had collected all that he came across.

"Quite a number!"

Yue Zhong thought to himself, but he shook his head outwardly, "Not enough!"

King Limo gritted his teeth, "Twice the amount!!"

Yue Zhong shook his head still, "Not enough!"

The veins on the ordinary zombie were bulging by now, as King Limo roared out, "Thrice the amount!"

The current amount he had offered was all that King Limo had, and he could not help but feel some heartache. Although he had no use for the nuclei, he could guess that with further evolution, the nuclei might be of use in the future.

Yue Zhong continued indifferently, "Not enough!"

King Limo's eyes were bloodshot as he stared at Yue Zhong. If it was not for him being helpless against Yue Zhong, he would have wiped him out, "Yue Zhong! Those are already all I have, what the hell do you want?!"

Currently, King Limo could not deal with Yue Zhong, nor could Yue Zhong do anything to him. Because of this strange equilibrium, both sides could negotiate.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "I need some treasures from you. You have already traversed Europe for a long time, there should be some

artifacts with you right? They're useless to you but extremely important to me. If you let me take a look, and as long as there are some that I can utilize, I will hand the blood essence to you."

Ever since the world changed, the various strange artifacts of the past had slowly begun to surface. Yue Zhong had obtained the pearl within an old territory of China. However, it had been consumed by Yin Shuang. He believed that it was the same in Europe. Since King Limo had been in control over wide areas of Europe, it was likely that he had obtained similar artifacts.

King Limo frowned, as he stared warily at Yue Zhong. He seemed to hesitate for a long while, before replying slowly, "Wait, I'll go get them!"

Yue Zhong turned around to watch the struggling Beastmen warriors.

After losing the lead of the Type 6 experts, the rest of the warriors were struggling to survive. There was no way of breaking out of the horde, and while they killed over thousands of zombies every passing moment, there were casualties on their end as well. The horde was getting denser and denser, threatening to consume them.

Inside such an endless horde, even a Type 6 expert would perish. The 200,000 Beastmen were destined to perish.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong sighed, "The combat style of the zombies is truly frightening. Without any large area-of-effect weapons or the advantage of territory, they could be considered truly invincible."

Everything in the universe had their bane. While the Beastmen warriors were strong and had slaughtered the Kingdom of God, in comparison, the Kingdom of God had been able to make use of fortifications and firepower to hold back the zombies.

Of course, if it was not for Taylor being over anxious to occupy

Berlin, he would not have suffered so greatly. Had he utilized the 200,000 Beastmen properly, together with their Type 6 experts, with time, it was definitely possible to eliminate all 15 million zombies. On the flip side, the Beastmen warriors were more threatening to the humans.

Soon after, a huge L4 walked out of the horde, carrying a large chest. It poured the contents out on the ground, as treasures spilled out in front of Yue Zhong.

Chapter 1040: Heaven-Piercing Bow!

Yue Zhong narrowed his eyes and saw that within the pile of treasures, there were swords, shields bows, and all sorts of items that were clearly not of Earth's technology.

King Limo threw out the items, fixing his gaze upon Yue Zhong and the glass vial in his right hand, "These are all I have! You can choose any 3 items, in exchange for the Type 6 blood essence!"

Yue Zhong swept a gaze on the items, not batting an eyelid, "Just give me everything. If you do so, I can lower the requested nuclei by half."

King Limo rolled his eyes, and shook his head, "No way. 4 items, plus half the earlier amount of nuclei. That's my bottom line. If you're not interested, forget it."

King Limo knew that Yue Zhong was interested in these items, thus he wanted to raise the price. His original intentions were to throw them all to Yue Zhong anyway, he did not care. After all, it was more important to raise his strength.

Yue Zhong lowered his head and nodded, "Fine!"

After that, he waved his hand and threw the Type 6 blood essence over to the zombie controlled by King Limo.

The King Limo-controlled zombie was frightened and quickly went to hug the glass vial, eyeing it with obvious greed, passing it to an L5 beside him.

The L5 quickly backed away upon retrieving the vial.

Yue Zhong descended, looking at the pile of broken and ancient-looking weapons.

Those ancient weapons all had strange runes engraved on them. With the passing of time, most of them had already rotten, their radiance largely dimmed, as though rust had claimed all of their

previous glory. Many of them were also left with only the hilt or so. At a glance, they seemed more like trash rather than treasures.

Zombie King Limo was not an idiot. He did, in fact, obtain many ancient items, but they were largely useless. If there were any real treasures, he would keep it for himself instead of bringing it out.

He eyed Yue Zhong from afar and laughed coldly, "What a fool. Those items were truly hard to obtain. However, that was when they had been created. Now, they're just mostly a bunch of rusted waste."

Yue Zhong came up to the pile of rubbish, waving his hand and keeping all the items into his Storage Ring.

Zombie King Limo spoke out coldly, "Yue Zhong, what are you doing? Didn't we agree on 4 items?"

In fact, he did not really care for those items. However, he was not willing to let Yue Zhong take all the items away.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and took out 200 Gauss Rifles and placed them on the ground, "These 200 rifles, for these items, should be enough, no?"

A hint of pleasure flashed in King Limo's eyes, but he maintained his snideness, "Alright then. Since I, Zombie King Limo, am magnanimous, I'll forgo it this time."

After all, he had seen the lethality of the Gauss Rifles himself, as long as he assigned 200 Evolved zombies to use them, he would have a powerful elite squad.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "As for the rest of the Mutant Beast, I'll trouble you to send someone to deliver it to Berlin in 10 days. After that, we can make use of Berlin to be our future place for trades and negotiations. You can also send people to bring items to trade for the Gauss Rifles and ammo."

The Gauss Rifles were no doubt powerful, but there was a limit to their ammunition. Within each magazine, there was at most 200

rounds. Once spent, they would have to purchase the ammunition from Yue Zhong.

Therefore, even if Zombie King Limo had obtained them, to Yue Zhong, it was still not a cause for concern. Of course, it would not be the same in the future.

To the human race, the most dangerous threat right now was the Beastmen Kingdom, aliens, as well as the Dino-race.

The Saint Race was also powerful, but compared to the Beastmen, aliens, and Dino-race, they were not comparable.

If there was any advantage of the Saint Race, it would be that their technology was more advanced. The other 3 races did not place so much emphasis on their tech.

King Limo's gaze changed, as he shot Yue Zhong a cold glare, "I got it!"

He was not stupid, he had already thought of the need for ammo and the significance of Berlin as a trading facility. However, it was not unbearable, he did not wish to fall out with Yue Zhong right now either. His current target was to conquer the whole of Europe.

Yue Zhong chuckled, before stepping into the sky and leaving for the distance, "Then I shall wish you all the best in unifying Europe! Goodbye!"

The controlled zombie stared at Yue Zhong, a strange glint in its eyes, as a raspy voice sounded, "Despicable human. Wait till the day comes when I conquer all of Earth, your human race will die."

After that, the zombie's eyes dimmed, as it retreated back into the zombie horde.

As for Yue Zhong, he led the Green Hawk Tribe and Dragon Hawk Tribe towards Berlin.

Inside Berlin, the survivors were still heading into the Storm Battleship.

A number of elite warriors were still patrolling the city warily.

The Beastmen forces might have retreated under Taylor's orders, but there were still some leftover warriors within the city that had not received the orders and were unfortunate and abandoned.

All around the Storm Battleship, hundreds of the Kingdom of God elites were maintaining order.

One of them gazed towards the sky out of boredom, when suddenly, his face fell, as he shouted loudly, "Enemy!! Enemy!! The monsters are back!"

When they heard those words, the humans began to panic once more.

"Everyone, settle down!! Everyone, settle down!! Those are the 2 Beastmen tribes that Leader Yue Zhong had just subdued! Everyone, settle down!! Maintain your order and board the Battleship!"

Immediately, a mechanical voice rang throughout the Storm Battleship.

Hearing that, everyone began to calm down once more, eyeing the skies with uncertainty.

Under everyone's astonished gaze, Yue Zhong walked through the air and descended upon the ground.

With a swoosh, the Green Hawk Tribe and Dragon Hawk Tribe also followed after Yue Zhong, kneeling behind him.

"Oh my God! Who is he?!"

"So strong!! Is he God's envoy?"

"Who is that man?!"

"Oh heavens!! That was unbelievable!"

"..."

When the survivors of Berlin saw how Yue Zhong walked

through the air, as well as the Beastmen tribe kneeling behind him, they were filled with shock. In their eyes, only God was capable of something like that. Thus, many of them quickly got on their knees and kowtowed to Yue Zhong, reciting verses from the Bible, as though Yue Zhong was God's messenger.

Since the Earth had changed, almost everyone had heard of the initial declaration and knew that there was an existence far above them. Since then, humanity had nearly collapsed, while many came to possess faith. Since Yue Zhong was practically performing miracles, they had come to view him as holy.

In the distance, Jonas eyed Yue Zhong as well as the foreign species behind him, his eyes containing complex emotions, "So that's Yue Zhong? He's truly extraordinary."

Yue Zhong had just landed when he was greeted by the mature and beautiful Zhuo Ya Tong, dressed in military wear.

He instructed, "They are yours to handle for now. Let them board the Storm Battleship, and when they reach China, hand them to Qing Wu. They're to deal with the zombies there. Other than the 2 Type 6 leaders, it's fine if the rest die."

The 2 tribes were Yue Zhong's intended cannon fodder to deal with the zombies in China. Even if they all died, he would not bat an eyelid. As long as the 2 Type 6 experts were alright, he did not care about the rest.

Zhuo Ya Tong smiled gently, "Understood!"

After settling those issues, Yue Zhong entered the Protector Battleship, and with a wave of his hands, the ancient weapons in his Storage Ring all came out.

Seeing those broken instruments, there was a hint of an excited gaze within Yue Zhong's eyes. He grabbed one of the black balls within the pile of items.

As he held the ball, he thought, "I can sense it, this item is calling

out to me!!"

The moment it came in contact with Yue Zhong's hands, it lit up and started to absorb his strength.

Although he was taken aback, he did not panic and allowed the ball to absorb.

During the process, the black ball began to elongate, forming a black, powerful-looking bow that was engraved with mysterious runes, and radiated with power.

"Heaven-Piercing Bow!"

When it formed fully, a notification appeared in his mind, allowing him to understand the name of this weapon.

Chapter 1041: Yin-Yang Palm!

Yue Zhong looked at the Heaven-Piercing Bow in his hands with appreciation, "Good treasure! I've gained big this time!"

Initially, he had proposed the deal with Zombie King Limo in order to build some relations, where both sides stood to gain. He did not harbor much hope for the treasures, therefore, he was pleasantly surprised to gain such a powerful battle weapon.

Holding the Heaven-Piercing Bow, a sense of blood resonance transmitted from it, feeling Yue Zhong with joy and familiarity.

"Time to test it!"

Upon gaining the weapon, Yue Zhong stepped out of the Protector Battleship and soared into the air. He then went to the outskirts of Berlin.

Wielding the bow, his gaze narrowed, and with a thought, the Heaven-Piercing Bow radiated with power as it absorbed a portion of his energy.

After it swiftly gathered about $\frac{1}{3}$ of Yue Zhong's energy, a powerful red ball of energy appeared within the bow. At the same time, as long as Yue Zhong willed it, the atmospheric energy within a 500m radius would gather at the red ball of energy, empowering it.

Yue Zhong took aim at a particular mountain far away and drew the bow.

A bright red arrow shot out, crossing the distance of a few hundred meters in a second and blasted into the mountain.

Hong!!

With a loud, earth-shaking roar, the entire mountain crumbled into dust.

Yue Zhong watched the mountain crumble with a look of

excitement, as he laughed out in an unbridled manner, "Haha! Awesome!! I've finally reached such a stage! One more trump card now!!"

With this Heaven-Piercing Bow, Yue Zhong's Type 7 strength could control the atmospheric energy to augment his attacks. Even a peak-Type 7 expert would be annihilated by this attack.

Yue Zhong thought with a little regret, "What a pity that with my current strength, I can only fire 3 such arrows. It's definitely a trump card, I can't use it often."

He continued to ponder silently, "Based on my current hidden aces, I have too little offensive ones. I need to learn some secret techniques."

The martial techniques of the Saint Lands were the heaven-defying arts developed by the talents and geniuses of Planet Uros. Each one of them had their might and power, if trained to the peak, a person could fight enemies of higher levels.

With Yue Zhong's past style, it had either been sneak attacks, assassinations, or a combination of all his arsenal and trump cards just to kill his enemies. In a frontal combat, he might have his moves, but it was difficult to cross ranks and face stronger enemies.

At the Saint Lands, Yue Zhong had been able to kill those elites because his personal strength was high, not because they were weak.

Since reaching the Type 7 realm, his body had also attained the Second order God-Devil Body, with his strength, even if he was struck by a 155m round, he would not even be the slightest bit injured.

On Earth, the only weapon left that could possibly threaten Yue Zhong would be the nuclear weapons, or maybe the Raytheon Cannon and Prism Laser Cannon.

As for the secret martial techniques, they could enable a person to execute about 10% of their own strength. Yue Zhong was able to exhibit about 20 to 30% of his strength currently. If he learned another technique, it could increase the power he could display.

When he flew back to the Protector Battleship, Yue Zhong swiftly pulled out the records of the Saint Land martial techniques with Bai Yi's help.

Radiant Sun Art, Sky Wolf Skill, Sky Howl Divine Art, Ice Soul Divine Technique... all sorts of martial skills were displayed for him to see.

"None of the high-quality skills are useful to me. I only need to see from the top 10 Martial Techniques to boost my strength."

There were all sorts of martial techniques in the Saint Lands, separated into Low-Tier, Mid-Tier, High-Tier as well as Peerless. The higher the grade, the tougher the cultivation. With regards to the Peerless grade, even with the numerous elites, there were few that could actually train in them.

He looked through the countless techniques and immediately dived into the top 10 of the Saint Lands, intending to find a strong offensive skill.

With his God and Devil Imprint, as long as he continued to kill his enemies, he could evolve crazily. He did not have to rely on any of the energy cultivation technique within the martial arts. Instead, he was focused on finding an offensive technique.

While looking, he thought quietly, "All these techniques are all deep and profound. If they had been introduced prior to the apocalypse, even if I had the chance to look at them, I would not be able to learn them. Now, they're all so simple to understand. Which should I choose?"

Yue Zhong's gaze continued to roam, before finally landing on one particular skill, "Those that are mainly cultivation can be

excluded. My God-Devil Body is already the strongest physique in the world. Those techniques that require too much time to train can also be excluded. I am lacking time. Those that cannot grow and follow my increase in strength and evolution should also be excluded. That leaves this one - Yin-Yang Palm."

The Yin-Yang Palm was one of the most shocking skills created by a human expert of the Saint Lands. He had been the most outstanding Saint Lord across the ages and had used this skill to kill an initial-Type 8 expert of a foreign species. It had been vital to the survival of the apocalypse in Planet Uros then.

There were a total of 9 levels to the skills. The first could allow 100% of a person's strength to be displayed. The meant all of the person's strength. The 2nd level could double it, with each level increasing. By the 9th Level, a person could exhibit 256 times his or her strength.

It was because of this skill, that the Saint Lord at that time had crossed ranks and levels to defeat a Type 8 expert.

Of course, it was an incredibly hard skill to master. At that time, the Saint Lord had only practiced it to its 5th Level, and he was already at a heaven-defying level. There had been no one else who had trained the technique to the 9th Level.

"The peak of technological advancement in society would be a variety of machinery. The peak of cultivation would be the variety of techniques. If this Yin-Yang Palm can be trained to the 9th level, it would truly be powerful, and invincible!"

The moment Yue Zhong saw the description of this skill, his eyes lit up, and he started comprehending this technique.

The skill required the utmost talent and resources to begin cultivation. With Yue Zhong's original potential, no matter how hard he worked, he would not have succeeded. However, since reaching the Second Order God-Devil Body, he had already started breaking out of a mortal's shell, and his latent talent had

undergone a huge change. Whatever he saw, he could learn. In fact, he started to rapidly progress through the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and even 4th Level, before his speed of comprehension began to slow after reaching the 5th level.

A few days later, in front of the Gate of Hell in France.

There was a huge sea of zombies with seemingly uncountable numbers heading towards the Gate.

The remaining 30,000 Beastmen warriors had just constructed some simple defenses and were currently defending the location with all their might.

In front of one particular wooden fort, where a dozen Beastmen warriors were guarding, an L5 suddenly appeared.

One of the commanders quickly roared out, "Fire the arrows! Fire the arrows!"

A dozen Beastmen warriors quickly drew their bows and released arrows that shot towards the L5 like meteors.

The shower of arrows pierced the L5's skin but was unable to truly hurt or injure it.

The L5 bore the brunt of the arrows, arriving in front of the Beastmen fortress, and slapped out viciously, causing the Beastmen warriors within to be flattened into meat paste.

The warriors within the castle tried their best to dodge but were quickly enveloped by the surrounding horde of zombies.

With many more L5s as the core, the various forts of the Beastmen started to be breached, and their mortality count rising.

Zombie King Limo, who was hidden within the sea of corpses, observed from afar with a sunken expression, "Go to hell. This Gate of Hell must belong to me."

This particular Gate was the one used by the Beastmen Kingdom to invade. If Zombie King Limo obtained it, he just had to deploy

troops here to overwhelm the enemies flooding in. If he allowed them to pour out in waves, even he cannot guarantee victory with numbers.

The Beastmen elites had already been mostly taken out by Yue Zhong and King Limo. Although the remaining warriors at the Gate were elites, there were no Type 6 experts to hold the fort. There was no way of defending against the overwhelming number of zombies. Many of them fell, while the defensive line was being reduced at a rapid pace.

If they were humans, they would have long since collapsed. However, these Beastmen were fundamentally different from the human race. They knew fear, but they prioritized orders and continued to fight bravely and resolutely to their last breath. It was truly admirable, and frightening as well.

Just as the sea of corpses was about a kilometer away from the Gate, all of a sudden, a huge beast came out of the Gate. It had a vicious-looking dragon-head, its limbs thick and powerful, its entire body was covered in thick, grey scales and it was about 3m in height, 7m in length. On top of it, there was a peak-Type 4 expert with a snake-head wearing a silver armor, wielding an 8m-long dragon spear. He was exuding a terrifying aura.

Chapter 1042: Beastmen V.S Zombies!

"Dragon Riders!! The mighty Dragon Riders are here!!

"The Dragon Riders are here!!"

"..."

Seeing the appearance of the Beastmen experts atop the dragons, the various Beastmen in combat became excited and let out cheers.

The moment those Dragon Riders came out, they charged towards the zombie horde.

One by one, they exited the Gate of Hell and immediately got into formation, charging at the zombie horde.

At the vanguard position of the zombies, there were many L5s covered in black scales, impenetrable to guns and blades, blocking the Dragon Riders.

The hundreds of Dragon Riders charged wildly, and the ground shook from the force. They charged into the L5s viciously, intending to pierce through the bodies of the L5s with their strength.

Under the built-up force, the L5s were directly pierced through, crumpling to the ground. At the same time, some of the Dragon Riders were slapped by the L5s and sent flying.

The moment those Dragon Riders fell among the zombies, the hidden Evolved zombies would leap out and tear those unfortunate victims into pieces.

Every one of these Dragon Riders was at the Type 4 realm, but against the Devourers, Hunters, S5s and other evolved zombies within the horde, they stood no chance.

With the passage of time, zombies had not stopped evolving too, and compared to a year ago, they were much stronger.

However, since the Dragon Riders were pushing out in hordes,

the L5s were taken out quickly, before being trampled on by the Dragon Riders.

The moment the zombies were impeded by the Dragon Riders that joined the fray, more Beastmen warriors and Dragon Riders came out of the Gate of Hell, providing even more reinforcements. Soon, the total number of Dragon Riders that had appeared numbered over 5,000.

The L5s had to make use of the other zombies to take out over a hundred Dragon Riders before they were turned into meat paste under the charge of the reinforcements.

After dealing with those L5s, the remaining 4,000-odd Dragon Riders cleaved through the horde like a knife through butter, slaughtering the zombies that got in their way. At every second, over thousands of zombies were being flattened.

Zombie King Limo's gaze turned frosty as he prepared to use one of his trump cards, "Go to hell!!"

Just as the Dragon Riders were about to charge through further, a small troop of 200 S5s flickered over.

This entire squad was fitted with the Gauss Rifles obtained from Yue Zhong. The moment they appeared, they began firing wildly at the Dragon Riders.

Bright flashes burst out, and suddenly, many of the Dragon Riders found that they had fist-sized wounds punched through their bodies, as they crumpled to the ground from the back of their dragons in disbelief.

In an instant, over a dozen Dragon Riders had fallen.

The rest of the Dragon Riders became enraged, as they urged their mounts to chase after the S5s. Unfortunately, the S5s were too fast, disappearing right before their eyes.

The S5s made use of the horde as cover, appearing and disappearing like the wind, wiping out hundreds of the Dragon

Riders each time, but not losing a single of their number.

The S5s were speedy, and King Limo had passed the Gauss Rifles for them to use. Such a speedy squad was even more terrifying than an elite human squad.

King Limo saw how effective the S5 squad was, and his eyes flashed with a strange glint, "These Gauss Rifles are truly useful. If I had 20,000 of them, those damn Beastmen would have already been wiped out. I need to purchase more from Yue Zhong. Once our zombies are equipped, they will be stronger than the humans."

It was precisely so, if the zombies could obtain weapons that the humans used, then, in the future, the humans would not stand a chance.

Other than the Dragon Riders, more Beastmen warriors were still pouring out of the Gate.

A large number of aerial beastmen warriors also flew out, soaring into the sky, engaging the winged-zombies.

Every second, there were deaths on both sides.

They were at a stalemate, but the Beastmen's area was slowly expanding.

In terms of numbers, it was naturally the zombies that had the advantage, but in terms of quality, the Beastmen were stronger.

Although the Beastmen were strong, King Limo was all the more adamant on obtaining this Gate of Hell. He continued to throw all his subordinates into attacking.

While many evolved zombies were dying every second, there were zombies who were constantly evolving from consuming the blood and flesh of the powerful Beastmen as well, becoming even stronger. Newly evolved zombies were being produced.

The entire region in front of the Gate of Hell had become a cruel meat grinder, in just a day, a million zombies had perished.

At the same time, the death toll of the Beastmen warriors was reaching 150,000, with the initial 5,000 Dragon Riders ultimately perishing after an entire day of fighting. However, they had brought down over 150,000 zombies of their own.

Corpses were piled in heaps, with countless dismembered bodies all around.

Zombie King Limo laughed coldly, "A million zombies. Damned Beastmen, they actually took out a million of my forces! But it's useless! My forces are becoming stronger!! Haha!!"

Those foreign species like the Beastmen, aliens, and Dino-Race were all resistant towards the infection, therefore, they could not become zombies, just like the Mutant Beasts.

However, their blood and flesh were incredibly potent to the zombies. After killing 150,000 Beastmen, there were an additional 10,000 Type 3 Evolved zombies, 2,000 Type 4 Evolved zombies, and 300 Type 5 Evolved zombies.

At the same time, Devourers were sprouting out of nowhere, consuming the corpses on the battlefield.

These Devourers were natural-born killers on the battlefield, consuming corpses to evolve. Most of them had already become Type 5 creatures, posing an even more dangerous threat than before.

The Type 5 Devourers were more terrifying than the L5s and were one of King Limo's trump cards.

As long as they continued battling, while the horde might be diminished, and ordinary evolved zombies would perish, in return, even more, powerful Evolved zombies would emerge, replacing the quantity with quality.

It was because of this that Zombie King Limo was willing to deploy his forces to clash against the Beastmen.

Suddenly, an expert with 70% resemblance to Taylor stepped out

from the Gate of Hell.

Right behind him, there were over a hundred Type 6 experts following, exuding a terrifying aura.

The expert that resembled Taylor looked at the horde of zombies coldly and spoke indifferently, "To think that Taylor is dead. Seems like this Earth has some capable bumpkins."

One 6m-tall tiger-head expert spoke with a fawning attitude, "How could that fool Taylor compare to you, Your Majesty? As long as you order it, this subordinate will wipe out these low lives for you."

This expert of the Beastmen Kingdom that resembled Taylor was another prince, Prince Taess. He had power, authority, and many tribes under his beck and call. He was also a powerful expert of the mid-Type 7 realm.

Taess swept a glance across the seemingly endless horde and declared coolly, "Wipe out these trash!"

"Yes! Your Majesty!"

The hundreds of Type 6 experts behind him bowed and acknowledged, before leading their own tribes and slaughtered their way through the zombie horde.

Once this army joined the fray, the tide of the battle was turned.

Many powerful evolved zombies were quickly taken out by those Type 5 and Type 6 experts of the Beastmen Kingdom, while the ordinary zombies were left to the lower-leveled subordinates.

Although the horde was trying to advance further, they were starting to suffer heavy losses. In fact, they were losing ground, and forced backward, while more Beastmen poured out of the Gate of Hell. The advantage of the zombie numbers had suddenly become a target for the enemies to slaughter.

With King Limo's high intelligence, the moment he saw that

things were going downhill, he quickly chose to retreat, "Damn it! Seems like we can't claim that Gate of Hell anymore! It's time to retreat. Once my army has finished evolving, we will come and deal with these damned Beastmen once more."

Had King Limo thrown all his trump cards into the battle, and joined the fray himself, there might have been a chance to conquer the Gate of Hell. However, he valued his life and strength too much, choosing to take a minimal risk and retreated the moment things turned bad.

One petite, beautiful Beastmen expert that looked almost similar to a human female, with the exception of her cat ears and tail, came up to Taess and asked respectfully, "Your Majesty, the enemy has fled. Do we chase?"

Within the Beastmen Kingdom, there were many races that looked similar to humans. However, they were termed as lower-class races and were not very welcomed. The Cat-women race was one example.

Chapter 1043: Sichuan's Base Request for Help!

Taess swept a disgusted look at that Type 5 Cat-woman, ordering coldly, "Convey my command, no one is to chase. Our priority is to establish a secure base right now."

The Cat-woman responded, "Yes, Your Majesty!"

As one of the Princes of the Beastmen Kingdom, he was unlike Taylor in seeking merit, instead, choosing to lay foundations.

With his orders, countless Beastmen started to claim territories once more, as well as simple fortifications and structures.

Meanwhile, more Beastmen warriors were pouring out of the Gate of Hell.

In time, the whole of France began to come under Taess due to his slow but steady efforts.

With his expansion efforts, although it prevented King Limo from acting against the Beastmen warriors, it gave him time to gather and regroup all the zombies within France.

Both sides continued to engage in small skirmishes here and there while trying to expand their own forces.

Like this, the Beastmen Kingdom had somehow established their own base on Earth.

As for Yue Zhong, he was currently transporting the Berlin's survivors towards China.

Within Sichuan, in a secluded mountain gorge, a Gate of Hell stood on some flat ground, surrounded by mucus.

A Type 3 Mutant Leopard came prowling over, eyeing the mucus curiously as it edged closer.

Just as it was near the blanket of mucus, suddenly, an oval-

shaped object shot out a meat hook, piercing the Type 3 Mutant Leopard and tugged it forcefully into the mucus.

The unfortunate beast struggled within the mucus for a few seconds, before all movements ceased.

Soon after, another oval-shaped pod broke open, as a human-shaped alien emerged from within, possessing a pair of sharp claws, tail and a savage visage. A number of strange alien spawn crawled all around it, before burrowing into its chest.

The human-shaped alien eyed its surroundings warily before it dashed off into the distance.

The alien was a species that could extinguish all life of any planet, and they had come to Earth through the Gate of Hell.

Of the 300 Gates of Hell littered all over Earth, every world could make use of the Gates to enter. Protecting just one door could only prevent access from that particular door.

Yue Zhong knew this, but with his current strength, he could at most stand guard over a few places. As for the rest, even if he knew about them, there was nothing he could do. The more he spread out his forces, the more risk he was putting them through.

He had obtained many different technologies through the different worlds, and they were being researched and produced, but to equip his forces on a mass scale, he needed more time.

Within a secret room inside China's capital, Yue Zhong opened his eyes slowly, his gaze sharp and radiant.

He was filled with joy as he thought, "I've finally achieved Level 5 of the Yin-Yang palm. This martial technique is truly profound. It took me an entire month to reach this stage. Now, I've gained an additional card. It might not have much use in war, but against any Type 8 experts, I have a chance now."

Since he obtained the Second Order God-Devil Body, his talent and potential were heaven-defying. He possessed superhuman

memory and could recognize any language of any country. With just a single hour, he could speak more fluently than a native speaker.

With such potential, it had been a breeze to learn the first 4 Levels of the Yin-Yang Palm, but it actually took an entire month for him to reach the 5th Level.

As he walked out of the room, Chen Yao came up to him urgently, "Yue Zhong, the base in Sichuan had just sent a request for help. They're being surrounded by zombies, and have requested aid. They're willing to join us after."

Yue Zhong frowned, and replied, "Sichuan? Fine, I'll make a trip myself."

Currently, China was undergoing some huge changes, pumping resources and efforts into a huge survivor base. At the same time, Ji Qing Wu and the other generals were leading their subordinates to clear the zombies all around China.

With Ji Qing Wu, Bai Xiao Sheng, Zheng Ming He, Zhuo Ya Tong, Chen Sheng Gang, Li Guang, Chen Yao, Hu-er Ran and the rest handling the zombies, as well as the structural works being handled by the numerous subordinates, Yue Zhong only had to concern himself with the big picture. Since he had been holed up in the Capital in closed-door cultivation, he was truly getting restless.

As for the forces and troops, they were focused on defending, and not deployed lightly. Only Yue Zhong had the authority to. In any case, he alone could wipe out a million zombies with no problems.

Chen Yao chuckled, "Are you bringing Yin Shuang?"

Yin Shuang stuck to Yue Zhong like glue, this was a fact everyone knew.

Yue Zhong shook his head, "No! She is too important, she has to stay here to guard the capital. It'll be better that way."

She had already reached the Type 7 realm and was the only other expert of China comparable to Yue Zhong. With her holding the fort, she could at least deal with any short-term dangers that cropped up.

Having made the decision, Yue Zhong boarded one of the Protector Battleship and brought along the Storm Battleship as he headed towards Sichuan.

Outside the city of Sichuan, there was another city that had been built not too long ago, surrounded by massive wooden walls.

At a valley connecting to the city, hundreds of soldiers were currently taking out a number of Evolved zombies.

Sichuan was mountainous and had many valleys. The new city had been constructed right behind one of such a valley, allowing only 2 cars' width of an entrance.

Relying on the natural terrain advantage, the hundreds of soldiers were able to defend against the numerous zombies.

At the peak of the small hill, some commanders were looking out at the distance.

One of them complained, "Commander, the brothers do not understand why you must contact that Yue Zhong. He's obviously a tyrant that had been lucky enough to conquer the capital. And that damn faction actually established what bullshit government!! We're able to sustain ourselves, and live by our own rules, why must we request for his aid?"

When that squad captain spoke, many of the other officers nodded in agreement.

Yue Zhong had been an ordinary man before the apocalypse. After he established the new government, the old guards in Sichuan were not receptive. Some had joined him, while others viewed him as a rebel and traitor, while some sat on the fence, without any indication of their opinions.

As for this particular base, the military was the law. They held the authority over the survivors, and such a feeling had already started to corrode some of their hearts.

The leader, a man with good-looking features and a muscular physique, spoke slowly, "Wang Da Pao, we are all military men. The military exists to protect the country. Since Yue Zhong has the capability to protect our country, we should submit to him, and work for him. We need to protect our people, this is what we should do."

This commander was called Yue Hai Min, a regiment commander prior to the apocalypse. When the world changed, he had led his surviving subordinates to take out the nearby zombies, regrouping with other troops, as they rescued a large number of survivors from Sichuan, and settled within this mountain gorge. With the help of the terrain, they had defended themselves over this entire period.

Wang Da Pao had a reluctant gleam in his gaze, but he still voiced his respect, "Yes! Commander!"

Yue Hai Min had plenty of support within the troop, although Wang Da Pao had his supporters too, it was not enough to go against him.

Yue Hai Min looked at the seemingly endless horde and had a look of worry, "Furthermore, the zombies are evolving stronger, our ammunition is running out as well."

The evolution of the zombies was terrifying, producing even more variants as well. If it was not for the terrain, this base would have long since been wiped out.

Wang Da Pao seemed like he did not think so, "While those zombies are evolving, our brothers have become stronger too! Look, they aren't a match for our brothers."

At the entrance of the valley, over 20 soldiers were using System

equipment to slaughter the evolved zombies.

Behind those soldiers, there were over a hundred others waiting to switch out.

With the help of the terrain as well as numerous Enhancers, Wang Da Pao felt that their base was practically heaven, there was no need for anyone to help them.

"Old Wang, that day, that beauty, you fucked her, right? How was it?"

"Get lost!"

"Haha!!"

"..."

At the entrance, the soldiers awaiting their turns were laughing and chatting, unafraid of the zombies.

In the midst of their conversation, one small alien spawn managed to slither towards one of the soldiers at a corner, before pouncing on his face and burrowing into his brain through his nostril.

"Ah!!"

At the moment the alien spawn landed on his face, the soldier let out a shriek of terror.

The hundreds of soldiers turned to face him but did not discover anything.

One of them complained, "Big-nose Liu, what the hell did you scream for? Trying to scare us to death?!"

Big-nose Liu wanted to say something when suddenly, his mind turned blank, and he chuckled, "I don't remember."

Chapter 1044: Turning Zombies into Ash with a Wave of a Hand!

With the natural terrain, as well as the efforts of the experts, the zombies were kept at bay, prevented from entering the mountain gorge.

After battling intensely for an entire day, the zombies still could not breach the gorge.

The valley was too narrow, and unless the zombies activated their winged counterparts or the intelligent ones to launch an assault, there was no way to breach the pass.

The battle continued for some time, while Big-nose Liu went back towards the base silently.

Early the next morning, Yue Hai Min had a look of excitement as he told the rest, "The leader of the central government is here, let's go welcome him."

Many of them exchanged glances. While some were reluctant, they still followed behind.

"Ai! What is that?!"

"Is that a spaceship?! Holy shit!"

"Did the Martians already invade Earth?!"

"..."

These commanders all turned to look at the sky, their eyes filled with shock.

The huge metal behemoth soaring above them was precisely the Protector Battleship. It was a helicarrier, the likes of which had never been seen on Earth before. It was the first time these military officers had seen something so advanced, hence, their astonishment.

As they continued to stare, the battleship opened, as a smaller-sized carrier came descending.

The moment that carrier touched down, over a dozen soldiers equipped with nano armors on the outside, as well as Battle Armors on the inside, carrying Gauss Rifles, Electromagnetic Rifles, came rushing out. They were all armed to the teeth, with Type 4 strength, guarding the helicopter.

"Elite soldiers! Look at their weapons! So futuristic!! Is this the strength of the new government?"

When the commanders saw the soldiers disembarking, they were truly taken aback. They were not considered newbies, and had seen their fair share of war and battles, and could sense the aura emitted by these soldiers.

Under their stunned gazes, Yue Zhong came out, dressed in military wear. Beside him was the small, petite beauty, Floxenia, whose gaze was sharp.

Yue Zhong was already pretty much invincible on Earth, if he did not come across any other freaks from other worlds, he did not need to fear anything. However, in coming to pick up the survivors from Sichuan, he had to watch out for the human heart.

Yue Hai Min came up to Yue Zhong, saluting him in the military style, with a hint of respect in his gaze, "Leader, Yue Hai Min reporting! It is an honor to finally meet you!"

He had received the radio broadcast from a long ago and had been kept updated on news from the capital. In truth, he had been contemplating to initiate contact for the longest time after Yue Zhong regained the capital.

However, it was only after hearing that Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God, and America had signed the Earth Federal Government papers that he decided to contact Yue Zhong.

Finally seeing him in person, as well as the grand and powerful

entourage, Yue Hai Min felt relieved and celebrated his decision.

Yue Zhong laughed politely, "I'm Yue Zhong. Very pleased to meet you, Commander Yue."

At this time, the ashen-faced Wang Da Pao who had been standing quietly behind came up and stared at Yue Zhong, "Leader Yue Zhong, there're too many zombies here, our current forces are weakened. Since you're here, why not help us eliminate some and show us the power of the famous Central Army."

Many of the other commanders also looked at Yue Zhong quietly, intending to witness the strength of Yue Zhong's forces for themselves.

Although they had heard from themselves the broadcasts from the capital, they were clear that it did not count for much. Without seeing it for themselves, they would not blindly trust the messages. They wanted to see just how strong the Central Army was.

If they were weak, then they would not stand on ceremony, instead, they were prepared to capture Yue Zhong.

Yue Hai Min frowned, but he did not scold Wang Da Pao, instead, looking at Yue Zhong expectantly.

"No problem." Yue Zhong chuckled, before giving an indifferent order, "Heed my orders, wipe out everything outside the valley.

Wang Da Pao laughed coldly, "Wipe out everything?! What boastful words, there are over 500,000 zombies out there, just you guys, and you intend to wipe them out? What arrogance!"

The rest also snorted coldly, their expressions of ridicule.

Even Yue Hai Min could not help but doubt, "Don't tell me this Yue Zhong is just full of air? Impossible right? He's after all the leader of China right now, how can he spout such bullshit?"

He knew just how terrifying the numbers were. Inside this base, there were 6,000 survivors. However, the zombies outside were in

the hundreds of thousands. He had not expected Yue Zhong to wipe them all out. In his plans, as long as Yue Zhong's troops could showcase a decent strength, he would sincerely hand over the reins to him.

Flozenia stood beside Yue Zhong while shooting all of them a cold look. She could read all of their thoughts, and the corners of her mouth raised, "A bunch of fools, you guys could never imagine the extent of Brother Yue Zhong's strength."

Soon after, the Protector Battleship above revealed numerous cannons, as a number of beams shot down from the sky like a judgment from heaven, each one of them piercing the heads of the zombies accurately.

Under that relentless assault, a large number of zombies were turned to ashes immediately.

As the Protector Battleship continued on its flight, within seconds, all 500,000 zombies were reduced to nothing.

"What the fuck?!"

"Shit!! This kind of power...!! Holy shit!!"

"It's over?! Just like that? Half a million zombies gone?! How is this possible?! How?!"

"What the hell is that weapon?! Isn't that too overpowered? Other than nuclear weapons, there's nothing that can possibly match that!!"

"..."

Seeing the hundreds and thousands of zombies turn to ash, all the commanders were wide-eyed with shock. They look at Yue Zhong, who was smiling faintly and felt a sense of fear.

Wang Da Pao thought, "What a powerful weapon. With just this aircraft, our base would be wiped out. The Central Army is truly strong as they say."

The Protector Battleship was the strongest weapon of war in the Saint Lands, produced from the countless years of technology. It was even capable of dealing with a Type 7 expert. Such a weapon was naturally capable of devastating power and destruction.

In truth, if it was to exhibit its power fully, even the nuclear weapon might not be comparable. If an enemy was to try and use a nuclear missile on the Protector Battleship, before it could even reach, it would be destroyed by the Protector Battleship.

Yue Hai Min had a look of appreciation, as he sighed with admiration, "Powerful! The Central Army truly lives up to its name! The best army there is! With this weapon, our China will be able to defeat the zombies and reunite the country!"

When all the commanders heard that, they all looked towards Yue Zhong with a hint of excitement. If they could follow him and defeat the zombies and rebuild the country, they would be considered founding fathers as well, with riches and power.

Yue Zhong sighed, "Reuniting the country, it sure is easy to talk about it!"

Even if he was a Type 7 Divine Warrior, with over 10 million survivors under him, it was truly a tough journey to fully unifying China.

The 12 Protector Battleship would require huge amounts of energy to destroy their enemies. If it was not for establishing his authority, he would not use it just to wipe out these 500,000 zombies.

The might of the 12 Battleships were too precious, intended to deal with the aliens, Dino-race and Beastmen, not ordinary zombies. Even killing the evolved zombies would be better with the human elites soldiers.

Even so, Yue Zhong maintained a confident smile, as though everything was in his hands.

Seeing that, everyone was more convinced to throw in together with him.

Yue Hai Min invited warmly, "Leader, please come and take a rest in our base."

Yue Zhong smiled and did not reject, "Fine!"

Under Yue Hai Min's lead, the entire group quickly headed to the base.

Chapter 1045: Chaos!

The base at Sichuan was different from others, under the protection of the soldiers, they had maintained some form of stability. Although many of them were somewhat malnourished due to the lack of resources, at least they were orderly and not as problematic as other places, where the evil-doers ran rampant, and corpses were everywhere.

Yue Zhong had just swept the base a rough glance and did not pay any special attention. He knew that it was likely cleaned up, and one could not tell much.

The party walked into a large wooden house that looked clean and tidy.

With an order from Yue Hai Min, a lot of food was then served.

Due to the scarcity of food, even rats had been eaten clean.

The most appetizing of the food served was a plate of some roasted rat meat, with some peanut grains, while the main dish was dry biscuits and wild vegetables.

Seeing the table of food, Yue Zhong could not muster any appetite. If it was the most trying of situations, even if he had to eat ants or bugs, he would not have any qualms. However, since he was capable of so much now, with the lowest quality being mutant vegetables and Type 4 Beast Meat, he could not bring himself to partake in such cuisine.

Yue Hai Min gestured sincerely, "Please help yourself!"

"Wait a minute. Hai Min, I think you guys should try our China's food."

Yue Zhong chuckled, and flipped his hands, revealing a number of canned food, as he opened them up.

The moment he opened them, the vibrant mutant vegetables as

well as Type 4 Beast Meat were revealed.

When the various commanders took in the fragrant smell, they could not help but salivate, staring fixedly at the cans, revealing expressions of greed.

As high-ranking officials, it was not tough for them to have their fill in the base. However, it was difficult to eat such luxurious cuisine. Many had fallen sick and died because of the lack of nutrients. Otherwise, the base would not have been left with only 6,000-odd survivors.

"Dig in!"

Hearing that, the commanders quickly raised their chopsticks to grab some food into their mouths.

As Yue Hai Min bit into the Type 4 Beast meat, his eyes lit up, revealing an expression of greed. He began to grab more frantically, "Amazing!! This is too delicious!! Ah! This taste seems to be changing even my physique! It's unbelievable!!"

The rest of the commanders were not fools, they could sense the benefits of the food for themselves. They also began to scramble for the food, gobbling them down as though they were hungry ghosts. In just a manner of seconds, the food had been swept clean.

After finishing, they then looked at Yue Zhong sheepishly. Before the apocalypse, they were all living good lives with plenty of food. However, none of it could compare to the food that Yue Zhong had brought out now.

As the meal was over, Yue Zhong directly asked, "Yue Hai Min, are there any larger bases around you guys?"

This time, Yue Zhong did not just come for the Sichuan base, but also all the survivors within the vicinity, before moving off.

With the passing of time, as more foreign species descended upon Earth, the number of survivors would decrease from the killings.

Yue Zhong was currently training his troops as well as dedicating personnel to go and fetch survivors from all over.

Yue Hai Min reported immediately, "Leader, I know that there's a large survivor base about 50 li to the west of here. There are more survivors there compared to here."

Yue Zhong replied, "Very good, in that case, gather all your survivors and board my ship. We're leaving immediately."

When Yue Hai Min heard that, he frowned, "Leader, why must we leave? We can stay here, and reclaim Sichuan slowly."

The rest of the commanders also revealed expressions of agreement. They were all Sichuan men through and through and were not willing to leave.

Yue Zhong arched his eyebrows and was about to say something when sounds of gunshots and screams rang out in the distance.

One officer came running into the house with a panicked expression, "Monster!! Commander, there's a monster killing its way over!!"

Yue Hai Min's eyes narrowed, as he asked solemnly, "What monster? Zhang Xing, say it clearly!"

Zhang Xing was still wide-eyed in shock, as he shouted out, "Those monsters are over 2m, and have blade-like arms. Their bodies are covered in some grey exoskeleton, and look like aliens! Yes! That's right! They're just like those aliens in the films! The 1st Special Forces have been wiped out!"

"What?! The 1st Special Forces have been wiped out?!"

When Yue Hai Min heard that, his face turned pale. The 1st Special Forces were the most elite of the entire base, and it had been them stationed at the valley, fiercely defending against the zombies. With them dead, the defense of the base was reduced by over 90%.

The rest of the commanders also turned pale, their eyes filled with disbelief.

Yue Zhong's face changed, as he stood up, "What? Aliens!!"

The aliens were biological weapons capable of destroying an entire planet, with their fertility on a much more rapid scale as compared to humans. They could live as parasites within humans and was hard to detect. Yue Zhong had hoped for them not to descend upon Earth.

Even the savage Beastmen and vicious Dino-race could not compare to the threat of the aliens.

"Move!"

Yue Zhong immediately led everyone out.

Currently, within the base, it was pandemonium. Countless survivors were crying and sobbing as they ran towards the soldiers. Only those with guns could make them feel safe.

"Help! Save me!!"

One female survivor fell to the ground, finally seeing the dozens of soldiers in front of her. Hope gleamed in her eyes, as she screamed out.

Swoosh!

With a flash of a blade, the body of the female survivors was sliced in two, and behind her, stood a bladed-alien with a vicious visage.

"Beast!! Go to hell!"

When the soldiers saw this, they roared out with rage and fired their weapons at the alien.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

The bullets bounced off the body of the alien, not leaving a single scratch, causing everyone to despair.

One of the soldiers shouted out, "How is that possible! Change to the grenade launchers!!"

Before he even finished speaking, a blade light flashed past and his head was sent flying in a shower of blood.

The rest of the soldiers eyed the bladed-alien that had suddenly appeared, their eyes filled with fear, losing all will to combat. Against these monsters that were faster than the speed of sound, and were also invulnerable to their weapons, anybody would despair.

The eyes of the bladed-alien flashed, as it swept them a look, and disappeared.

The next instant, all of them lost their heads, as their headless corpses crumpled to the ground.

Yue Zhong and the rest had just arrived, in time to witness the alien slaughtering the soldiers.

Yue Hai Min and the others were filled with shock, "What a terrifying creature!!"

The combat ability of the alien was astonishing, just one was enough to wipe out the entire base.

Yue Zhong swept a cold look and ordered, "Do it! Annihilate it!"

The dozen soldiers of the Central Army that had followed Yue Zhong quickly readied their Gauss Rifles, firing coldly at the alien.

Each of these Type 4 experts was already at Level 80, their Marksmanship at the Third Order, and with additional training, it was hard for them to miss.

The speed of the alien might be insane, but against these trained soldiers, it could not dodge in time, as the multiple beams slammed into its body.

Under the Gauss Rifle beams, the alien was punched full of holes, falling out of the sky, as the corrosive blood flowed out and it

became a corpse.

"Strong!! Is this the might of the Central Army?! Incredible!! This small team is more than enough to deal with our base! The gap in strength is too wide!"

Wang Da Pao and the rest of the commanders exchanged looks, feeling waves of shock in their hearts. The alien that had been faster than the speed of sound was actually killed so easily by Yue Zhong's soldiers. Their capabilities had long since surpassed what Earth had been capable of in the past.

Yue Zhong gave Floxenia an order, "Nia, stay here with Yue Hai Min and the rest. Go organize the survivors up the Storm Battleship. I will go wipe out these aliens."

Chapter 1046: Floxenia!

Yue Zhong's personal combat strength was strong. It was easier for him to kill the aliens compared to his subordinates. Furthermore, he did not bring too many elite soldiers, as he meant for them to maintain security, and sift out the parasites hidden within the survivors

Floxenia saluted him, "Understood! Leader!"

She was more mature than any girl of her age, and Yue Zhong was reassured by her leading the troops.

After she promised, Yue Zhong directly soared into the sky.

"He flew!! A human can actually fly?!"

"Is that a skill? The rare Flight ability?"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong ascend to the sky, Yue Hai Min and the rest were filled with shock and felt that Yue Zhong was even more unfathomable than before.

The moment he left, Floxenia's gaze turned incredibly cold, as she passed a cold order, "Liu Xiong, go bring some men to maintain order, and make sure you check every survivor. Those who dare to cause trouble or prevent any inspection, execute them without mercy."

Although she looked like a girl of only 12 or 13, she was incredibly far-sighted, and she had seen the darkest of the human's heart. Over a thousand spies have lost their lives under her orders alone.

One of the Type 5 Central Army soldiers responded, "Understood!"

These Central Army soldiers knew how terrifying Floxenia was, and they quickly got into formation and readied their weapons at the survivors.

Flozenia then swept Yue Hai Min and the rest a look, "Commander Yue, order your men to do their duty well. Organize those that pass the inspection the head up into the Storm Battleship orderly.

Yue Hai Min eyed the girl in front of him, his eyes flashed with a strange glint. A commander like him had to listen to some loli who was not even 15. It truly felt discomfoting, and he could not help but hesitate.

Wang Da Pao shot her look, and laughed condescendingly, "Yue Zhong is truly muddle-headed, actually giving the command to a little girl. Hey, little girl, go and hide, let us grown men handle the commanding."

The rest of the commanders also looked at her strangely, not moving.

She shot them a cold look and waved her hands.

With a sweep, the 20 elites besides her immediately adjusted their aim at them, their gazes cold, and their killing intent bursting forth.

The commanders felt their hearts turn cold upon feeling the killing intent.

Flozenia spoke coldly, "Yue Hai Min, since you have already joined our government, you are a part of us. The military orders of my Central Army have to be obeyed with no questions, otherwise, you will be executed without mercy. You have just joined, and on account that you might not know the rules, I will forgo this once. If this happens one more time, do not blame me for being merciless, as I will not hesitate to wipe you all off the face of this Earth."

Sensing her cold gaze and killing intent, even Yue Hai Min could not help but feel a chill.

"Let me through!! Scram!! Let me through! My uncle is

Commander Li Niu Gang! Scram!! Otherwise, you will all regret this!!"

Right at this time, there was some commotion among the survivors, as an ordinary young man came scrambling forward. In his rush, the weaker survivors were shoved aside.

One soldier barked out coldly, "Maintain order! Go and line up!"

The young man shouted back arrogantly, "Do you know who the hell I am? My uncle is Commander Li Niu Gang! Scram!! Otherwise, this senior will get my uncle to make your life hell!"

Li Niu Gang was a commander with considerable authority, and one of the higher-ranking officials in Sichuan. His family was arrogant and despotic and abused their power constantly.

The moment the young man's words fell, there was a clear gunshot, as a bullet hole appeared in his brain, and he slumped to the floor, dead.

At the same time, the rest of the soldiers also fired at the hooligans beside this nephew of Li Niu Gang, riddling their heads full of bullets.

"Ah!!"

"Help!"

"They're killing people!!"

"..."

Seeing this terrifying scene, many survivors screamed out in fear.

The commanders behind Yue Hai Min were also filled with a chill. They had not expected the Central Army to be so decisive and vicious, directly executing those who had not obeyed the rules.

One soldier barked out, as he exuded a terrifying aura, directly suppressing those survivors, "Shut up! Get in line! Those who dare cause trouble will be executed!"

When they were shouted at, the survivors became obedient once more, getting in line.

Flozenia then turned her cold gaze to those commanders, "Still not moving? Are you intending to disobey orders?"

Yue Hai Min bolted upright, "Understood!"

Li Niu Gang, who stood behind Yue Hai Min, stared hatefully at Flozenia, his gaze venomous, "Damn bitch, you dare kill my nephew! I will not let you off. Once I go back, I will gather my people and kill all your men and steal the Battleship!"

After the world had changed, Li Niu Gang was left with only this nephew, because of this, he spoiled the young man. Now that he was killed by Flozenia, Li Niu Gang was infuriated.

Flozenia swept him, as well as those men beside him a look, and barked, "Wait! The few of you, step out!"

Under the threat of the Gauss Rifles, Li Niu Gang and the rest could only step out.

Flozenia's gaze was cold as she waved her hand, "These men have questionable intents, execute them."

"No!"

The Gauss Rifles fired out brightly, as Li Niu Gang and the rest watched in horror, fear, and regret.

Seeing their deaths, the rest of the commanders turned steely, their hearts palpitating.

Yue Hai Min's face was steely, as he stared coldly, at Flozenia and asked loudly, "Miss Flozenia!! What were you doing?! Why did you kill my men!"

Right now, everyone saw this little girl as a terrifying demon.

Without batting an eyelid, she replied, "I have mind-reading abilities. That Li Niu Gang was the uncle of that young man I just ordered the death of. The rest of them were his trusted aides. He

was intending to cause a rebellion at the moment of embarking the ship. Thus, I've decided to wipe them out first."

With disbelief, Yue Hai Min thought, "Mind-reading?! How is that possible?"

She looked at him, her face cold and impassive, "You're thinking right now, mind-reading?! How is that possible?"

Yue Hai Min was shocked, "Impossible?! She really knows it?!"

"You're thinking right now: Impossible?! She really knows it?! Very well, you're lucky, I can demonstrate my strength to you as well." Floxenia swept him a glance, laughing coldly, before she pointed at one survivor, "Kill him!"

One soldier immediately raised his weapon and fired.

Blasted by the Gauss Rifle, the survivor was riddled with holes, even his brain had been splattered all over the place.

Seeing this, Yue Hai Min's face fell, and he was about to shout at her, when suddenly, 4 alien spawn pounced out from the dead corpse, leaping towards the soldiers around.

The soldiers were already prepared, and fired their weapons, directly killing those spawn, amidst a shower of green, corrosive blood.

One Central Army soldier then pulled out a flamethrower and directly incinerated the corpse of the survivor.

Inside the body, there were still many spawn hiding, hence, the best method was to incinerate every host. This was a result of Yue Zhong's experience.

Yue Hai Min fell silent for a moment before speaking, "I got it, Floxenia, I will gather the survivors to leave here. However, I'm reserving my thoughts with regards to your methods against Li Niu Gang and the rest."

After that, Yue Hai Min quickly organized his men to usher the

survivors towards the Storm Battleship.

Flozenia stood there, acting as a human radar, scanning all those potential hosts.

The hosts had a strange signal emitting from their brains due to the parasitic aliens, which ordinary humans could not sense. However, Flozenia could, and the moment she sensed it, she could point out the hosts, before getting the soldiers to deal with them.

The number of mature aliens was not considered many inside the base yet, only about 30. These were nothing much to Yue Zhong, the only inconvenience was searching for them.

After spending about 4 hours, Yue Zhong managed to kill the last one behind a dark alley.

As for the survivors that had been infected, it was a sizeable number, over 600 had become hosts. Each time they were killed, their corpses were quickly dealt with as well.

Once all the aliens were dealt with, Yue Zhong was filled with a sense of urgency, "No good, Sichuan is already invaded. I need to quickly bring all the survivors from the bases nearby away. Otherwise, they will all fall prey to these damned aliens."

Chapter 1047: The Arrival of the Mech Empire!

After they had ushered all the survivors up the Storm Battleship, Yue Zhong quickly led his troops towards the other large base in Cang Ya.

"Master! There's a disturbance in the direction of the Cang Ya base!"

Halfway through the journey, Bai Yi appeared on the display screen to report.

All the satellites of Earth had already come under Bai Yi's control, and whatever the satellites saw, she could see.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Pull out the images right now!"

"Yes!"

Bai Yi then pulled out the images.

Currently, within the Cang Ya base, over hundreds and thousands of aliens were slaughtering the humans within, while taking on a mechanized battalion.

One portion of the mechanized battalion was a close-combat armored beast, that was covered with sharp alloy blades, wielding a pair of blades. There was also another portion of armored vehicles that had 2 main cannons, and 36 sub-cannons, specializing in long-range battles.

The combat strength of the close-combat armored beasts was astonishing, while they were not a match for the aliens in a one-on-one setting, with 12 in a squad, it was easy to surround and kill off the aliens.

Within the base, one bladed-alien flickered and appeared in front of one close-combat armored beast. With a slash, it managed to slice the mech in two, as countless parts fell out, and the machine

exploded in a loud blast.

The resulting explosion forced the bladed alien over a dozen meters.

At that instant, 6 other close-combat armored beasts appeared behind the bladed-alien, directly slashing at it.

The bladed-alien waved its blades and slashed out in a counter attack, slicing one of them in two. It then swung its tail, which slammed into another, causing it to break apart at the waist.

In just a breath, it managed to wipe out another 2 close-combat armored beasts. If it were a one-on-one, it would have already won.

However, at the same time, the remaining 4 armored beasts already slashed out, slicing the alien in multiple parts, as the corrosive blood splattered everywhere.

After killing that alien, the remaining mech beasts then formed another smaller-group, regrouping with the surviving units of the other battles, and forming new teams.

One Type 5 multi-clawed alien was engaging 12 armored beasts in combat, and both sides were locked in a cruel battle.

The aliens and the mech beasts were existences that did not fear death. Hence, their fighting style was cruel and vicious. In just a few moments, over 3 close-combat armored beasts have been destroyed by the Type 5 alien, while the alien itself had suffered numerous injuries.

Right at this moment, on a tall building afar, many spider-like mech beasts crawled up and were adjusting their cannons.

With a bright flash of light, a number of electromagnetic cannons fired upon the Type 5 multi-claw alien, causing the other close-combat armored beasts around it to be destroyed too.

Although the aliens possessed terrifying combat power, the mech

army was over 200,000. Each of them had incredible aim, and their teamwork was seamless. At every second, there was an alien being taken out.

The mech army continued to slaughter the aliens, while at the same time, not distinguishing the innocent humans as well. As long as any life form appeared before them, they would kill without mercy.

Yue Zhong saw these powerful mech machines, and frowned, wondering to himself, "Damn it, where did this mech army come from?"

He was sure that these were definitely invaders using the Gates of Hell to arrive here, but he wanted to know through which one.

Bai Yi quickly replied, "There's no data on them inside the database."

The satellites were also not omnipotent, although they could scan most of the land on Earth, there was a limit to their abilities, and they could not be scanning all the time.

Bai Yi continued to run some numbers before reporting, "Master, these are just the cannon fodder. Based on my estimations, the commander should be the sentient robots. However, the enemy is constantly jamming my signals, preventing me from taking control. If you could deal with them, I could control them. Alternatively, you can capture a few to the Battleship, and I can connect to them through hard wires, swallowing their intelligence and controlling them."

The display then changed and revealed 20 human-like figures behind the mech army.

Yue Zhong took a look and could not help but be shocked, "What?! Sentient robots? That is to say, intelligent programs?"

Bai Yi replied, "You could say that."

He asked, "How strong are they?"

Bai Yi said, "I'm unable to determine for sure, there's not enough information."

"Fine then, I'll go check them out."

Yue Zhong swept them a gaze, as he channeled his energy, and shot out from the Protector Battleship.

Behind the mech army, one of them, who had perfect looks and golden locks, wore a human-like smile, "On this planet Earth, who knew that there would be such powerful and savage beasts. Interesting. The original masters were the humans, but they're so pathetically weak. After wiping out this base, there should be another 3 survivor bases in Sichuan. Once we wipe out these cockroach-like humans, our Mech Kingdom can begin to dominate Earth, and evolve once again! Long live the Mech Kingdom!"

Another sentient robot, who had yellow skin and black hair, stepped up to speak, "Bardonia, the humans are not so easy targets. Our Mech Kingdom has successfully conquered 3 planets and gained the chance to evolve thrice. But those humans were not weak, and each of them had possessed some powerful Oracle. We cannot be too careless and must take them all out carefully. In order to conquer this country, so we can evolve once more, and escape from that dreaded God's hands! Long live the Mech Kingdom!"

Bardonia nodded, "Fang Sheng, I understand. We will definitely conquer this country. Long live the Mech Kingdom!"

He then eyed the sky, and laughed lightly, "Haha, I discovered something interesting. There're actually some satellites on this Earth. Let me go and bring them under my control."

To these super A.I.s controlling satellites was a simple matter. The moment Yue Zhong had brought Bai Yi back, all the satellites had come under her control.

Without moving, Bardonia started to shoot out beams, as his eyes

ran with numbers, intending to infiltrate the satellites.

In a few breaths, he opened his eyes, revealing a shocked look, "Not good, I'm unable to get through. There was some impedance, the opponent is also a Super A.I., a powerful one at that. I can sense that only the Emperor could match her in computing and analytical ability."

Fang Sheng frowned, and made an accurate guess, "What? Is the opponent that strong? Seems like the expert on Earth had managed to get a Treasure of Hope then, It should be the Super A.I., otherwise, based on the abilities of this planet, it could not possibly produce such a powerful A.I."

Fang Sheng then turned to another robot, "The opponent has satellites, while we don't. They have the advantage. Bali Wang, go break through the atmosphere and destroy their satellites while becoming our own eyes and ears."

"Understood!"

Bali Wang replied expressionlessly, revealing a pair of robotic wings. They shone brightly before propelling him into the sky.

The core of the Mech Kingdom were these sentient robots. Each of them had their own unique abilities. Be it transforming into tanks, fighter jets, battleships, or even satellites, they were incredibly adaptive.

Bali Wang's ability was to break through the stratosphere, turning his entire body into an instrument of offense, as well as surveillance. He could destroy other satellites while transforming into one himself.

Yue Zhong, who was hiding afar, swept Bali Wang a look and frowned, "Not good, I can't hide forever. If he breaches into space, then we're in trouble."

If Bali Wang made it into space, although Yue Zhong could still control the Scarlet Reaper to fly into space, it would be extremely

tough to find him and kill him.

Furthermore, if Bali Wang was able to destroy the satellites, the humans on Earth would suffer a 30% drop in combat potential.

Chapter 1048: Combat Mech!

With a flip of Yue Zhong's hand, the Scarlet Reaper appeared in front of him. He stepped into it, and it began to radiate with light. A pair of wings burst out, and he soared towards the sky.

In a few breaths, he had caught up to Bali Wang by shooting like a meteor, pulling out a huge laser blade to slice out at the enemy Mech.

The speed of the Scarlet Reaper had reached another level under Yue Zhong's control, and the blade was extremely fast, where even some Type 7 experts might not be able to block it.

Without any means to prepare, Bali Wang just allowed the blade to slice through itself, as countless parts scattered through the skies.

As the 2 halves separated, there was no explosion, instead, the parts began to merge together once more into the Mech known as Bali Wang.

Yue Zhong saw how quickly the Mech had reformed, and his eyes narrowed, "Not dead yet?"

Most robot life forms would explode the moment they were sliced in two. As for this Bali Wang, it was able to regenerate, something Yue Zhong had never seen before.

Bali Wang swept Yue Zhong a look, and his robot eyes lit up, as it spoke in a human-like voice, "Human? This is China, based on the intel we have, the strongest human is Yue Zhong, and he possesses a red mech-body. You should either be him or one of his trusted subordinates, right?"

Yue Zhong stepped out, eyeing Bali Wang as he frowned, "You have been slashed by me, how come you're still alive?"

Bali Wang laughed out in a human-like manner, "Yue Zhong, do you think we will be so stupid as to reveal such classified

information to you? Just submit. Your human race has no hope. Our Mech Kingdom is full of experts. We could easily squash all resistance on this planet. Our vanguard force alone numbers over 250,000. The weakest is the close-combat armored beast, and it is on par with a Type 4 Divine Warrior. They are also not afraid of death, thus, their combat potential far surpasses you, humans. These 250,000 mechs will be enough to deal with Earth's humans."

"Furthermore, within our Mech Kingdom, there are over 160 billion of those close-combat armored beasts. Even if you managed to defeat this vanguard force, just the reinforcements will be enough to drown you out. If you don't submit, only death awaits. Submit to us, and we can allow you to remain King of the humans."

"160 billion!! What strength!!" Yue Zhong was shocked when he heard this.

That number alone was a challenge, not to mention that they were Mechs. If the humans on Earth were to face this number, it was like ants against dragons, there was too much of a gap.

Yue Zhong was already a Type 7 Divine Warrior, with the Second Order God-Devil Body, his combat potential heaven-defying. However, against 160 billion Armored Beasts, there was only escape. The rest of China would serve to become prey.

With a thought, Yue Zhong laughed out coldly, "Hmph! There's no use trying to scare me. There's definitely a limitation to how many of you can come. Otherwise, you wouldn't waste your words with me, and directly bring your troops to wipe out China. Your words prove that I'm right. It's not so easy to get your Mech army across."

Bali Wang laughed coldly, threatening harshly, "Yue Zhong, you're truly smart. That's right, there are problems in the Mech Kingdom coming over. However, those are small troubles. The distance between us is still far, that cannot change. If you don't submit, by the time our preparations are done, it will be the day

that China falls."

"You want to wipe out China? I will wipe you out first!"

There was a cold light in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he stepped forward, and appeared in front of Bali Wang, bringing his fist towards the Mech.

Bali Wang laughed out savagely, without dodging, as he sent his own fist towards Yue Zhong, "Fool, I'll let you know the difference between flesh and metal, there's no way you can match metal and alloy!"

At the point of impact, Bali Wang smiled insidiously, as a sharp alloy shot out from his fist.

Even so, Yue Zhong's fist continued towards the alloy blade.

Bali Wang might be a robot, but his sentience was high, not losing out to humans, and his battle experience was abundant.

"Trash, break for me!"

Yue Zhong roared out in rage, his right fist covered in the powerful God-Devil Flames, as well as his Dou Qi, radiating a bright gold glow, as the fist slammed into Bali Wang's.

Hong!

Following a powerful impact, Bali Wang's right fist, as well as the alloy blade, was crushed and destroyed, shattering in multiple pieces.

There was a look of shock in Bali Wang's eyes, as he groaned loudly while retreating backward, "How is this possible?! My body is made out of the most powerful of alloys, even stronger than the toughest of diamonds!! Unless it is a laser, my body would not be harmed so easily!! You're just a human!! How?!"

Yue Zhong stared at Bali Wang, noticing that the broken pieces did not merge back with Bali Wang, instead, scattering. He immediately let out a cold laugh, "I thought that you were truly

invincible. Seems like it's not perfect. You are of no use to me, die!"

With a wave of his hand, a bright blood radiance shot out from his sleeve, coiling around Bali Wang, instantly trapping him.

Bali Wang was made out of mechanical parts and possessed powerful strength. In terms of combat ability, however, he was still at the initial Type 7 realm. After being bound by the 16 blood radiances, he could not move.

However, since he was not made of flesh and blood, the blood radiance could not absorb anything.

Bali Wang quickly screamed downwards, "I'm being attacked!! Save me!!"

Bardonia lifted his head, barking out, "Bali Wang is being assaulted! Quick, go support him!!"

Before his words were fully out, the rest of the 19 sentient robots immediately soared into the sky.

"They're flying over, 19 Mechs with Type 7 realm abilities. Hehe, you're all going to be my prey!"

Yue Zhong swept them a look and laughed coldly. He entered the Scarlet Reaper, grabbing Bali Wang who was still immobile as he turned into a beam of light and charged towards the Protector Battleship.

"You want to catch me? Not so easy!!" Bali Wang roared out in anger, as his body began to separate, turning into numerous black balls, attempting to spread in all directions.

"Fool! In front of me, there's no way to run!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, stretching out his palm, as he executed the martial technique Dragon-catching Claws, and the atmospheric energy churned around him, forming a huge dragon claw that grabbed the entire region. The numerous round balls were then squashed into one huge, metal ball.

The blood radiance then quickly coiled around Bali Wang, turning into a blood cocoon.

Under the forceful pressure, Bali Wang was being squashed smaller, finally transforming back into his human-shape, but was fully immobilized this time.

"Yue Zhong!! Let go of our kin!! Right behind him, the voice of Bardonia sounded, together with the rest of the Mechs.

Yue Zhong did not seem to care, as he continued to soar forward while laughing coldly.

The Scarlet Reaper's speed was incredibly sick now that Yue Zhong was stronger, and Bardonia and the rest could not keep up.

"Bastard!"

Bardonia roared out in rage, his body transforming. In a breath, he became a powerful-looking fighter jet of about 10m-long, covered in strange runes.

After transforming, Bardonia's wings glowed brightly, and his entire being transformed into a flash of light that shot forwards.

His speed was increased by 10 times, and with a blazing hot trail, he shot towards Yue Zhong like a shooting star, pulling the distance close.

As he caught up to about 3km away from Yue Zhong, the 4 super particle cannons on him fanned out and fired at Yue Zhong wildly.

Hong!

Yue Zhong controlled the Scarlet Reaper and executed dodging movements, however, in a moment of carelessness, the Scarlet Reaper's right leg was still struck by one of the beams, and exploded in a shower of parts.

Chapter 1049: The might of the Yin-Yang Palm!

At the moment when the Scarlet Reaper's leg was struck, Yue Zhong was filled with a sense of shock, "What a powerful fighter jet!! This Mech is strong!"

"If this goes on, I will be destroyed by it. This expert from the Mech Kingdom is truly terrifying. The Scarlet Reaper is still lacking compared to them. If I can gain one of their peak mechs, and insert the Heart of Hope, it would be another powerful trump card."

With a thought, Yue Zhong quickly activated the energy shield of the Scarlet Reaper, while continuing towards the Protector Battleship.

From afar, the Protector Battleship was also flying towards him.

In just a few breaths, Yue Zhong had arrived in front of it and entered.

The moment the Protector Battleship retrieved Yue Zhong, it activated its own energy shields to block in front of it.

"Reinforcements eh, break for me!!"

Bardonia's Super Particle Cannons continued to fire wildly at the Protector Battleship.

Those beams that could pierce through a Type 7 expert slammed into the energy shield of the Protector Battleship, causing ripples, wearing down on its energy.

Yue Zhong grabbed the blood cocoon and brought it in front of the central computer, pulling out a cable and directly plugging it into Bali Wang.

Bali Wang saw the cable coming near him, his eyes finally revealing some fear, and he screamed out, "No! Yue Zhong, you

can't do this to me! No!!"

With his intelligence, he could tell that once he was plugged in, he would truly die, and be reduced to a slave.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold, as he directly connected the cable to Bali Wang, "Go to hell!"

With the connection, a large amount of data surged into Bali Wang's consciousness, directly consuming it. In just 2 seconds, the radiance in his eyes dimmed.

As a White-silver grade treasure, Bai Yi's might was truly terrifying, as long as it was in her territory, she was invincible.

Truthfully, every Treasure of Hope had amazing potential. Of course, in order to exhibit their maximum, the conditions were different. Even so, out of all the treasures, the Super A.I. was considered one of the strongest and versatile.

The light in Bali Wang's eyes came back, as he spoke, "Bali Wang greets Master. From now on, Bali Wang is willing to serve Master till the end of my life."

Yue Zhong had a pleased look, "Good! Good! I've managed to save a Type 7 Puppet Rune. Haha!"

A Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus was hard to find, and Yue Zhong did not have many of them. He was not willing to use those he had to fuel his Type 7 Puppet Runes. Now that Bai Yi could easily infiltrate and overwrite Bali Wang's program, it was cause for joy.

After all, a Type 7 expert was already considered an undefeatable existence on Earth. It was also tougher for a Type 7 expert to descend upon Earth.

This time, the Mech Kingdom had sent 20 Type 7 experts to Earth at a huge price. After all, there were restrictions, and the gates actually restrict most Type 7 experts from other planets. Of course, it was a different case for those who entered and raised to become Type 7 existences, or people of Earth like Yue Zhong, who was free

from the restrictions.

"That's great! These mechs will be mine!!"

There was a look of greed in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he hurried to put on the Stealth Armor, hiding all signs of life, and he soared back out of the Battleship.

Right outside of the Protector Battleship, Bardonia and the rest of the Mechs were currently firing wildly at the Protector Battleship.

The Battleship was large in size, with numerous cannons, and they fired back at the fleet of Mechs.

Bardonia's fighter jet-form also activated his shield, forcefully defending against the rain of cannon fire. From time to time, his particle cannons would fire back at the Battleship.

Although the Protector Battleship was larger than Bardonia's form, in truth, it was a disadvantage.

The weapons of the Battleship was effective against those large numbers of foreign species.

As for Bardonia, whose strength was at the Type 7 realm, be it its speed, or firepower, they were above the Protector Battleship. With the passing of time, he would definitely be able to break through the Protector Battleship's shields.

Yue Zhong reentered the battlezone in stealth, and with a thought, he sent an order to Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, adjust the aim, force him towards my direction."

"Yes!"

Bai Yi swiftly made the appropriate response, causing a fire net to form and envelope towards Bardonia, forcing him towards Yue Zhong's position.

However, the movement that Bardonia executed was out of Yue Zhong's expectation, instead, going further away from Yue Zhong, making it hard to catch him.

Bai Yi then reminded, "The energy shield is at 43%. Based on enemy's current firepower, the shield will break down in another 5 minutes."

"No, this won't do, I need to take him down now. I can't sneak attack him in Stealth."

Yue Zhong quickly made a decision and waved his hands, causing the Scarlet Reaper to appear. He took a step into it, and the body radiated. He shot towards Bardonia's position.

"So you want to fight it out with me? Yue Zhong! Hand over Bali Wang, otherwise, this time next year will be your death anniversary!"

Bardonia roared out in fury, and did not charge straight for Yue Zhong, instead, he continued to evade and adjust his cannons, firing at Yue Zhong. He wanted to use kiting tactics to wear Yue Zhong down.

As Yue Zhong piloted the Scarlet Reaper, his speed reached Mach-7, which was a sick speed for many Type 7 experts.

However, in comparison with Bardonia's speed at Mach-10, it was still lacking. Yue Zhong, who always prided himself on his speed, could only eat Bardonia's dust, and suffer his attacks.

Right at this time, the other 18 Mechs also shot over.

Bardonia threatened once more, "Yue Zhong, hand Bali Wang over, and surrender! Otherwise, you'll regret it!! We will head over to China and wipe out all your people, including your good friends, family, women, all of them! Not a single one will be left alive!"

"You want me to surrender? That's impossible! Furthermore, all of you will die today!!"

An icy look flashed past Yue Zhong's eyes, while the wings of the Scarlet Reaper flashed brightly, spewing out jets of air. At that instant, he shot towards one burly-looking Mech.

In a breath, Yue Zhong arrived in front of him, exiting out of the Scarlet Reaper, and grabbed out with his Dragon-catching Claws, and the surrounding atmospheric energy compressed around the Mech.

The bloody radiance shot out and enveloped the Mech, immobilizing him.

After subduing that Mech, Yue Zhong flung out with all his strength, sending the blood cocoon towards the Protector Battleship. It entered the ship in a flash.

When the Mech shot into the Protector Battleship, he was grabbed by Bali Wang who was waiting and dragged to the central computer, before Bai Yi began her work on him.

Bardonia screeched out, and charged into the remaining group of Mechs, transforming back into his human-shape as he roared, "Bastard!! Kill him!!"

The remaining 18 Mechs quickly got into a formation, and each of them revealed a powerful cannon from their bodies, as they fired out in a strange and profound manner, aiming for Yue Zhong.

Among them, 6 of them focused on sealing the spatial area, locking Yue Zhong's region. Even a Type 8 Divine Warrior would not be able to get out of this sealing array without some special means.

With the lock of space, coupled with the convergence of the shots, it was enough to annihilate some Type 8 experts. This attack could be said to be invincible on Earth.

"Yin-Yang Palm!"

Against that powerful imminent attack, Yue Zhong was forced to a corner, and with a ferocious glint in his eyes, his left hand was wrapped with dark and cold Yin-energy, while his right was covered with bright, radiant Yang-energy. As both converged, the formed a powerful palm that shot out towards the incoming

firepower.

When that palm came crashing down, it caused the firepower to scatter, even tearing apart the spatial lock.

Without any diminished strength, the Yin-Yang Palm continued towards the 18 Mechs, directly destroying 3 of them, with no way to regenerate.

The rest of the 15 were sent flying backward, amidst various parts of their bodies scattering away.

Chapter 1050: The Terrifying Might of the Mech Kingdom!

Bardonia trembled, and quickly produced some limbs, eyeing Yue Zhong with fear and shock, "How is that possible? You're just a human, how could you possibly deal with 18 of us?"

The 18 of them, when joining hands, could even deal with a Type 8 expert. Yet, Yue Zhong had single-handedly beat them back, it was truly beyond expectations.

Yue Zhong frowned, "There was no life force. Seems like the life force of these Mechs cannot be absorbed by the imprint. That is to say, only flesh and blood work for me."

The God and Devil Imprint was a heaven-defying item, allowing their users to evolve continually. While other humans might need to cultivate diligently for over a hundred years just to reach the Type 7 plateau, Yue Zhong had done so in 2 years, even forming his God-Devil Body.

However, it had a weak point, and that was it could not absorb any experience or life forms from non-biological life forms.

"Forget it. Even if I cannot absorb, as long as I can capture all of them, it will be a boon too. The Yin-Yang Palm was magnificent, but it expended too much. With my current strength, I can only execute the 5th Level of it another 10 times. No wonder only one person managed to reach the 5th Level in all of the Saint Lands' history.

Yue Zhong looked up at the remaining 15 Mechs, and right in front of Bardonia's astonished gaze, Yue Zhong grabbed out with his Dragon-catching Claws, capturing 2 of them and pulling them closer to himself.

"You want to capture me?! Not so easy! Break!!"

One of the Mechs roared out in rage, his body expanding as he

transformed into a dragon-like robot, with a height of over 10m, his back glowing with 3 pairs of sharp, metal wings, as well as multiple blades around his frame.

After his transformation, he flapped with his wings and transformed into a bright light, directly slashing through the Dragon-catching Claws, and escaped.

Each and every Mech had their own core transformation, and when executed, their strength would be boosted in certain areas.

There were pros and cons to utilizing their core transformation. If one of them was a tank, after transformation, it would not be able to fly. However, in exchange, it could gain astonishing defense and destructive power.

The other Mech that was grabbed by Yue Zhong was not as fortunate, he tried to struggle, but was immobilized by the Dragon-catching Claw, and brought in front of Yue Zhong.

With a wave of his hands, the bloody radiance swept out and covered the Mech in a blood cocoon, and shot towards the Battleship.

Bardonia's face fell, as he shouted out in shock, "Retreat! We're not his match!"

Hearing that shout, the rest of the Mechs began to retreat explosively

These Mechs were elites of their kind, and smart. When they came across an enemy they could not handle, they would choose to flee, and not fight to the death.

"Retreat? Too late!"

Yue Zhong swept them a cold look as he laughed. With a single step, he shot towards Bardonia's location.

Bardonia was the fastest in terms of speed. Yue Zhong could allow the rest to escape, but definitely not Bardonia. Otherwise, it

will be a future problem.

Bardonia celebrated wildly, transforming into his fighter-jet form, "Fool, if you went to catch others, you might be able to grab one or 2. You want to catch me, there's no hope at all!"

When the Mechs joined hands to attack, in order to gain an advantage where $1 + 1$ was more than 2, they had to be in their human-forms. Otherwise, if one was in the sky and another was on the ground, it was hard to suppress the enemy. That was why Bardonia had to keep switching depending on the situation.

"Do it!" Right as Bardonia was transforming, Yue Zhong shouted out furiously.

The Protect Battleship had already readied its radar and released a disrupting pulse towards the Mechs.

Bai Yi had adjusted the pulse to be more effective towards the Mech after obtaining Bali Wang, who has been converted.

Faced with that pulse, Bardonia's body trembled as he suffered a moment of displacement, as though his body did not belong to him.

"Shit!"

He was, after all, a powerful Super. A.I, and not a second after Bai Yi's disruptive pulse, he had regained clarity.

In that second, Yue Zhong had already arrived on top of Bardonia's frame, waving his hands and causing the bloody radiances to surround Bardonia in a huge blood cocoon, shrinking continuously.

In his fighter-jet form, Bardonia's advantage was in speed, and not strength, thus he was unable to break out of the cocoon.

Even so, he continued to struggle frantically, the cannons on his body firing out constantly.

When the shots that could cause even a Type 7 expert to be

heavily injured or killed, slammed into the walls of the blood cocoon, they just shot past and flew out into the skies.

As the blood cocoon continued to tighten, the cannons were being crushed and twisted into a pile of metal that was no longer usable.

Initially, even if Bardonia had any parts that suffered damage, he could quickly reuse some spare parts to make up for it. However, inside the cocoon, there was no chance to transform.

Yue Zhong then waved his hands, and the blood cocoon shot towards the Protector Battleship.

After suppressing Bardonia, Yue Zhong charged towards the remaining Mechs, and the Seventh Order Gravity Manipulation crashed down and enveloped the Mechs.

Covered by the wave, the Mechs felt as though there were mountains on their backs, their speed decreasing.

Yue Zhong flickered around like a specter, appearing in front of those Mechs and waving his hands as the blood radiances appeared to wrap around them in blood cocoons.

After capturing them all successfully, Yue Zhong brought all of them with him back into the Protector Battleship.

He then brought them out one by one, undergoing Bai Yi's reset, and became Yue Zhong's personal property.

Once he gained control over them, the 200,000 close-combat armored beasts below were also controlled by Bai Yi easily.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the robots then focused on slaughtering the aliens, and not humans.

Right now, the strongest alien within the Cang Ya base was only at the Type 6 realm, and they were not a match for the Type 7 Mechs. Coupled with the fact that their numbers were at a disadvantage, they were soon slaughtered and the surviving ones

forced to retreat into a forest outside of the base.

Yue Zhong sent out a small battalion to give chase while arranging for the people in Cang Ya base to be escorted into the Storm Battleship.

After he was done with all this, Yue Zhong began to question the Mechs.

"Bardonia, tell me, what's the situation like on the Mech Kingdom?"

Bardonia was the leader of the vanguard forces, and his position was high, thus he held the most information.

"Yes! Master, there're 160 billion Mechs in the Kingdom, the lowest level are cannon fodders with no intelligence. Combat strength range from Type 4 to Type 7. The population of the kingdom is about 2 billion, and everyone there is a sentient Mech. The weakest is at least a Type 5, while Type 6 citizens are equivalent to commanders. The Type 7 ones are all considered royalty, while Type 8 Mechs are Lords, and the single Type 9 Mech is the Emperor.

Bardonia continued respectfully, "Our Mech Kingdom has an Emperor, 8 Lords, 1,000 royalty, and over 1 million commanders. The rest are all fighters.

Yue Zhong's expression turned ugly when he heard that, "What? Type 9 Divine Warrior?! The Mech Emperor!! Damned Mech Kingdom, to think that it would so strong!!"

A Type 9 Divine Warrior could control space, and even transcend space to attack another world. Each of them possessed the qualification to challenge God and was a heaven-defying existence.

In front of a Type 9 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong was still a small ant. One move was enough to wipe him out, without even the chance to flee.

Chapter 1051: Galastar!

Yue Zhong's heart was heavy, "Over 160 billion Mechs of Type 4 and above, a thousand Type 7 Divine Warriors, 8 Type 8 and a Type 9. This sort of strength is too fearsome. There's nothing Earth can do!"

The Mech Kingdom had already conquered a few planets, and those not fit for human habitation were not a problem for those Mechs. They just needed resources to be able to produce more of their kind. Of course, it was not easy to produce a sentient being, and it took over eons just to have 20 billion of their kind.

However, even so, it was still terrifying. Not to mention the upper echelons of the Kingdom, just 100 million of the Mech Beasts themselves at the Type 4 realm would be enough to devastate Earth if they all came down.

After all, in the 2nd World of the Saint Clan, there were barely 1,000 Type 4 experts. Of course, that was when they were still stuck in the world. Upon descending to Earth, they had started to evolve once more, with many reaching the Type 4 and Type 5 realms. Right now, Earth was a source of evolution, allowing any race to evolve as long as they were on it. Many species had thus arrived whether by willing or unwilling circumstances.

Yue Zhong asked, "With such strength, how come your Kingdom did not send the entire army to Earth?"

Bardonia replied, "There're limitations on the Gates of Hell. The strongest experts that could pass through each Gate can only be at the Type 6 realm. There's also a limit on the number. Every month, a maximum of 200,000 Type 4 and above experts. As for how those of us Type 7 arrive here, it's because the Mech Emperor had forced the Gate with his prowess, allowing 20 of us through.

Yue Zhong felt a chill, "The Mech Emperor already possess the ability to manipulate the Gate of Hell?! His strength is something

else!"

It must be clear that the Gates of Hell were even impervious to the nuclear warheads, or any attack on it. Yet, such an entity was able to be manipulated slightly by the strength of the Mech Emperor.

Should Yue Zhong be slightly weaker, the whole of China would be definitely destroyed by the Mech army.

He thought to himself, "I've been through so much, and although I've grown greatly, I'm still weak. I need to evolve further! Otherwise, just that Mech Emperor will be enough to wipe the floor with me."

Yue Zhong then asked, "Bardonia, are there any Mutant Beasts on the planet your Mech Kingdom is from?"

In response, Bardonia spoke, "Yes, there are many powerful Mutant Beasts located throughout treacherous terrain in our Mech Kingdom. Our Mech Kingdom would send out forces from time to time to deal with those Mutant Beasts and obtain their nuclei. On our planet, the Mutant Beasts are often large and dangerous, with Type 6 Mutant Beasts considered common. In each and every territory, there is at least one Type 9 Mutant Beast, which even our Mech Kingdom is not willing to antagonize."

Yue Zhong began pondering the moment he heard it, "No wonder."

Suddenly, he asked, "Within the Mech Kingdom, are there any resistance forces?"

Bardonia replied, "Within the Mech Kingdom, there is a small human faction that actively resists the rule of our Mech Kingdom. They are all hidden within various corners and would appear from time to time to damage our facilities. Their strength is weak, the strongest among them only a Type 6 expert. Their biggest achievement to date was occupying one of our smaller towns and

destroying 5,000 Mech Beasts, before scurrying back underground. They had not been too much of an issue to us."

Yue Zhong frowned and nodded, "I see!"

Initially, he had planned to make use of the resistance to start his counter-attack, but from the look of things, it seemed as though there was no point as the resistance was too weak.

However, it was to be expected, as the Mech Kingdom was advanced and their facilities and equipment state-of-the-art. The Mechs did not need to sleep either, and could constantly conduct surveillance against the human resistance. If the Mech Emperor willed it, it was likely that the human resistance would have fallen long ago. Who knew what he was thinking of though, to keep them and not wipe them out entirely.

Yue Zhong continued to ponder quietly, "It seems that I need to head to the Mech Kingdom for a trip. Unless there are other precious relics that appear or the appearance of a Type 7 Mutant Beast, it is hard for me to improve and achieve a breakthrough. Staying on Earth is waiting for death."

Having made that decision, he did not hesitate any longer and ordered 3 of the Mechs towards the main base.

Of the remaining ones, Yue Zhong left 8 at the Gate, preventing the next batch of experts from the Mech Kingdom.

The rest, as well as the 200,000 Mech Beasts, were handed over to Han Qiong to lead, moving through Sichuan to attack the zombies, and rescue the survivors of Sichuan, while scavenging for resources.

After he had made his preparations, Yue Zhong donned on the Stealth Armor, completely hiding his aura, and went through the Gate of Hell to the Mech Kingdom.

With a flash of light, Yue Zhong went through and arrived at the mother planet of the Mech Kingdom, Galastar.

After passing through, Yue Zhong immediately felt his body sinking, "Holy, this gravity is at least 100 times that of Earth."

The location of the Gate of Hell was at a wide, vast plain, which had been converted into a huge fort made of metals and alloys.

Other than the Gate of Hell's location which was sandy, the rest had already been built up into a metallic landscape. There were countless sensors and cannons aimed, with radars and sound detectors sweeping the area of the Gate of Hell. As long as somebody intruded, he or she would be blasted to pieces in an instant.

Even a Type 8 expert would be killed with the amount of firepower here. Furthermore, the entire area was covered by superalloy, with no way out whatsoever, not even an area to dig out of.

Yue Zhong scanned the area and thought quietly, "This Mech Kingdom is truly crafty, actually setting so many traps. If it was not for the Stealth Armor as well as Bai Yi, I might have been blasted to pieces the moment I exited. Even if I escaped all those somehow, the area is locked down, without anybody opening the gate, there's no way to exit! Unfortunately, I have Bai Yi! This electronic cage will not hold me down!"

Right now, Yue Zhong was celebrating the fact that he had obtained Bai Yi. If it had been something like the Sword of Solemn Promise, no matter how strong he was, he could not break out of here.

"Bai Yi, do it!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the numerous sensors dimmed slightly, and a huge alloy door of about 20m in thickness, and height of 500m opened, revealing a wide and vast tunnel.

Yue Zhong swiftly proceeded through.

The core of this defense had obviously been at the Gate of Hell,

while the rest was considerably slacker security. Yue Zhong passed through them easily.

When they were at a tunnel, Bai Yi suddenly spoke, Master, there're 3 tunnels to choose from. However, outside of them, there are Mechs standing guard. Once the doors, opened, they will know that someone has intruded."

Yue Zhong frowned, "Damn it, their security is so tight."

"Wait? If I wait for them to open it, and make my way out, it will be safe and no one none the wiser. But, it will take too long. They can only go through once a month, and if the Mech Emperor were to arrive himself, it will be a problem. That's a freaking Type 9 monster. I can't hand my fate to luck." He calculated, before walking towards the location where the Mechs were the least, and asked, "Bai Yi, how confident are you in blocking their communications over the other side."

Bai Yi replied, "I can jam their signal for about 5 minutes. However, Master, you had better deal with them quickly. Once they lose their connection for too long, the enemy will also discover the anomaly. Based on my estimations, it's best to destroy them in 20 seconds."

"20 seconds eh? I got it." Yue Zhong breathed deeply, and a resolute look appeared in his eyes, as he commanded, "Open!"

The moment he gave that order, the superalloy door slid open.

He executed his Seventh Order Shadow Steps, pouncing towards the 4 Mechs outside.

The moment the superalloy door slid open, all 4 Mechs whipped around to see.

All of a sudden, 4 blood-red radiances coiled around them and wrapped tightly.

Yue Zhong stretched out his hands and crushed all 4 of their brains, revealing a few microchips containing Type 6 Mutant Beast

nuclei.

The manufacturing of these Mechs required the Mutant Beasts' nuclei, and their smart chips were their weakest points. As long as the microchip was intact, even if their bodies were destroyed, they could regenerate. Of course, depending on the damage, the greater the loss to the Mechs' strength as well.

Chapter 1052: Order of the Mech Lord!

When he saw those smart chips, Yue Zhong waved his hands and a mech of about 10m appeared out of thin air.

The Storage Ring was void of oxygen, thus it was not suitable to keep flesh and blood within. Furthermore, the Mechs did not need to breathe, that was why they could be kept in the storage rings.

This particular Mech, Hu Yanda, was a human-shaped robot with radars and displays. Its combat strength was at the Type 7 realm but considered weak, however, in terms of electronic battles, he was extremely strong. With the ability to scan his enemies, cyber-attacks, and calculations, he was adept and powerful.

The moment Hu Yanda appeared, 4 data lines appeared and connected to the 4 smart chips. After his system had been overridden by Bai Yi, countless streams of data overflowed the 4 smart chips, directly taking over the original consciousness.

Hu Yanda then retrieved the data lines, while the 4 Mechs that had their heads damaged by Yue Zhong quickly recovered, revealing their original state.

Once the 4 of them were restored, they came up to Yue Zhong and bowed, Master!"

He swept them a look, "Stay here and keep things status quo."

They replied respectfully, "Yes!"

After that, he quickly charged for the outside.

Along the way, he relied on his sneak attacks to take out another 18 Mechs, and under Bai Yi's guide, he arrived outside of the Fort.

The Gate of Hell had appeared on a desert area of Galastar, but it was already converted into a huge army camp.

Countless Mech Beasts were prowling and patrolling around the base.

The ones that Yue Zhong saw on Earth were the riff-raff of this huge army.

A number of gigantic floating spaceships were in the air, each of them over a hundred meters in length, possessing countless particle beams.

Yue Zhong had known from Bardonia's intel that these powerful-looking and enormous Battleships were called Viper Battleships, and each of their particle cannons could injure or even kill a Type 6 expert.

Even so, within their ranks, they were classified as just A-grade, with a B-grade and even C-grade above them.

A B-grade Battleship could deal with a Type 7 expert, with its firepower even stronger than those of the Protector Battleships. In fact, even the Raytheon Cannon could not match the B-grade ones.

As for the C-grade ones, they could kill a Type 8 expert, and within the Mech Kingdom, there were only 8 of such ships, and they were controlled by the Mech Lords.

In the legends, there was even a D-grade one, which could harm a Type 9 expert with a single shot. It was rumored that it was controlled by the Mech Emperor. No one knew if it was true or false, not even Bardonia.

Yue Zhong swept a glance across the camp and thought, "I must leave this place first. If I do anything here, the Mech Kingdom will react quickly. By that time, it will be impossible for me to return to Earth."

With a plan in mind, Yue Zhong quickly activated his Stealth and left.

Along the way, he could see sentries and numerous Mech Beasts stationed every step of the way.

On top of that, within the navigation routes and tunnels, there were radars and sensors constantly sweeping for threats.

Furthermore, he could sense with his Second Order God-Devil Body, that there was a strange wave that was being emitted throughout the camp. Once there were any strange movements, it would be picked up immediately.

Since he was wearing the Stealth Armor, which was considered a Treasure of Hope, it could block off most of the sensors and heat radars. However, under the threat of that strange wave, it was likely that he might be exposed if he were to make a random move.

However, Yue Zhong also had Bai Yi, and as she controlled the sensors, she could control them to release some distortions, allowing Yue Zhong to traverse through.

As he was walking, all of a sudden, there was a huge sound of alarm within the camp.

Countless Mech Beasts walked out from various parts of the camp, forming a neat formation as they followed the routes.

As they gathered in numbers, Yue Zhong finally saw for himself how terrifying they were in numbers. There were many types, with different body sizes and limbs, some with wings, others with powerful frames, all equipped with massive weapons of war.

The moment he saw those mechs, Yue Zhong felt an overwhelming pressure, and his face fell, "Was I exposed?"

There were only enemies everywhere in this camp, the moment he was exposed, then no matter how strong he was, the chances of him surviving were minuscule.

"No! That's not right, if I was already exposed, there would have been firing!"

Due to his experience of countless battles, he had reacted quickly, and not acted rashly. Instead, he retracted all signs of himself and stood quietly by the roadside.

The huge army continued to march forward in formation, while Yue Zhong stood and listened to the thundering footsteps.

The numbers and weight of the Mechs caused the ground to rumble without stop.

He looked at them and sighed, thinking quietly, "Not afraid of death, suited for both offense and defense, compliant with orders. Such Mech Beast are the best and most ideal of soldiers. It would be incredibly tough to overcome them."

If such an army was to be controlled by Bai Yi, then even a Type 8 expert would be injured or even killed.

Yue Zhong then thought, "Since it was not me, there must have been something that happened. Otherwise, they would not have deployed so many. Let's go take a look."

With a flash of his figure, Yue Zhong quickly ducked in beside a spider-like Mech Beast and ran towards the distance.

After marching for about 60m, the huge Mech army came to a huge, vast plain.

Currently, there were many Mech Beasts as well as a horde of Mutant Beasts engaged in slaughter. Cannons fired everywhere amidst bright blasts, while flesh and blood splattered, as the center of the battlefield had transformed into a huge meat grinder. Many Mutant Beasts had been reduced to dust under the relentless assault. At the same time, many Mutant Beasts were tearing Mech Beasts into bits.

On the battlefield, there were all sorts of Mutant Beasts, some dozens of meters tall, others reaching even hundreds of meters in height. On Earth, they would be invincible, sweeping aside any country. Due to their might, the Mech Beasts were being destroyed every second.

Only those who were sentient were able to keep themselves alive, regenerating even when their bodies were smashed apart. As for the ordinary Mech Beasts, they lacked such abilities, once they were destroyed, they would lose their combat strength.

The sentient Mechs could make use of their parts to regenerate due to their smart chips and could control cells on the individual level, thus achieving an immortal effect.

Yue Zhong observed the battlefield and locked on to a particular corner, where 200,000 sentient Mechs stood quietly. He went towards them silently.

Those on the battlefield were the cannon fodder, while these sentient Mechs were the true main characters.

The moment Yue Zhong got close, Bai Yi retrieved a flurry of information and relayed them to Yue Zhong.

"The great Mech Lord Murphyte had issued a command, killing a Type 3 Mutant Beast is worth 1 contribution point, exchanging its nucleus is also worth 1 contribution point. Killing a Type 4 Mutant Beast is worth 10 contribution points, and likewise for the exchange of its nucleus. A Type 5 is worth 1,000 points, a Type 6, 100,000 points, and a Type 7 10,000,000 points. A Type 8 is worth 1 billion points, but its nucleus is worth 5 billion points. Please do your best in slaughtering the Mutant Beasts and obtain more points. In the future, you may use this to get the Kingdom to help you evolve in realm."

"Killing a Type 7 is worth 10 million points, that's great! With it, I can exchange for a B-grade particle cannon, and kill a Type 7 expert if I can hit him!"

"If only I can kill a Type 8, worth a total of 6 billion points, I can directly purchase a C-Grade inexhaustible energy source, pushing my strength up another tier. I would be closer to the Type 7 realm then."

"This time, this battle is the best chance to evolve, I need to kill more and reach the Type 5 realm!"

"..."

Among these Mechs, they were all exchanging conversations

with excited feelings.

Chapter 1053: Galastar Virtual Network!

The sentient Mechs of the Mech Kingdom could also evolve, through killing Mutant Beasts, defeating their enemies, and obtaining all sorts of treasures in exchange for contribution points. They could then exchange all these for parts, enhancing themselves to the limit, before going through the Evolving Temple of the Mech Kingdom to upgrade to a higher-level Mech. Therefore, such points were extremely important.

Yue Zhong then had an idea, "I've already enslaved a dozen Mechs, with almost 10 million worth of points. If I want to exchange, I need to grab one of these sentient Mechs and infiltrate the Kingdom."

10 million points were worth about a few million Type 4 Nuclei. It was a sizeable fortune.

The Mech Kingdom was extremely advanced, with enough contribution points, they could produce weapons that could threaten Type 8 experts as well. If Yue Zhong could obtain a few of those, then there would be some insurance against the Mech Kingdom.

Yue Zhong could only think of all possible ways to strengthen China's strength and threshold, otherwise, the fate of his people would be too terrible to imagine. Humanity would either be enslaved or killed.

After the orders were given, the sentient Mechs quickly gathered in their own teams and flew off towards the battlefield.

Many who were hoping to evolve went on their own, after all, while it was safer in groups, the benefits had to be shared. The contribution points they could obtain would be lesser as a whole.

Of course, each of these lone rangers was an expert and had vast combat strength.

Seeing them leave, Yue Zhong swept his gaze and chose a Type 6 close-combat specialist to follow.

Although the battlefield was chaotic, it was under surveillance. If those long-range Mechs hidden at a distance were to disappear and reappear on the battlefield, it would be suspicious. On the other hand, it was more likely to subjugate a close-combat specialist.

The Type 6 Mech which Yue Zhong had set his sights on quickly transformed into his battle state, transforming into a human-shaped warmachine of about 8m in height, dragging a long alloy blade. His claws were also sharp and long.

After transforming, the Type 6 Mech shot into the midst of the Mutant Beasts, slashing out with his claws and blades, directly tearing a 20m Type 4 Python apart.

The gravity on Galastar was a 100 times stronger than Earth. In order to deal with it, the monsters are smaller in sizes. While it was common to see Type 4 Mutant Beasts of over a hundred meters on Earth, Galastar had numerous at the 4-5m range, while 20m and above were considered gigantic.

As he dashed into the crowd of Mutant Beasts, he weaved in and out at the speed of sound, his claws dancing about, tearing up numerous Mutant Beasts into chunks, with not a single one able to take a single hit from him.

Yue Zhong could not find any opportunity, thus he followed behind just like a ghost.

The performance of the Type 6 sentient Mech was outstanding, and one Type 5 Mutant Lizard with a thick layer of scales had a vicious look in its eyes as it dashed through an area while being bombarded by one of the A-grade Battleships in the sky, pouncing towards the Type 6 Mech.

The Type 6 Mech swept the Type 5 Mutant Lizard a look and charged right at him with a vicious look of his own.

"Good chance!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes turned bright, as he activated his Type 7 Shadow Steps, and got within 10m of the Type 6 Mech.

When the distance between the Type 6 Mech and Type 5 Mutant Lizard was about 3m, the Type 5 Mutant Lizard slashed out viciously.

The Type 6 sentient Mech raised his own claw and blocked.

At that instant, Yue Zhong increased his speed, and got behind the Type 6 Mech, immediately grabbing him and slamming his entire frame into the Type 5 Mutant Lizard.

The countless blades of the Type 6 Mech slashed into the chest of Type 5 Mutant Lizard, as his body, as well as Yue Zhong, entered it.

The claw of the Type 5 Mutant Lizard slashed out at empty air, as blood burst forth and it screamed out in pain.

Inside the chest of the Type 5 Mutant Lizard, Yue Zhong's claw grabbed the head of the Type 6 sentient Mech, pulling out the smart chip, and inserted a cable to it. Bai Yi then proceeded to overwrite the information of the Type 6 Mech.

Bai Yi was able to exhibit different strengths depending on her medium of conduct. Against the Type 7 Mechs, she needed the Protector Battleship, or a being like the Type 7 Hu Yanda that was a mobile central computer, to be able to attack their cores.

Against the Type 6 close-combat types, the handheld tablet was enough, but of course, it would take more time.

"Niu Meng greets Master!"

In a few breaths, the Type 6 Mech had been enslaved and became under Yue Zhong, reporting to him with respect.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Open up your cockpit, and let me in!"

Niu Meng quickly opened, "Yes! Master!"

The cockpit was extremely advanced, and the moment Yue Zhong entered, he could access Niu Meng's sight and perception. With a single thought, he could control how Niu Meng fought, and what options were redundant. At the same time, he could transfer his own strength into Niu Meng itself, raising its capabilities.

At the same time, knowledge flowed into Yue Zhong's sea of notification from Niu Meng's own, and Yue Zhong could access any part of his memory.

Yue Zhong felt the incoming information and felt enlightened, "Combining the Mech's combat strength and the pilot's combat strength, it would achieve an effect more than 1+1. This is the direction of interplanetary evolution, if these sentient Mechs could be piloted by outstanding pilots, a Type 6 Mech could easily crush a Type 7 pilotless Mech."

If Yue Zhong could find a few talented pilots, then even if their personal strength might not be high, by piloting these evolved Mechs, they could exhibit a powerful strength. In that scenario, Yue Zhong would not be fighting a war by himself anymore.

Yue Zhong then controlled Niu Meng to tear the Type 5 Mutant Lizard apart. In a breath's time, he charged through the head of Type 5 Mutant Lizard in a shower of blood and flesh.

After killing that Type 5 Mutant Lizard, Yue Zhong allowed Niu Meng to continue to slaughter the Mutant Beasts, while he himself kept tabs on the Galastar Virtual Network and the messages flowing in.

Once he was on it, he could feel his consciousness sucked into a mysterious place, and he reappeared on a street, in the shape of Niu Meng's human-form.

On the street, Yue Zhong took a look around, and he could see countless forms of beasts and mech, like tigers, tanks, airplanes, and even a bug.

Within the Galastar Virtual Network, everyone could alter their appearance as they wished, the only thing that could not change was their identity number and names. Some of them were willing to walk around in the network in human-shapes, while some others preferred other strange forms. Of course, most of them chose to use the human-form.

Apparently, it was because the Mech Emperor himself used a human avatar inside the Virtual Network, thus, most of the other sentient Mechs followed suit.

One tortoise asked curiously, "Niu Meng? How are you here? Weren't you deployed to the 1st Battlefield?"

"1st Battlefield, how lucky Niu Meng. You still dare to enter here while on the battlefield, you don't want your life anymore?"

"..."

A number of curious emails were sent over, most of them Niu Meng's friends.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "I'm here to check up on some intel."

Hearing that, the rest stopped pestering him.

On the battlefield, sometimes, the sentient Mechs would come across tough enemies, and while battling, they would access the Virtual Network on information to deal with their enemies.

Sentient Mechs had powerful computing powers, and multitasking was nothing much to them. Even the most ordinary sentient Mech could access information while fighting an enemy. With the Virtual Network's help, the sentient Mechs could emerge victorious even though they were at a disadvantage and suddenly kill their enemies.

Chapter 1054: Exchanging a B-Grade Particle Cannon and B-Grade Laser Blade!

On the Galastar Virtual Network, Yue Zhong could call up any information with just a thought.

In a flash, countless information flowed into his mind.

Amidst them, he could see the parts needed for Mech Beasts and weapons of war, that could cause one to go blind with greed.

Yue Zhong looked through and thought to himself, "Those ordinary Type 4 Mech Beast just require a nucleus to exchange. It's so cheap, if I can exchange for 100 million of them, I could sweep through any force on Earth."

While they were good, it was impossible for him to bring back 100 million to Earth. He quickly abandoned the idea and looked through the other options.

"This is!! The body of a Type 8 Mech Lord!!" Yue Zhong caught sight of something as his eyes brightened before he quickly frowned. "How much is it...? Holy shit 30 billion points!! Too expensive!!"

In this exchange list, the strongest item was this body of a Type 8 Mech Lord. If Yue Zhong could obtain it, and input the Heart of Hope inside, before entering to pilot it, it was likely that he could fight against a Type 8 expert. However, the price was astonishing, and he had no means of exchanging.

Yue Zhong then made his choice, "Forget it, let's exchange for a B-Grade Particle Cannon and B-Grade Laser Blade. If this Mech installs these 2, its fighting prowess should increase by 10 times."

In an instant, he had spent 2 million out of his 100 million points.

Above the battlefield, about 3km in the sky, there was a huge, round mechanical fort, of about 500km in diameter. At the

moment that Yue Zhong chose those 2 items, one door opened up at the side, and out flew 2 items that shot towards the ground.

Yue Zhong pulled out from the Galastar Virtual Network and controlled the Mech Niu Meng to slaughter the Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

"You have exchanged for a B-Grade Particle Cannon and B-Grade Laser Blade, please accept your items."

As Yue Zhong was piloting the Mech to tear through the head of a Type 3 Mutant Beast, a sound rang out in Niu Meng's head, at the same time, the 2 items shot downwards from the sky.

Yue Zhong then controlled Niu Meng to step back.

One Type 4 Green-scaled Ape and a Type 5 Black-Scaled Huge Python pounced towards Yue Zhong, when all of a sudden, the 2 items shooting down slammed into the bodies of the 2 Mutant Beasts.

Hong!

Following a large blast, both Mutant Beasts had their bodies broken, as blood and flesh splattered, their bodies deep in a ditch caused by the impact of the 2 shooting stars.

Yue Zhong took a step forward, arriving in front of both ditches, and waved his hands. 2 black armored balls flew out from the ditches.

The moment the 2 armored balls entered his hands, they opened up to reveal the 2 items within. One was the B-Grade Laser Blade, the other was a 500mm B-Grade Particle Cannon.

Yue Zhong directly pressed the B-Grade Particle Cannon to the Mech's shoulder and pressed a button, allowing the fusion of the part into the frame. He could sense clearly that he was able to immediately control the weapon to fire out.

"Very good, now that I have these weapons, I can start to

slaughter the Type 7 Mutant Beasts."

His gaze swept across the center of the battlefield, and he could see all sorts of large, gigantic Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts.

The main characters at the center were not those Type 5 or Type 6 Mutant Beasts though, instead, they were the Type 7 Mutant Beasts, many of them over 1km in length, covered in thick and powerful scales.

The defense of the Type 7 Mutant Beasts was too sick. The A-Grade cannons of the Viper Battleships in the skies could kill a Type 6 expert with a single hit, but when dealing with those Type 7 Mutant Beasts, they could not even penetrate those scales.

The Type 7 Mutant Beasts continued to weave through the horde of Mech Beasts, slapping out with their massive bodies, turning them into a pile of scrap metal.

One particular Type 7 Scarlet Flame Dragon that had a body that was entirely red, and looked about 70% similar to a Tyrannosaurus Rex, opened its huge jaws and spat out a huge breath of flames.

Under the fierce blazes, many of the Mech Beasts melted directly, turning into puddles of liquid metal.

Not even the sentient Mechs with smart chips were spared under those merciless flames, turning into liquid.

One Mutant Giant Lizard with a body length of 1km and 6 tails charged out and dashed through the horde of Mech Beasts at the speed of sound, its tails slapping out constantly, destroying many of the Mech Beasts.

These Type 7 Mutant Beasts had terrifying combat strength, each one of them equivalent to a calamity. Whenever they charged, it felt like the ground was shaking and there was no way of stopping them. Even the Type 7 sentient Mechs had to work in groups just to deal with one of them.

Within the Mech Kingdom, there were not many Type 7 Mechs,

and they belonged to the nobility. They had tyrannical combat strength, and on this battlefield alone, there were 80 of them, with 10 in a group, separated into 8 different groups to deal with the 8 Type 7 Mutant Beasts.

However, the total number of Type 7 Mutant Beasts were 9, with 1 not defended against. That single beast was a Type 7 Mutant Bronze-Bashing Black Boar. Its body was 1 km in length, covered entirely in black scales, while sharp spikes protruded out of everywhere, and it had 3 long tails shimmering like shooting stars.

The Type 7 Mutant Bronze-Bashing Black Boar was extremely ferocious, charging through the Mechs while braving the firepower. Behind it, there were 50 other Type 6 of its clan, as well as numerous Type 5, Type 4 and Type 3 variants. This entire species was led by their Type 7 leader, tearing through the ranks of the Mechs.

200 Type 6 Mechs had revealed their core forms, attacking the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar wildly. However, other than a rare few which possessed the B-Grade weapons to injure it, the rest could only deal minor damage to it, which it recovered from very quickly due to its insane regeneration.

The Type 7 Mutant Black Boar continued to terrorize the Mechs with a frightening speed, far beyond what their reinforcements could offer.

Yue Zhong stared at that Type 7 Black Boar with a heated gaze, "That's the one!! It will be my first prey, after killing it, I will definitely continue to evolve!"

In the past, he would have barely been an ant-like existence to such Mutant Beasts, not being able to tear apart their defenses in the slightest. However, he had grown to reach a realm capable of challenging such Type 7 Beasts.

With a thought, Yue Zhong controlled Niu Meng to charge towards the center of the battlefield.

Immediately, the Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts surged towards him.

Venom, bone spikes, ice shards, flame pillars, all sorts of attacks were thrown at Yue Zhong and the Mech Niu Meng he controlled. Although he tried his best to dodge, most of them still struck the Mech.

However, the defense of the Type 6 frame was truly powerful, when faced with that many attacks, there seemed to be no lasting effect.

Yue Zhong controlled the Mech to unleash a slaughter on the surrounding Mutant Beasts, carving out a path for himself.

After slaughtering numerous Mutant Beasts, he finally arrived at the center of the battlefield.

Currently, the battlefield was like a meat grinder, with countless beams and flesh and blood flying everywhere. The main forces were also the Type 4 and Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

On Earth, Type 4 and 5 Mutants Beasts would be considered overlords of their own territories, however, here, they were barely cannon fodder. The true overlords were the Type 7 Mutant Beasts.

The corpses of the Mutant Beasts were piling up into a small mountain.

'Let's have me some fun!'

With a flash of his body, he leaped onto the headless corpse of a Mutant Beast over 150m tall, and aimed the recently-obtained B-Grade Particle Cannon, firing it at a Type 6 Mutant Black Boar.

That single beam tore through space, slicing through the head of the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar.

When it pierced through, fresh blood splattered out of the wound in the forehead of the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar.

Chapter 1055: Battling the Mutant Bronze Bashing Black Boar Horde!

After unleashing that single hit, Yue Zhong felt that the Mech had expended about 25% of its energy. He frowned, "This B-Particle Cannon is truly powerful, but the consumption is too high! I can only fire 4 of such shots?"

When the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar took this hit, it did not die immediately. Instead, it let out a shriek of agony and looked towards Yue Zhong with a hate-filled gaze.

Hearing that wail, the meat tank-like Type 7 Mutant Black Boar immediately turned around, its gaze sweeping past Yue Zhong, cold and dangerous.

Immediately, it led its little kin as they all surged towards Yue Zhong.

"That's Niu Meng!

"Did he exchange the B-Grade Cannon and Laser Blade to deal with this Type 7 Mutant Beast?!"

"How could a Type 7 Mutant Beast be so easy to deal with? Who among us do not have such weapons? Even so, we're still not a Type 7 Mutant Beast's opponent. He's too rash! This time, it's likely that he's going to go back in pieces."

"..."

The many Type 6 Mechs looked at the horde of Mutant Black Boars charging towards Yue Zhong and discussion broke out. Even so, on account that they were all Mechs, many of them raised their weapons and began firing at the horde.

Under the flurry of assault, many of the lower-level Mutant Black Boars were blasted to pieces. They were all at the Type 4 or Type 3 stage. The defense of those above Type 5 was too shocking. Even

when they were blasted continuously by those powerful weapons, it was not enough to take them out in one hit.

Against the charge of the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed. He did not retreat, instead, charging forth at it.

"It's over!"

"Is he insane?"

"..."

The other Type 6 Mechs saw Yue Zhong charging towards the Type 7 Mutant Beast and were filled with disbelief. To them, this was practically courting death.

Both sides got closer and within a breath, the distance had been pulled to 300m.

The eyes of the Mutant Black Boar flashed dangerously, as its tails began to emit energy, before slashing towards Yue Zhong.

The speed of the tails on the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar was incredibly fast, such that some Type 7 Mechs could not even dodge its attacks.

As a Type 7 expert, with a Second Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong was definitely above other Type 7 Mechs. He had already seen through the attack and quickly piloted Niu Meng to twist his body, flickering towards the side of the tail.

The hammer-like tail brushed past Yue Zhong, slamming into the ground, causing a huge crater, as cracks appeared in the ground.

After dodging that attack, Yue Zhong leaped up with all his strength, landing on the back of the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar.

He had just gotten on when the other 2 hammer-like tails slammed towards him with uncanny accuracy and agility.

Both tails came from different directions, sealing all possible escape routes.

No matter how Yue Zhong maneuvered, the Mech would be slammed by those tails and turned into a pile of scrap metal.

With a flash in his eyes, Yue Zhong summoned all his strength and channeled it into the Mech. The speed of the Mech rose insanely and charged towards the outside of where the tails met. In a split second, he had rushed out of the sealed space, evading the sure-hit by a breath.

"He dodged it!"

"Holy, he actually survived from that attack! That's unbelievable!"

This Niu Meng is an absolute genius of our Mech Kingdom, he actually survived an attack from a Type 7 Mutant Beast!! That's insane!"

"..."

When those Type 6 Mechs saw what happened, they were all shocked.

As for Yue Zhong, he quickly dashed up towards the head of the heavily-injured Type 6 Black Boar. The B-Grade Laser Blade hilt in his hands swung about, extending into a 6m-long laser blade.

With a thought, he caused a huge sword dance before slicing through the wound of the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar, further aggravating it.

The armor of the Type 6 Black Boar was truly tough, even an A-Grade cannon could not pierce through it. However, in front of the B-Grade Laser Blade, the hide was torn apart easily.

The blood and flesh of the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar were twisted and slashed through, as Yue Zhong continued to drill further until one could see the brain.

Yue Zhong thrust the Laser Blade mercilessly into the brain and began to wave his Laser Blade about like a madman, grabbing the

Nucleus. He then jumped and ran off to another direction.

As the Type 6 Mutant Black Boar slumped dead, a large amount of life force entered Yue Zhong's body, filling him with a sense of comfort.

He thought, "As expected, I need to kill Mutant Beasts to proceed with my evolution. Otherwise, no matter how I cultivate, it would be difficult to reach the Type 8 Divine Warrior."

The rest of the Mutant Black Boars shrieked out in misery at the sight of their comrade's death, as they charged towards Yue Zhong.

In a breath, those Mutant Black Boars had rushed up to Yue Zhong, swinging their tails, as those hammer-like tails slammed towards him.

Facing those attack, it was impossible for Yue Zhong to complete dodge all of them.

He immediately executed a profound movement technique, weaving in and out of the attacks, before he was still struck by one Type 5 Mutant Black Boar.

Dang!

As the tail slammed into the Mech Yue Zhong was in, it caused a loud reverberation.

Under that attack, the Mech was dented in, as a large force traveled through and struck his body.

If it were an ordinary Type 6 expert that faced such an attack, his internal injuries would be severe, maybe to the point of death. However, to Yue Zhong, it was nothing.

Other than the Mech being dented, Yue Zhong had no feeling. Instead, he jumped high into the air, and leaped on top of the head of the Type 5 Mutant Black Boar, his Laser Blade slashing out and tearing into the head of the Type 5 Mutant Black Boar, slicing up the contents of the skull.

After obliterating the brain of the Type 5 Mutant Black Boar, Yue Zhong charged out, through the chest area, and into the body of another Type 5 Mutant Black Boar, exerting all his might into slicing through the skin.

The horde of Mutant Black Boars began to get agitated, unsure what to do. Within a few breaths, he had already pierced through multiple Black Boars, covered in blood, getting further away from the Typed 7 Mutant Black Boar.

As Yue Zhong continued to traverse through the bodies of the Mutant Black Boars and turning them into corpses, life force continued to surge into him, slowing increasing his strength.

The life force of a Type 5 Mutant Beast exceeded that of a Type 6 Divine Warrior. While it was not enough to push him into the Type 8 realm with a single step, it was still beneficial in laying his foundations.

The Type 7 Mutant Black Boar watched Yue Zhong slaughter its subordinates and was shocked and furious. It had not imagined that a puny human would dare to slaughter its kind so brazenly. It wanted to kill him immediately, but right in front of it were its countless subordinates. There was no way it could just brush past them to kill Yue Zhong.

Without the attack of the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar, Yue Zhong continued to tear through the other lower-level Mutant Beasts like a tiger among sheep. Within a short time, he could make use of the Mech to tear through the beasts and obtain their nuclei.

"If I want to kill a Type 6 Mutant Beast with my Mech's strength, it is difficult. I might have a chance against the Type 7 with my true body, but not with this Mech."

Yue Zhong continued to plan and calculate while killing the smaller Beasts. He had slaughtered a number of Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts, however, in order to truly achieve another breakthrough, he needed to kill a Type 7 Mutant Beast. However,

he could not do so without risking discovery of his presence, thus he had to limit himself through the Mech.

"After so many battles, and obtaining a Type 6 Nucleus, the Mech has somewhat recovered, let's give it a try."

He swept a glance throughout the Mech's status, and turned around, before charging right at the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar without a hint of hesitation.

Chapter 1056: Killing the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar!

When the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar saw Yue Zhong challenging its might once more, it was finally enraged beyond reason and began to channel its innate ability, Ground Manipulation.

At that instant, the ground began to shake for a radius extending dozens of miles, as though the entire earth was raging against Yue Zhong.

Beneath his feet, the ground split opened, revealing a deep chasm, intending to swallow him up.

Yue Zhong's face fell, and the Mech quickly fired out jets behind its back, charging away from the bottomless abyss.

The eyes of the Type 7 Black Boar glowed viciously, swinging out its tails as they slammed towards Yue Zhong with the force of mountains.

The speed of the tails was slower than the first time, but Yue Zhong's expression turned worse. He knew that while the speed was slower, the trajectory was within the control of the Type 7 Beast, and as long as it shook, it could alter the direction to injure Yue Zhong heavily.

"Calm down!"

In the presence of danger, Yue Zhong's head would become clearer. His eyes gleamed brightly as he kept his gaze fixed on the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar. His Mech suddenly twisted and revealed the B-Grade Particle Cannon as he fired off at the beast, blasting its eyes.

The eyes of any gigantic beast are usually the weakest points. The Type 7 Mutant Black Boar was no different. The B-Grade Particle Cannon tore through the eyes, causing blood to splatter out as it shrieked out in agony.

Under its rage and pain, it swung its tails faster by another 30% and started to attack Yue Zhong viciously.

Yue Zhong only responded with an action, as the Mech split apart into 16 metal spheres as they shot towards the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar.

As the tails slammed down, 11 of the spheres were directly crushed, meaning that the Niu Meng Mech was now down to 5/16 of its power.

The remaining 5 spheres shot out far from the range and reformed into a Mech a distance away. However, its current size was only 5m-tall, with the B-Grade Particle Cannon and Laser Blade intact.

After dashing through the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar's attack, Yue Zhong controlled the Mech to soar towards the injured eye. It was the only weak point of the Type 7 Black Boar right now, and it was the opportunity he was banking on to defeat this beast.

At this time, there was a savage glint in the eyes of the Type 7 Black Boar, and it opened its huge mouth to suck in deep.

A terrifying hurricane appeared and exerted a powerful suction on Yue Zhong.

The Mech was only left with 5/16 of its original power, and it was not an aerial-type either, thus it was powerless to resist the suction.

"Great opportunity!"

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened, without the intention of resisting. Instead, he boosted his thrusters, and increased his speed, charging towards the mouth of the Type 7 Black Boar.

When the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar saw Yue Zhong flying into its mouth, its eyes flashed with cunning and viciousness and clamped down mercilessly.

"Not good!! I've been tricked!"

Yue Zhong saw rows of sharp teeth the moment he entered the mouth. At the same time, the moment the teeth clamped down, there would be no space to escape, and everything within a hundred meter square would be crushed.

At that instant, Yue Zhong did not bother hiding his abilities anymore and channeled everything into the Mech.

Receiving the bulk of Yue Zhong's strength, the Niu Meng Mech began to groan, apparently, it was a huge burden for its frame as well.

However, his strength was pushed to the max and the Mech shot towards the throat in a blink.

Kacha!

With a loud gnashing sound, the teeth of the Mutant Black Boar snapped shut, and although Yue Zhong had given it his all, half the Mech was still crushed within the teeth.

With a thought, the bitten half was separated.

At this time, the large tongue of the Type 7 Black Boar that had been hidden in the throat came slithering out, intending to envelop him. The moment the tongue appeared, it came at full force and speed, not intending to let Yue Zhong go.

"Break!"

Yue Zhong wielded the large Laser Blade and slashed out, meeting the incoming tongue with multiple profound blade beams.

In a shower of fresh blood, the tongue was sliced off part by part.

Yue Zhong then landed on the tonsils and pulled out a huge alloy blade to thrust into the inner walls of the Beast's throat, allowing him to stand.

After affixing himself there, he waved the huge Laser Blade without mercy, carving out a huge hole in the mouth, as blood

flowed out without stop.

The Type 7 Mutant Black Boar thrashed about and struggled in the agony, running around amok and crazed.

Many Mutant Beasts and Mech Beasts alike were crushed under the rampage of the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar.

"This is blood essence from a Type 7 Mutant Beast, it is beneficial to my Blood Manipulation ability. I need to take some. But not too much, otherwise, the Mech Kingdom will suspect something."

Yue Zhong looked at the Type 7 Beast blood and his eyes brightened. With a wave of his hands, a blood radiance flew out, and stuck itself to the wound, as it began to exert its own suction on the blood essence.

While the blood radiance was doing its own thing, Yue Zhong began to carve his way up into the brain of the beast by waving his B-Grade Laser Blade.

The blade was sharp and powerful, and Yue Zhong continued to carve his way up, finally reaching the skull.

After tearing apart flesh and spilling blood, as well as shattering numerous nerves, Yue Zhong finally found the brain and began to dig into it with his Laser Blade. He then grabbed out at the Type 7 Nuclei.

With the death of the Type 7 Black Boar, a huge amount of life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body and finally ignited a change. The thick and abundant life force flowed into his God-Devil Nucleus, turning into a gold fog that began to enhance his body, pushing him further onto the path of evolution, finally reaching the high-Type 7 realm.

Yue Zhong could feel the surging force within him, as he became excited, "Very good, I've achieved another minor breakthrough. I can already sense domain laws, once I've reached the peak of the Type 7 realm, I might understand it better. This God-Devil Body is

truly wonderful. In such a short time of my evolution, I've already grown so much! After killing some more Type 7 Mutant Beasts, I'll be able to reach the peak Type 7 realm and finally be invincible among those of the same realm!"

Planet Uros was a cultivation planet, and while the humans there could not reach the Type 8 Divine Warrior realm and understand domains, their ancestors had been like Yue Zhong, going through countless Gates of Hell to experience other worlds and thus, accumulating training techniques and knowledge.

Domains were unique to those geniuses of the Type 8 and above. It was something that most Type 8 experts would strive to achieve, and even most ordinary Type 8 Divine Warriors might not possess one.

Yue Zhong had assumed that all Type 8 experts would have a domain because the sensation from the God-Devil Body gave him the feeling that in order to progress to the Type 8 realm, he had to understand a domain.

In fact, many of those experts who possessed the God-Devil Body would already surpass mortals, evolving towards the direction of God. Once they broke through the Type 8 barrier, they would immediately grasp the concept of domains, and become powerful, undefeatable existences.

After killing the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar, Yue Zhong charged out from the body of the Type 7 Black Boar.

At that instant, he felt a strong sense of death looming.

Chapter 1057: Type 8 Winged Wyrms King!

At the moment when Yue Zhong exited the corpse, from afar, an entirely silver Type 7 White Wyrms stared and channeled its innate ability towards Yue Zhong.

A bunch of frozen air blades shot through the air, slamming towards the region, turning it into a frozen tundra.

Yue Zhong had just piloted Niu Meng out, when he was struck by the freezing breath and was immediately encased in ice, immobilized.

Inside the cockpit, Yue Zhong could feel the cold invading him as well, freezing even his God-Devil Body.

He began to think, "What a terrifying Type 7 Mutant Beast. If this goes on, even I will be frozen, and cease to think. Unless I burst forth with my true self, and break out, otherwise, with the Mech's strength, there's no way I can escape. These Type 7 Mutant Beasts cannot be underestimated."

The innate abilities of Type 7 Mutant Beasts were usually overbearing and terrifying, even among Type 8 experts, they would be affected. Yue Zhong was piloting a Type 6 Mech, and there was no way he could resist the biting cold.

The moment Yue Zhong was frozen, the Type 7 Scarlet Flame Dragon also opened its huge jaws and fired out a blazing trail of flames at him.

The moment he was struck by those flames, then the Type 6 Mech Niu Meng would definitely melt. Even its smart chip would be destroyed, with no chance of revival.

Yue Zhong took in all these and did not retreat immediately, "What do I do? I can only wait. Damn it, I really looked down on these Type 7 Mutant Beasts. Seems like I need to escape back to Earth."

When Yue Zhong had evolved his God-Devil Body, his strongest skill was the Devil Flame, which had then evolved into the God-Devil Flame. It was even stronger than the flames of the Scarlet Flame Dragon. As long as he shrouded himself in his God-Devil Flames, he could withstand the incoming assault.

Seeing that the Mech that Yue Zhong was in about to be destroyed, a searing hot meteor shot down from the skies, slamming into the frozen tundra, shattering the ice.

There was a tripod within, containing a round sphere engraved with strange runes and powered by a Type 6 nucleus. It was glowing brightly, as it enlarged into an energy shield, protecting Yue Zhong within.

The bright flames of the Scarlet Flame Dragon slammed into the shield, almost melting it, but it managed to withstand the damage, as the air distorted from the heat.

"Chance!"

As the flames were about to burn through, Yue Zhong grabbed the ball projecting the energy shield, and charged up into the sky, flying towards the camp of the Mech Kingdom. He had already expended most of the Mech's energy dealing with the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar, and his current strength had depleted. Even a Type 5 Mutant Beast could damage his Mech. It was not suitable to remain in the midst of battle.

Far away from the sea of Mutant Beasts, there was an overwhelming pressure, as an enraged voice sounded, "Murphyte, you dare to act?! Are you not afraid of my wrath?!"

In the skies, there was a huge floating platform far above the battlefield, as a cold and stern voice sounded, "Winged Wyrms King, it was your Poison Dragon Canyon then acted against us first! Our Mech Kingdom is not so easily bullied, you had better leave behind 1,600 Type 6 Mutant Beast nuclei, apologize and scram, otherwise, today will be the day we wipe out your Poison Dragon Canyon!!"

"Dogfart! Go to hell!! Get the hell away from the Gates of hell!! Our Poison Dragon Canyon must get to Earth to evolve! That place holds opportunities for us! If you don't want to scram, I will tear you all apart and destroy your smart chips, truly wiping you out!"

With a loud roar that could shake the heavens and earth, a being that looked somewhat like a dragon, with a body of over 5km in length, and a pair of huge dragon wings soared out, releasing a powerful pressure. It stared at the huge fort floating in the skies, its eyes filled with a heated gaze.

On Earth, where the potential of evolution was at its peak, many biological life forms were constantly growing. It was an opportunity for this peak-Type 8 Winged Wyrms King. Because of this, it had led these many Mutant Beasts against the Mech Kingdom in order to go through the Gates of Hell.

With evolution, these Mutant Beasts would become even stronger, and possess an intellect that would not lose out to humans. The Type 8 Winged Wyrms King could already speak in multiple languages.

Murphyte's voice rang out once more, "Annihilate us? What a joke. This Galastar is our Mech Kingdom's, If you damn beasts stay obediently within your canyon and gorges, things are still negotiable. If you dare come and challenge our might, you can all go to hell."

With that, a satellite floating in space adjusted its cannon and fired out many beams at the battlefield.

Under the seemingly endless particle beams, many Mutant Beasts were directly obliterated.

All the Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts were either killed or incapacitated, while the Type 5 ones were heavily injured.

Only those of the Type 6 realm and above managed to withstand the damage, even so, it was not pleasant.

The Type 8 Winged Wyrms King snarled out with rage at the sight of his subordinates' death, "Murphyte, you dare to use the satellites to kill my people! I will not forgive you!! I will tear out your smart chip one day and smash it!!"

Faced with the multitude of blasts, in just a few breaths' time, over a million Mutant Beasts had died. Such a figure was also painful to the Type 8 Winged Wyrms King.

It flapped its wings and disappeared from its location, reappearing in front of the mechanical fort, slashing out with its claws.

The fort then glowed brightly, as an energy shield was activated, blocking the assault of the Type 8 Mutant Beast.

Hong!

When the 2 Type 8 powerhouses slammed into one another, a terrifying shockwave blasted outwards in all directions.

A powerful hurricane appeared, blowing in all directions, as a number of Type 4 Mech Beasts, as well as Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts, were blown away.

Yue Zhong eyed the battle from afar, his heart full of regret, "What a pity it isn't time to reveal myself. Otherwise, I really want to go and engage them in battle."

After that, he turned around and quickly soared towards a far distance. He had already earned enough contributions for killing the Type 7 Mutant Beast and could rest. After all, it was not reasonable to expect a Type 6 Mech to continue battling a Type 7 Mutant Beast.

The Mech Kingdom had sent its Mechs towards the battlefield to grant them experience, helping them evolve, and not to treat them as cannon fodder. The true cannon fodder was the mindless Mech Beasts.

The support camp was in the air, a huge floating island of over

10km in length. On it, there were many tall structures that reached towards the stars.

The floating island was full of shade and one could see all types of flowers and plants. It looked extremely beautiful, as though it was a paradise.

Many sentient Mechs, albeit injured from battle, were laying among the plants, receiving treatment from a number of male and female slaves of various species.

One particular Mech that had only its lower body left was carried by 4 bull-head creatures, as he spoke, "Niu Meng, you're truly valiant, to think you took out a Type 7 Mutant Beast!"

"Well done Niu Meng! This time, you performed so brightly, you will definitely be drafted into the Army, don't forget us old friends then!"

"..."

Once Yue Zhong landed, over a few Mechs came over and expressed their congratulations.

With a Type 6 strength, killing a Type 7 Mutant Beast was a terrifying result. In the span of a thousand years, that had only been 3 others who were capable of that. One of them had fallen during the passing of time, while the other 2 had become part of the Mech Lords. They were recognized widely and had high prestige. Seeing 'Niu Meng' accomplish such a fact, many of them were elated for him.

Upon gaining sentience, these Mechs knew emotions as well, including escaping from danger, valuing their lives, as well as bootlicking.

Chapter 1058: Exchanging for Treasures!

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Alright! When I, Niu Meng, reach the elites of the army, I will not forget everybody."

He then handed the niceties to Niu Meng to handle, while he stepped into the Galastar Virtual Network, sourcing for treasures.

"Star Luo Technique, this can allow the flesh body to be trained to the Type 9 stage, it only requires 10 million points. Cheap!"

"Type 7 human slave, 10 million points for 1. Type 7 White-winged human slave, 30 million points for 1."

"Type 6 human slave, 100,000 points for 1."

"..."

"So many slaves! They're all from foreign races, there are actually Type 7 and Type 6 humans caught and sold here! This Mech Kingdom is truly terrifying."

Yue Zhong looked through the list and felt incredibly shocked.

A Type 7 Divine Warrior was an invincible force on Earth. Even for the planet Uros, where cultivation was rife, the Saint Lord and most of the other Elders would be at that level.

And yet, such powerhouses were being sold here like slaves, and it was not just a single one. The true power of the Mech Kingdom was incredibly terrifying.

Through Niu Meng's memories, Yue Zhong knew that there were nanochips set to go off in the brains of these slaves.

The moment any of them dared to harbor any ill intents, they would be killed by the nano bombs.

Most of the slaves that had been caught were already wiped clean of their memories and brainwashed. They were practically blank pieces of paper, with no inkling of their past, and only knew to swear fealty to their owners.

Without such measures, just considering the blood feud between these slaves and the Mech Kingdom, it would not be possible to truly subdue such powerhouses.

"What a pity, there's no Type 8 ones. Otherwise, if I buy one and kill him, I might be able to reach the Type 8 realm. But then again, even if there was one, I probably can't afford it. The price should be in the billions. Forget it, let's buy a few Type 7 powerhouses and bring them to Earth, they can hold the fort there."

Just as he was excited and prepared to buy, his face fell, as he remembered a problem, "No good, the Type 7 experts of this world cannot go through the Gate of hell. Even if I purchase them, they can't go to Earth."

"That is to say, the strongest I can purchase would be the Type 6 experts. However, in the exchange list, there are also treasures that can raise the flesh body. I can only groom a few Type 6 slaves with those treasures, otherwise, if a Mech purchase so many, it would raise suspicions."

With a thought, Yue Zhong pulled out the list and chose 3 stunning beauties in the Type 6 realm.

After that, he then purchased a B-Grade Inexhaustible Power Source, as well as a B-Grade Energy Shield, followed by the Star Luo Technique, and a number of treasures to boost the flesh body. After that, he exited from the Virtual Network.

When he came out from the network, he began to watch the battles through the display screens earnestly.

The ongoing battle was extremely cruel and violent, with beams and abilities flying everywhere. Each of the Type 7 Mutant Beasts was enraged, and their innate abilities were being cast over the entire region.

Yue Zhong saw a number of Type 7 Mechs being frozen before blasted by the flames from the Scarlet Flame Dragon, melting into

puddles of alloy liquid.

The intense battle continued for 2 days and 2 nights, before the Mutant Beasts, under the numerous injured and countless deaths, retreated at the sight of the never-ending backup from the Mech Kingdom.

The Type 8 Winged-Wyrm King had already comprehended a domain and was suppressing Murphyte. However, Murphyte was able to hold his own through various means and was able to resist the attacks. The Winged-Wyrm King had no choice but to retreat as well.

Although the Type 8 Winged-Wyrm King held the advantage in the battle between the upper echelons, its subordinates were being slaughtered by the Mech Kingdom's army of Mech Beasts.

The Type 8 Mutant Beast also know of the might of the Mech Kingdom, if it chose to fight on, it would perish in the end.

The Mech Kingdom's Army had their land-based machines as well as aerial ones. There were even powerful Mech Beasts that could take on the Type 5, Type 6 and even Type 7 Mutant Beasts.

Once the number of Type 5 Mech Beasts reached a certain figure, it would be threatening to the Type 8 Winged-Wyrm King as well.

After the intense battle, there were only corpses and countless mech parts laying everywhere on the battlefield.

Numerous Mechs poured onto the battlefield, retrieving the metal parts as well as the corpses of the Mutant Beasts, cleaning up the area.

The parts could be reused under proper treatment, while the Mutant Beasts corpses could be used in the production of other weapons and armors.

Not too long after, on top of the huge fort, there was a burst of radiant light, as a handsome Mech stepped out, exuding pressure.

"I'm Murphyte, now, everyone, heed my orders. Niu Meng, for killing a Type 7 Mutant Beasts, killing a number of Type 6 Mutant Beasts... You will be promoted to Mech Baron. You have been drafted into the First Army, 5th Battalion. Zhang Mo, for killing...."

Hearing his words, all the Mechs around Yue Zhong looked at him enviously.

The Mech nobility had prestige in the Kingdom and was usually comprised of Type 7 or some rare talented Type 6 Mechs. All these nobility could reside within the Mech Capital where the Mech Emperor lived and had direct command over their own fleet of 50,000 Mech Beasts.

Furthermore, they had special privileges, if they saw any other Mech warriors to their liking, they could organize exchanges, and there would be no qualms or objections from the lower classes.

Because of this, many Mech warriors fought hard to become nobility.

In this battle, other than Yue Zhong, or rather, 'Niu Meng', no one else was promoted to nobility. Even the 2nd place who had killed 4 Type 6 Mutant Beasts had not received a promotion.

Murphyte swept Yue Zhong a gaze, as he spoke sternly, "Niu Meng, from today on, you have to work hard for the Mech Emperor, as well as the Mech Kingdom."

Niu Meng got down on one knee, "Yes! From today, I will strive to battle for the honor and glory of the Mech Kingdom and our great Majesty!"

Murphyte nodded slightly, "Disperse! Head back to your camps."

"Yes! Fort Lord!"

The rest of the Mechs got down on their knees as well.

Murphyte's original body was the entire fort itself, thus everyone

had referred to him as the Fort Lord. Only those of the Mech Lord class could be addressed as Lords.

The moment Murphyte's figure disappeared, one of the rooms of the metal city opened up, as a number of black mechanical balls shot out towards those Mechs that were injured.

Seeing those balls, all the sentient Mechs had expressions of glee on their faces. When the balls arrived in front of them, they quickly rushed to absorb the ball.

These black balls contained superior cells, and while the sentient Mechs could make use of their smart chips to produce new cells, it would eat into their base strength. Whereas the new, superior cells provided by the Mech Kingdom were much better alternatives.

Yue Zhong controlled Niu Meng to soar into the sky, and exerted a suction force on the nearby black balls, absorbing them into his body.

Upon assimilating with the cells, Niu Meng regained his peak strength, and in fact, continued to break through to the peak-Type 6 realm.

"So overbearing!"

"Damn it! If he wasn't a nobility, I would not let him off."

"What the hell, isn't that too much?!"

"..."

When the sentient Mechs below saw this, they could not believe it.

Yue Zhong did not care, in any case, they were his enemies, regardless of how they viewed him, it was irrelevant.

A distance away, on a huge battleship, 20 Type 7 Mechs were observing.

One of them, a blond-haired Mech frowned, "Stinky brat, he actually snatched the cells of others."

One Mech that looked similar to a black man, laughed out loud, his eyes flashing with a teasing look, "Haha! So what? We are the noble class, those are just ordinary folk. They should sacrifice for us. Halledor, aren't you just jealous that Type 6 kid managed to kill a Type 7 Mutant Beast?"

Halledor's face sunk as he snorted coldly, "Just a Type 6 ant, what can he do? He was just lucky!"

Chapter 1059: Challenge!

The Mech that looked like a black man laughed out, with obvious ill intent, "Luck is also part of strength! Oh yes, he had just risen to the noble class, and might not know our customs. Halledor, go teach him well."

Halledor stared fixedly at Yue Zhong with a cruel look as he sneered, "Oh yes, I will teach him well, about our customs."

One young-looking Mech spoke up, "Don't go overboard."

Halledor replied half-heartedly, "Relax, Rega, I will not."

After absorbing the cells to recover, many Mech warriors began to embark on their own ships to be transported back to their residences.

"Over there? If I board that ship, I can head to the core of the Mech Kingdom."

Yue Zhong swept a gaze and saw the huge battleship where the Type 7 Mechs were gathered, a heated look in his eyes.

Once he entered the center, he could think of a method to infiltrate one of the armories.

If he could steal the treasures of the Mech Kingdom, his strength would be able to improve, and could even retaliate against their attacks.

Yue Zhong had just embarked the ship, when a female Mech with an icy, beautiful look came up to him, dragging a container of over 10m in height and 30m in length.

The female Mech shot out 2 beams of light into Niu Meng's forehead, revealing a silver number.

She then spoke in a cold, robotic voice, "ID JXDG876548765, Name: Niu Meng, confirmed. Niu Meng, I'm the delivery person, Wendy. These are the items you have exchanged on the Virtual

Network. Please confirm and receive the items."

After that, the huge container revealed a number of compartments, each of them containing the items that Yue Zhong purchased.

Among them, there were 3 absolute beauties, each of them with a collar around their necks, their eyes unfocused.

Yue Zhong was clear that once he took off those collars and keyed in his command, he would become their master.

The 3 beauties were all at the Type 6 realm, just slightly less powerful compared to the Saint Children of Planet Uros. If they were placed on any other human planet, they would be idolized and revered, but here, they were slaves, traded like commodities, truly miserable.

Through Niu Meng's memories, Yue Zhong knew that the overlords of Galastar were the sentient Mechs.

Within the Kingdom, other than the Mechs and Mech Beasts, there was an additional class, the slaves. As the Mech Kingdom governed Galastar, they would launch conquests on other planets with life, and capture the inhabitants as slaves, given to the sentient Mechs as playthings.

With intellect, many of these sentient Mechs were focused on their evolution as the first priority, but at the same time, many sought pleasure in slaves of other races and species. Some would use them as sparring partners, others as pets, while some pit them against one another. These slaves to the Mechs were like dogs and cats to humans.

Yue Zhong swept those 3 ladies a look, and he became even more resolute, "I definitely cannot fail, otherwise, this is the fate of my people. Our lives and deaths would not even be in our control."

Wendy pulled out a board and handed it to Yue Zhong, "These are the items you purchased. If there are no issues, please sign here."

Yue Zhong took it over, and with a flash, there was the sound of an acknowledgment.

Right at this time, there was an insidious laughter, as Halledor walked over, reaching out to grab the collars of those 3 absolute beauties, "Wow, Niu Meng, you bought pretty good items. Let's see, I've set my sights on these 3 women. Gift them to me."

The other Type 7 Mechs also crowded over, intending to watch a good show.

Yue Zhong swept the cold Wendy a look, before frowning and shot forwards, blocking in front of the 3 women, as he bellowed in rage, "Scram! Damn dog with a short oil pipeline, you better scram far away. You dare to touch my private property, I will tear you apart like a dog!!"

"Haha! Halledor, he just mocked you for having a short oil pipeline!"

"Hahaha! Halledor, did you girlfriend find it too short, that's why she left with Jack?"

"Hahaha! Halledor, a newbie had just scold you, how useless of you."

"..."

All around, the callous and snide laughter rang out.

Halledor's face turned steely, as he gritted his teeth, and stared at Yue Zhong, "Stinky brat, you looking to die? I wanted to just teach you a lesson, but seems like you're forcing me to kill you, in order to ease this hate! I challenge you, do you dare accept?! If not, you can scram out of the Mech Imperial Army!"

The oil pipelines were the Mechs' special organs' and mocking them was a huge insult to the Mechs

"Forget it! Halledor, why blow this out of proportions?"

"Yeah, Niu Meng, just apologize, and hand those 3 people to

Halledor, and we can all forget about this."

"..."

Hearing those words, those Type 7 Mechs who were laughing and joking immediately turned serious and tried to coax him

A life-and-death battle was the cruelest method of settling a grudge. Once it began, only one could survive. Only when things were extremely bad and both parties had a deep set grudge that could not be resolved would propose this method.

Furthermore, it was usually used as an intimidation move, as if one party rejects, he or she would be viewed as weak, cowardly, and lacking a sense of honor. The other Mechs would then ostracize the Mech and outcast him or her.

There was a cold light in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he replied, "Life-and-death Battle, sure! Let's go right now!! Move! If you still have an oil pipe, let's go right now!"

Halledor laughed out savagely, as he glanced around and declared, "Everyone, you've seen him, it's not that I wasn't merciful, but this kid doesn't know his place, and challenged me. Let's go, see who's lacking an oil pipe."

After that, a pair of wings appeared behind his back, and jet steam shot out, supporting it towards the arena.

Yue Zhong grabbed out, installing the B-Grade Inexhaustible Energy Source into Niu Meng, feeling the surge in strength.

Yue Zhong did not give the rest a chance to even dissuade him, as he transformed into his close-combat form, grabbing his B-Grade Laser Blade and charged towards the platform.

"Damn it, shit got serious!"

"That Niu Meng is truly bad-tempered!"

"..."

When the Mechs saw what was happening, they exchanged

helpless looks.

One of them spoke up, "All we can do now is to go and watch!"

After that, the entire group made their way toward to the arena.

The arena was a platform of complicated terrains stretching for some distance. Once a battle started, unless one of them perished, the battle would not end.

Halledor stared at Yue Zhong coldly, "Stupid brat, I'm giving you a last chance. Hand over your points, and kill those 3 women yourself. Get on the ground and lick my feet. I will give you this chance to regret, otherwise, it'll be too late when I tear out your smart chip and destroy it later."

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, sneering back in challenge, "This short oil pipe fellow, just bring it on. It'll be your death anniversary next year."

"Fine! Fine! Fine! I'll let you know the difference between a Type 7 and Type 6, the distance between heaven and earth! I will take my time to kill you, and show you what true terror is!!"

Halledor had a cruel look as he transformed, swiftly turning into a robot that looked like a mix between an eagle and a dragon, with a pair of mechanical eagle wings. His entire body was green, and over 10m long, with a sharp long blade for a tail. There were multiple cannons located throughout his body, as well as 4 B-Grade Particle Cannons on his back.

As he transformed, the separation barrier came down at that moment, and Yue Zhong immediately charged forwards in a zig-zag manner, dashing towards Halledor madly.

Chapter 1060: Killing Halledor!

Halledor laughed out coldly, as some spheres flew out from his back, surrounding his body.

Within the spheres, beams shot out at Yue Zhong. These beams were capable of tearing apart a Type 6 powerhouse.

Halledor was only one person, but with the aid of these spheres, his firepower was equivalent to a squadron of ranged Mech Beasts.

Yue Zhong's figure flickered, dodging those beams like a specter, at the same time, he activated the energy shield.

Hong!

Under the relentless assault of the laser beams, Yue Zhong continued to dodge, but the energy shield was still struck by one of the beams.

When the beam slammed into the shield, it rocked the entire defense system, almost crushing it. Although it managed to withstand the hit, the resulting recoil sent Yue Zhong flying back a few meters.

Seeing that the assault was successful, the beams adjusted and turned into a fire net that enveloped Yue Zhong.

The moment Yue Zhong was caught, he would be shredded apart into countless pieces.

"That Niu Meng seems to be full of air, he isn't nothing much!"

"He could defeat a Type 7 Mutant Beast, it must be due to luck. In terms of ability, he's definitely far from Halledor's standard."

"..."

The Mechs began to discuss. To them, Yue Zhong was seeking death by challenging Halledor.

"As expected, this Type 7 Mech is powerful, in terms of the

physical differences, it really is too much of a gap. However, since the pilot is me, this Mech has to die."

There was a cold glint in Yue Zhong's eyes. With a thought, the B-Grade Inexhaustible Energy Source was pushed to the limit, as strength surged through Niu Meng's frame, causing it to turn red, and all the cells were in overdrive.

"Overdrive!! He actually went into overdrive, is he tired of living?"

"Overdrive, he truly is gutsy, is he planning to risk it all?"

"..."

Seeing how 'Niu Meng' was now red and every single cell seemed on the verge of exploding, all the Mechs took in a cold breath.

Overdrive was a limit that all Mechs were capable of. Once in it, their strength would be boosted by a huge margin. However, it was unstable, and if done for long, the smart chips would be damaged. Furthermore, it was hard to control one's frame when in overdrive. Once the Mech loses control and crosses the limit of the smart chip, then only death awaits.

After Yue Zhong went into overdrive, with a thought, he sent a bout of energy to protect Niu Meng's smart chip, while he looked towards Halledor, and emitted a powerful killing intent.

Halledor felt that intent, and his heart turned cold, but he quickly roared out in anger, "So what if you're in overdrive?! You're not my match! Die!!"

In a flash, more spheres came out from Halledor's back, forming a cluster that shot attacked Yue Zhong rapidly.

While in overdrive, Niu Meng's speed was raised by more than twice. His entire frame shot towards Halledor like a shooting star, even when 2 particle beams slammed into the shield, the energy shield managed to withstand it.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong had already appeared in front of Halledor, pouncing on him as though he was a leopard that saw its prey. He brought out his blade and slashed downwards viciously.

"Shield!"

A number of strange runes glowed behind Halledor's back, as a huge B-Grade Energy Shield formed out of thin air, blocking in front of him.

Yue Zhong swung the B-Grade Laser Blade down on the B-Grade Energy Shield, and amidst bright sparks, the blade only managed to slice through about 20cm, without any further movement.

"B-Grade Laser Blades cannot slice apart B-Grade Energy Shields!! Niu Meng!! Go to hell!!"

Halledor saw how his own shield had withstood Yue Zhong's strike and heaved a sigh of relief, before his eyes flashed savagely, and swung his sharp tail towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong did not manage to kill Halledor in that strike, and slashed out viciously, before swinging himself towards the side.

As for the sharp mechanical tail that came swinging, it struck thin air.

With his body in mid-air, Yue Zhong twisted, and aimed his B-Grade Particle Cannon, unleashing a powerful blast at the shield.

"No!!"

Seeing the B-Grade Beam, Halledor's eyes flashed with fear.

The B-Grade Particle Cannon could kill a Type 7 powerhouse in a hit, and was exceptionally devastating, not to mention that the distance was so close.

That blast slammed into the energy shield, causing it to dent in, before the force directly sent Halledor shooting towards the ground, blasting out a huge crater.

The Mechs did not have flesh bodies and had no blood or organs

to be displaced. Halledor immediately tumbled and got back up, extending multiple cannons as they fired at Yue Zhong.

The rapid missiles covered a huge area, expending a lot of Halledor's energy. However, as long as he could maintain it till 'Niu Meng' collapsed, he would win.

Especially the 4 B-Grade Particle Cannons on his back, they were constantly adjusting their aim, searching for signs of Niu Meng to fire.

With Yue Zhong's current situation, once he was hit by a B-Grade Particle Beam, he would die instantly.

While in mid-air, he separated the Mech into 5 round balls with a thought, that quickly descended towards the ground.

The moment they touched the ground, they rejoined to form the close-combat Mech.

At that instant, Yue Zhong quickly ascertained the weak spot in Halledor's form and turned into a flash of light that shot towards the shield.

He braved past the countless beams, and both hands formed a number of shadows that resulted in over a thousand blades that slammed into the B-Grade Energy Shield.

Facing that attack, under Halledor's astonished gaze, the B-Grade Energy Shield that he was so proud of collapsed.

"Die!!"

After losing Halledor's protection, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed fiercely, as the B-Grade Laser Blade slashed out in a radiant manner towards Halledor's head.

With that bright flash, Halledor's mechanical head was sliced cleanly off.

Even so, he was not yet dead, as his headless frame continued to swing the tail towards Yue Zhong.

With a loud blast, Halledor's tail slammed into Yue Zhong's body.

However, at the moment before the tail slammed into Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong had already caused the lower portion of the Mech to be detached with a thought.

Halledor's tail then slammed into the bottom half, destroying it.

Yue Zhong continued to pilot the upper half to grab Halledor's head portion, and with a swift motion, dug out the smart chip inside the damaged head.

"No!! Don't kill me!! I apologize!! I'm willing to hand all my belongings to you!! Spare me!! Please don't kill me!!" With his head destroyed and smart chip exposed, Halledor's mechanical mouth immediately screamed out fearfully.

"Hmph! Begging for your life now is too late!! Go to hell!"

With a cold laugh, the Mech's claws crushed down in front of Halledor's shocked gaze, and its smart chip was obliterated, leaving behind a Type 7 Nucleus.

"Halledor was killed by him!"

"Halledor is dead?!"

"Impossible?!"

"This Niu Meng is just a Type 6 Mech! How is it possible to defeat Halledor?"

"..."

Seeing Halledor's death, all the Mechs were shocked. A Type 7 Mech's capabilities far surpassed a Type 6 Mech, and Halledor might not be the most exceptional fighter among the Type 7 Mechs, but he was not some weakling. Yet, he had been killed by Yue Zhong, and it was truly shocking.

After killing Halledor, the energy shield over the entire arena dissolved, and 'Niu Meng' took out a Type 6 Nuclei and consumed it.

When the Type 6 Nucleus entered the B-Grade Inexhaustible Energy Source, it was directly transformed into energy.

At the same time, it coursed through Niu Meng's smart chips, swiftly producing more cells as he quickly regained his peak combat strength.

Chapter 1061: Comprehending the Flame Domain!

After regaining his strength, Yue Zhong turned to glare at the rest of the Type 7 Mechs coldly. He let out an icy laugh, before flickering away. As a human, he was bound to be at loggerheads with the Mech Kingdom, it was naturally impossible to forge any relationships.

"So arrogant!! What a reckless kid."

"Truly prideful, I wonder how far he can go like that?"

"..."

The hearts of the Type 7 Mechs were filled with dissatisfaction, as they began to gossip. However, no one went to challenge him.

As he arrived in front of the main battleship of the Mech Kingdom, Yue Zhong grabbed the huge container and dragged it out.

Soon after, the rest of the Type 7 Mechs returned as well, embarking on the battleship.

Once they were all on board, the huge battleship began to fire up, spitting out huge jet streams, turning into a flash of light as it shot towards the distance.

Yue Zhong entered his own room, and got Bai Yi to disrupt any potential surveillance, before stepping out of Niu Meng in his human-shape.

Yue Zhong then walked up to those 3 beauties, their eyes still unfocused, with the collars on the necks, and reached out to grab the collars. With Bai Yi's help, he sent his life force into the collars, and entered their consciousness, branding them with the knowledge of him being their master.

"Master!!"

At the moment he branded them, they regained their consciousness and came up to Yue Zhong to pay their respects.

Yue Zhong asked, "What're your names?"

The leader among them, a tall and ravishing beauty with black hair spoke up, "Master, we have no names. I'm No.1, and they're No.2 and No.3 respectively. Please assign names to us, Master!"

Of the other 2, one was a blond, with an explosive figure, while the other was a petite loli but with huge breasts.

Both of them looked at Yue Zhong pitifully and expectantly, hoping for them to give them their names.

These humans that had been caught by the Mech Kingdom had been brainwashed entirely and wired to obey every single command of their masters. Unless they could surpass the Type 9 realm, otherwise, they would still be a Type 9 slave, with no allowance of any ill intent towards their masters at all, or the nano-bombs would go off.

Yue Zhong tapped them and gave them their names as requested, "Alright, you shall be called Yue Ying, you, Yue Xing and you, Yue Lian."

When they obtained their names, the 3 of them were elated, and bowed once more, "Thank you, Master, for granting us names!"

Within their consciousness, Yue Zhong, as their master, was their closest kin, and worthy of their admiration and respect. As long as he treated them well, they would do everything for them, even if they had to die. This was the power and might of the Mech Kingdom.

Yue Zhong pointed to the container and said, "Go and cultivate. Remember, only till the peak of the Type 6 realm. The resources are for you to use as necessary,"

The 3 of them responded, "Yes! Master!" before turning towards the container full of treasured resources.

Seeing them leave, Yue Zhong then went to the other side of the room. With a thought, the alloy wall contorted and turned transparent, allowing the occupant to see outside.

Below the huge battleship, there were only clouds. However, among them, Yue Zhong could see a few floating forts.

The Mechs were of different sizes, some of them even bigger than the Mech Lord Murphyte. The smallest was still at least a few hundred kilometers. All these floating Forts were littered throughout Galastar, acting as a deterrent that could easily suppress any uprising from anywhere.

With the satellites in space, the moment there was some upstart anywhere, the information would be relayed quickly and dealt with in a short time.

In the thousands of years, it was unclear how many elites of the various species had perished under the laser beams of these satellites and forts.

Not too long ago, when the Mech Kingdom was battling the Mutant Beast horde, the Type 8 Winged-Wyrm King had the upper hand, but his side still lost, because of those lasers from the satellites and forts.

Yue Zhong stared out at the wondrous landscape before him, and thought quietly, "On such a dense planet, if anything were to happen, it will be dealt with quickly. These Mechs are different from humans, they do not get tired, and can work 24 hours, observing the entire planet. Without Bai Yi's help, I would have been revealed. The best case scenario after an intense battle would be that I could escape back to Earth. This Mech Kingdom is truly terrifying."

After a moment of thought, he pulled out the Star Luo Technique and began to read it.

The Star Luo Technique was a move that came from a talented

Type 9 genius who was gazing at the universe and got a sudden burst of inspiration. It was truly an astounding technique.

However, in front of the might of the Mech Kingdom, the planet that Type 9 genius came from was still eradicated, and he himself had been killed by the Mech Emperor, and thus, the Star Luo Technique ended up in the Mech Kingdom's hands.

"Observing the movement of the stars and universe, cultivating a great Dao. This technique is spectacular. However, it is not of use to me. Only comprehending a domain and spatial laws would be useful right now."

Yue Zhong looked through the entire Star Luo Technique and sunk himself in contemplation of the laws of domains and space as written by the author.

After reaching the Second Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's talent for cultivation had become heaven-defying, and regardless of whatever he read, he could understand. This Star Luo Technique and the principles about domains and spatial laws within were giving him new insights.

"Domain! What is a domain? It is the realization of the concepts of a technique that a cultivator trains in. Those who cultivate in flames would be able to incinerate things around him, and he could make use of the energy and strength to totally suppress an opponent of the same rank. If a person cultivates a water domain, then within his domain, it would be endless water, preventing the opponent from displaying his or her strength. In order to produce a domain, one has to understand the principles and underlying concepts, before materializing it into a domain. Invincible among those of the same realm and stage, even allowing one to leap ranks to fight enemies above."

"In the universe, the basic laws are gold, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, lightning. The derivative rules are speed, strength, light, darkness, desecration, and sacrament... The highest law is space

and time."

"Only those who comprehend spatial laws can achieve a breakthrough into the Type 9 realm. With a thought, one can rip a hole in space and travel miles. At the same time, one could transcend space and worlds, attacking enemies and moving the mountains and seas."

"With time laws, the most mysterious of laws. I've never seen anyone comprehending it. Maybe, only the God above could possibly hold this heaven-defying principle. Without comprehending this, one would not have the right to challenge God. My whole life, ever since I've cultivated to my level, I've been to many worlds, and have always been invincible. Yet, I still don't have the confidence of dealing with God. I hope that the future generation can comprehend and wield the power of time, and challenge that entity that toys with all of us."

Yue Zhong flipped through the Star Luo Technique and saw the tyrannical words of the author, Star-Lord. This was truly a genius.

"To train till the Type 9 realm, and comprehend domain, as well as spatial laws. Such an expert had still fallen. Truly, there's always a mountain beyond a mountain. This Star-Lord was almost invincible, and yet, he had perished in the end. How strong is the Mech Emperor exactly?"

Thinking to how such a powerhouse had been taken down by the Mech Emperor, Yue Zhong's heart was filled with trepidation towards him. He estimated that even with all his trump cards, he could at most handle a Type 8 Mech Lord at most right now. However, it was a death wish to go against the Mech Emperor. He might not even have the chance to run.

Yue Zhong threw the thoughts behind and started to cultivate, "Forget it, I'd better train hard and raise my strength. If I can't do so in this short amount of time, when the army descends upon Earth, there's only death for humanity."

"My strongest ability right now is the God-Devil Flame, in that case, let's try and comprehend the Flame Domain."

Yue Zhong began to follow the pointers in the manual, and with a thought, the golden God-Devil Flames that could incinerate a Type 7 expert condensed in his hands. He stared at it fixedly and began to observe and try to comprehend the Flame Domain.

In the process, he felt like his mind was sifting through countless laws and principles. After a few hours, a blazing hot flame exuded from his body, enveloping the region around him.

"Success!!" Yue Zhong's eyes regained their clarity, and he was overjoyed. Once he trained in it successfully, he could gain another trump card. With the Flame Domain, against a Type 8 expert, he was able to hold his own now, even going so far as to kill the weaker ones.

Chapter 1062: Relax!

"The God-Devil Body is truly the most suitable physique for cultivation. If it were in the past, based on my ordinary physique, I would not have comprehended domains!" Yue Zhong was filled with joy, and with a thought, the flaming domain was retracted back into his body.

The flames in the domain were entirely within Yue Zhong's control, as long as he willed it, he could even incinerate a Type 8 expert. Likewise, a normal person could be unharmed within the region as well.

While training his domain, the effect on the area was quite large, and the 3 women also felt it. They walked out of the cultivation container, coming up to him to offer their congratulations, "Congratulations Master, you have succeeded in a domain. From now on, you're invincible within the Type 7 realm."

Domains were something that even only the talented of geniuses in the Type 8 realm could comprehend and train in. Yue Zhong had done so while in the Type 7 realm, thus, he could truly be considered undefeatable, unless he came across another heaven-defying genius with talents in domains as well.

"Since I'm done with this, I should relax for a while," Since he was still euphoric from his success, he swept the 3 women a look, and said, "Yue Ying, come with me."

Hearing him calling for her alone, Yue Ying was taken aback, before her face flushed red, as she walked over with light steps, "Yes! Master!"

Yue Zhong laughed out, and whisked her up, stepping into his bedroom.

Soon, the sounds of pleasure rang out from the room.

Yue Xing and Yue Lian were also red from the embarrassment

and their imaginations at the sounds of lovemaking

There was a look of envy in Yue Lian's eyes, "Sister Yue Ying sure is lucky, getting Master's love. How I envy her, but then again, she's so elegant and sexy, it's natural for Master to like her."

Yue Xing giggled, as she hugged Yue Lian, reaching out with her naughty hands and grabbed Yue Lian's bountiful breasts as she kneaded them, "Little Sis Yue Lian, you don't have to beat yourself up, your figure is amazing as well, Master will surely adore you."

Yue Lian scrunched up her face while flushed, as she struggled, "No, Sister Yue Xing, don't grab them! Their shape will change, then it won't look nice."

After escaping from Yue Xing's embrace, Yue Lian had a hopeful look, "Why don't we... steal a look?"

All 3 of them were talents equivalent to Heaven's favorites back when they were in their human worlds, and had focused on their cultivation. When they were captured, they had not experienced any matters between men and women. Furthermore, they were treated like cats and dogs by the Mechs. Thus, they were naturally curious about the birds and the bees. Yue Zhong was their master, and everything of theirs belonged to him, thus, they did not mind.

Yue Xing was also a bouncy individual, after barely a moment of hesitation, she nodded, "Let's go and take a look."

The 2 beauties quickly sneaked over towards Yue Zhong's room.

After they opened the door, what they saw quickly caused them to feel hot. The scene of spring, their eldest sister Yue Ying lying on the bed with a flushed face, but a look of satisfaction and bliss. Groans and moans were coming out of her mouth, and it felt extremely alluring.

As for Yue Zhong, whose sense of perception was already strong, the moment the 2 curious little 'kittens' appeared at the door, he had already sensed them. He revealed a cheeky smile and grabbed

out at thin air.

Yue Xing and Yue Lian both yelped out in shock, as they were grabbed by a formless hand and dragged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong patted Yue Xing's face, giving her a look.

The young blond beauty revealed an enchanting expression as she stuck out her tongue and began to lick Yue Zhong everywhere.

Yue Zhong lowered his lips and lock them onto the lips of the pitiful-looking big-breasted loli, Yue Lian.

Soon, the entire room was engulfed in throes of passion.

The huge battleship continued to fly for an entire day, over 400,000 km, before finally landing on a sky fortress. There were all sorts of mechanical residences, the entire city filled with a modern and futuristic feel.

"We have arrived at the Mech Empire City, may all passengers proceed to disembark within the hour."

The moment the battleship docked, an announcement rang throughout.

"Have we reached?"

On the bed, Yue Zhong held Yue Ying and Yue Xing with either of his arms, while the petite Yue Lian was laying on his chest. He suddenly opened his eyes and reached out to pat Yue Lian's shoulders gently, causing her smooth skin to wobble, "Time to get up. Let's go prepare, we're leaving this place."

Yue Lian lifted her head, her cheeks blushing as she giggled at Yue Zhong and kissed him. She then leaped off lightly. However, she stopped, and turned around, shooting Yue Zhong a coquettish glance, as she took up her clothes and got dressed in front of him.

Yue Ying and Yue Xing also gave him a kiss each, as they got dressed in front him.

The 3 of them, with their amazing looks and bodies, dressing in

front of him, was truly a feast for his eyes.

If it was not for the many things he still had to handle, he really wanted to immerse himself in this wonderland.

After the 3 of them got dressed, they quickly got into the container. If they were to walk around unbridled, it would be detrimental to Yue Zhong's disguise as Niu Meng.

Yue Zhong was not arrogant to think that he could rely on his own strength to kill his way out.

Dragging the container, Yue Zhong disembarked the battleship.

"Hi, Niu Meng! It's me, Wendy. Since you're new to the Mech Empire City, and not familiar with the place, I will bring you to your home."

As Yue Zhong walked out of the ship, the cold-looking Wendy arrived by his side, wearing a rare, faint smile.

Yue Zhong's mind got into motion as he smiled back, "Alright!"

As they stepped into the massive port, Yue Zhong experienced for himself the splendor and grandness of the Mech Empire City.

There were countless tunnels and pathways, with vehicles running quickly and orderly, looking like a huge web from the sky.

At the same time, there was a sort of a profound track that was inlaid with some strange prism, reflecting the sunlight from the sky towards the ground, causing the ground to look perpetually enveloped by sunlight.

On the streets, there were many Mechs walking about, each of them of different shapes, sizes and forms. There were some human-shaped, some pigs, dogs, tigers, leopards, and all sorts.

The Mechs walked along the streets, while many had some ropes, and at the other end of the ropes were either humans or other species.

In the hands of these Mechs, these humans and other species

were like pets. There were some even engaging in intercourse right on the streets like common dogs, attracting the ridicule of the Mechs. Many of them were just laughing.

All of a sudden, one extremely beautiful and sexy human woman kneeled in front of her Mech master, pleading pitifully, "Please! I don't want to! Master, spare me!! I don't want to do it with that dog!!"

Besides that particular Mech, was another Mech who had a Mutant Dog at the end of his leash, looking extremely powerful and bulky, panting heavily while covered in black scales.

The surrounding Mechs were all looking and urging things on.

The Mech sent a kick towards his human slave, sending her flying about 6 to 7m, and barked out in anger, "You better get started. What do you think I bought you for? It is for my entertainment and pleasure! Raise your ass and start copulating with Depis! This Depis has a royal bloodline, and his position is much higher than your stupid human males. It is an honor for you to copulate with him! Still not scrambling over? Are you seeking to die?"

"No!! I don't want!! I don't want to copulate with a dog!! You're.." A look of despair overcame her, as she started to mutter a curse.

Peng!

Before her words were over, her brain exploded in a shower of blood

The Mech swept her corpse a look of disgust, "What a killjoy, stupid bitch!"

Seeing the body of the human beauty in pieces, 8 of the human females around, treated like pets, were also filled with grief, trembling in fear, shock, and despair. There were 12 others who had blank and numb stares, without a single emotion, as they had already undergone all sorts of torture and torment, no longer

seeing themselves as humans.

Chapter 1063: The Fate of Losers!

When Yue Zhong witnessed this gory and horrific scene and felt a surge of fury. It was as though something was lit in his heart, and he clenched his fists tightly, as veins popped out.

Those Mechs did not see humans as humans at all, just subjecting them to whatever treatment as they liked. This sort of behavior was not tolerable to any normal person.

Yue Zhong had stained his hands with countless blood along his path of survival and expansion. However, he was still sickened by such behavior, that had no bottom line.

"I can't do anything now. It is still the capital of the Mech Kingdom. The experts here are plenty. Just this city alone possesses the capability of wiping me out over a hundred times. Furthermore, there's that Type 9 Mech Emperor, if I were to make any rash move, I'll surely die. Now the only thing I need to do is to infiltrate, steal their technology and resources, and finally eradicate this damned Mech Kingdom. Only then can I avert a disaster for my human race."

Yue Zhong's reasoning continued to hold him back and reminding him that turning away was the right move. However, upon witnessing the horror below, his rage had consumed him, and there was no inkling of retreating at all.

Just as he was struggling to control himself and prepared to walk away, the Mech suddenly laughed out cruelly, and pointed at the Mutant Dog, "Depis, go! Go fuck that woman."

The boisterous Mutant Dog leaped forward, with its sharp, barbed lower body, lunging viciously towards another beautiful human female.

There was a look of despair on that woman's face, as tears streamed. However, she raised her butt helplessly.

The 30-over Mechs began to laugh, watching excitedly.

Human slaves were just playthings to while the time for these Mechs. The more the humans despair, the more interesting it was to the Mechs. Their behavior was exactly like those humans who loved to torture and mistreat their pets. To the Mechs as well as other sentient races, humans were just fun playthings.

As the Mutant Dog pounced towards the woman, there was a gust of wind, and a huge leg came slamming into the dog viciously, and at the point of impact, due to the strength, the dog exploded into pieces.

The bits and pieces of flesh splattered onto the Mechs, causing their bodies to be dirtied.

The owner saw his Mutant Dog killed by Yue Zhong in Niu Meng's frame, and his eyes gleamed dangerously, as he barked out, "Who are you? You dare kill my beloved Depis?! Are you sick of living?"

The rest of the Mechs also stared at Yue Zhong with unfriendly expressions.

Yue Zhong's face remained cold, as he waved his hand throwing a card with 3 contribution points at the Mech, "The contribution points here should be enough to purchase that lowly bitch of yours. Take this card and scram."

"Who the fuck do you think you are? Insulting me, Jackra?!"

The Mech called Jackra watched the card float down, and in his rage, he shot forwards with his claws outstretched, intending to grab at Yue Zhong's head.

Yue Zhong's eyes watch him approach with a cold look as he barked, "I'm the new Baron Niu Meng, drafted into the Mech Army. You damn lowly commoners dare to act against me, you can go to hell!"

At that moment, he reacted by sending his own claws through

Jackra's head, and under Jackra's shocked gaze, he pulled out the smart chip before crushing it.

The moment the smart chip was crushed, his sentience ceased to exist, and his frame crumbled.

"Heavens! Jackra was killed!

"Jackra is dead!"

"He is a Mech Baron! He is actually a Mech Baron!!"

"..."

After killing Jackra in a single move, Yue Zhong swept a glance across the rest, and the other Mechs lowered their heads subconsciously, afraid to meet his eyes.

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and sent out an ordinary card with contribution points to the Mechs, "I've my eyes on your pets, these are contribution points, scram."

It was normal for Mechs to use their contributions to conduct trades.

After the Mechs took up the cards, they quickly gave their pets to him and scooted away.

Wendy shot Yue Zhong a strange look as she spoke, "I didn't expect you to be so righteous!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "I'm a member of the Pets Protection Society, and I detest such fellows that mistreat their pets."

Facing Wendy, Yue Zhong could only use that excuse to cover up for his actions.

Wendy laughed lightly, "I like those who have a good heart."

Right at this time, there was a sound of an alarm, as 8 black uniformed Mechs carrying Particle Guns came soaring out from the numerous mechanical tracks.

When they arrived, one of them shot a look at the scene, and 2 beams of light shone from his eyes.

Under the light, the proceedings of the scene replayed.

The leader of the patrol force shot Yue Zhong a cold look, "I'm Luo Xun from the Security Squad. Please produce proof of your Baron-status, otherwise, I will arrest you on charges of murder."

With a thought, the identification shone on Niu Meng's forehead, revealing his status. This was bestowed by the empire and the system, with no way of fabricating.

Luo Xun looked through the identification for a long while, and after ascertaining Yue Zhong's identification, he spoke coldly, "Baron Niu Meng, your identity is confirmed. This time, since Jackra took the initiative to attack you, you have defended yourself. You're innocent and are free to go."

Inside the Mech Empire City, the nobility were people of status. Jackra and the rest were just the lowest of social standing, only above the pets and slaves.

Yue Zhong nodded towards Luo Xun, before pulling on the leashes of the 30-odd beauties of the human race and other species, heading towards his residence.

Yue Zhong's residence was a huge villa of 1 square kilometer, with plenty of amenities.

Under Wendy's slightly resentful gaze, Yue Zhong sent her off politely, not inviting her in. Although Wendy might have the appearance of a beauty, she was still a sentient Mech, and Yue Zhong had no intentions of bonding with a robot.

After Wendy left, Yue Zhong swiftly knocked out the pets and placed them inside the container to freeze them.

Those slaves bought from others and exchanged had to be brainwashed and swapped with a new chip, then they could be considered as truly his. Before that happened, there was a chance

of them betraying him. He did not dare to reveal his secrets to unreliable slaves.

He then pulled out the tablet containing Bai Yi and asked with expectations, "Bai Yi, we're here in the Mech Empire City already. Are you able to infiltrate the central system?"

If she could wrestle control over the central system, then Yue Zhong would be in control over more than half the Kingdom.

Numbers and data flowed past Bai Yi's eyes, before she shook her head, "No good, I can't get in. There's a powerful A.I. guarding the system. I can sense that its might within this empire is much stronger than me. I have no way of invading. If I'm not wrong, it should be the Mech Emperor.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "In that case, are you able to find out where the treasury is?"

Hearing her words, Yue Zhong had no choice but to give up on controlling the entire Mech Kingdom. She might be powerful, but she was not omnipotent.

"According to the data I've gathered, the treasuries are likely in these few places, but I can't determine for sure which is the correct location."

With that, on the map of the Mech Empire, there were 8 dots that lit up.

Yue Zhong took a careful look and noticed they were all key places of importance. Even if he had a noble status, there was no way he could access those locations.

He frowned, "What can I do?"

After a moment of contemplation, with no clear idea, "I can only try to conduct some reconnaissance myself."

As night fell, Yue Zhong put on his Stealth Armor, flitting like a ghost towards one of the restricted areas.

Chapter 1064: Genius Mech Pilot!

Although it was night, the entire Mech Empire City was still brightly lit, as though it was still daytime.

Mechs were different from biological life forms. They did not need rest, and compared to the dark, they preferred the day. After all, their senses worked better in the day.

Yue Zhong continued to traverse the streets noiselessly, as he noticed the numerous Mechs walking about.

There were many merchants on the streets as well, and along the shopping districts, numerous Mechs walked about, purchasing items that they required or wanted.

Although it was possible to purchase items through the Galastar Virtual Network, there were those who enjoyed the experience of walking through shops and malls to purchase their items.

"Let me say it once more, our first target is the mech armor storage at Point A. Based on our intel, there are 10 complete Type 7 Mech suits. The second target is the mech beast storage at Point B. After we have attacked that, we must use the virus to wipe out their data and cause a ruckus. The strongest entity in this world is the Mech Emperor, and we cannot possibly gain control of the Mech Beasts. The best case is to use the virus to cause a commotion..."

Below the streets, in the tunnels, there were hundreds of humans in mechanical battle armor, pretending to masquerade as Mechs, eyeing a young 'man' with a pair of clear and bright eyes, as he pointed to a map and gave a flurry of orders.

There were also sensors and surveillance cameras within the tunnels. However, these humans were holding a device the size of a palm, causing a distortion field, jamming the signals in the tunnels.

The young 'man' with an intelligent look, and features even more precious than a beauty conveyed the orders once more, before asking seriously, "Have you all understood?"

The human soldiers within the tunnel responded with a resounding, "Yes!"

The beautiful 'man' then ordered, "In that case, move out!"

"Roger!"

Under his orders, the human soldiers began to move out in the various tunnels.

One particular burly, blond man in uniform looked at the pretty-looking 'man' and frowned, "Miss Green, this is the home base of the Mechs, and that old freak Mech Emperor is holding the fort here. Is it too dangerous to act here?"

The Mech Emperor was countless eons old, and since stepping into the Type 9 realm, he had no equal. With his strength alone, he took over dozens of planets, wiping out countless civilizations and their culture. Even a few other Type 9 powerhouses had fallen at his hands.

With the Mech Empire City being the main base of this old legend, with the numerous experts residing within, just the Type 7 experts alone numbered over 500. This entire fort was also a massive weapon in itself. A Type 8 powerhouse might fall easily if he or she tried anything funny.

Miss Green had a steely look, "Vickers, the Mech Emperor had already gone to the Ghost Star planet, warring against the Ghost Star clan. At the same time, half of the experts have been deployed. In these thousands of years, this is the moment where the Mech Empire City is at its weakest and our only chance. This time, we need to save rescue Her Majesty, the Young Star-Lord. She's our Star Luo's only hope, and only she can overthrow the Mech Empire's rule, riding the world of these hateful metal tumors. This

time, regardless of our sacrifice, we have to achieve this goal.

These hundred of soldiers were all the elites of the human race, if placed on Earth, each of them could be a ruler in his own right. However, against the terrifying Mechs, there was only death. This Miss Green was utilizing them to draw the attention away to achieve her objective.

Her voice turned low, "Furthermore, this time, it's not just our Human race, but those oppressed foreign races have banded together. This is the best chance we've got. For the rest of humanity, we can only sacrifice them."

A pained expression flitted past Vickers' face, but he maintained silent.

Miss Green continued indifferently, "It's getting late, let's move."

After that, she led Vickers as well as 20 other peak-experts and quickly left here towards another direction.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As for Yue Zhong, he had just passed one particular shopping district, when suddenly, there was an intense explosion.

The powerful shockwave shot out in all directions, and those slaves of foreign species who were struck were all blown apart, blood and flesh splattering everywhere.

Even some of the Mechs were destroyed in that explosion.

"What's going on?"

Yue Zhong was shocked by the sudden blast and quickly soared into the sky noiselessly, observing below.

He noticed a group of human soldiers equipped with mechanical armor, wielding A-Grade Particle cannons, as they charged out from various corners and launching a sudden attack. Making use of their weapons, they began to fire at the Mechs.

The Mech Empire City was the base of the Mech Kingdom, and its

defenses were tight. Even a Type 8 powerhouse would be suppressed here. In the thousands of ears, there had never been someone brave or daring enough to launch an assault right smack in this city. Thus, the Mechs had gotten careless, that was how the humans had managed to succeed in their assault, instantly killing over hundreds of slaves of foreign races, as well as dozens of Mechs, while injuring a hundred others.

"Stupid! You're just sending yourself to your doom!! There's no meaning!" Yue Zhong swept the humans below utilizing the Type 7 mechanical armors and sighed.

The defense of the Mech Kingdom was too dense. Yue Zhong had seen it for himself. Inside the city, the moment there was any strange activity, the Mechs would respond immediately and effectively.

The human soldiers quickly charged into the armory which had the dozen Type 7 Mech frames.

All of a sudden, a number of Mechs leaped down from a particular track in the skies, each of them at the Type 6 level, and wielding B-Grade Particle Cannons that were capable of killing Type 7 powerhouses.

The moment those Mechs came down, they began to fire their Particle Cannons into the group of human rebels.

One human soldier used his A-Grade Particle Cannon to fire back at the Mechs, and the beam punched through the frame of those Mechs, as parts scattered.

All of a sudden, one particle beam burst down from the sky, blasting the human soldier, vaporizing the human soldier, not leaving even a single trace of him.

"Wang Hu!!"

Another soldier let out a roar of grief and anguish, but before he could even finish, another beam shot down from the skies,

vaporizing him as well.

One by one, beams fell down upon the rebel army, and within a short span of time, more than half had been obliterated.

The leader of the team screamed out in fury, "Evacuate!! Quickly!!"

The soldiers quickly dashed through the shopping district.

The faces of the Mechs were cold and impassive, firing without mercy, as the particle beams burst through the market, tearing apart the structures and blasting the human soldiers.

As the marketplace was also made out of mechanical parts, they were like part of the city, and quickly transmitted the information on the tracks of the humans to the system, enabling the rest of the defense to catch up quickly.

The human soldiers could not withstand the onslaught, and within another dozen of breath, they were wiped out.

The rebel was over before anyone knew it, it came fast, and was put down quickly as well. The entire episode did not even last more than 5 minutes.

In this rebellion, only a dozen Mechs had truly perished, but over 300 human elites had died.

Yue Zhong looked at the aftermath and sighed, "Such fools, there was no meaning to it at all."

As he was prepared to leave, there was a sudden burst of light that shot towards the sky in the middle of the marketplace. It punched through the huge mechanical track in the sky as countless parts scattered everywhere.

A Type 7 human-shaped Mech burst forth with a pair of beautiful wings on its back while wielding a B-Grade Particle Cannon in its arms.

With its appearance, it flapped its wings and turned into a

shooting star, disappearing from its location. A number of B-Grade particle beams that blasted through the heads of the sentient Mechs that came to quell the rebellion, directly obliterating them together with their smart chips.

Other than that, 9 other Type 7 human-shaped Mech came flying out. However, they were not as exemplary as the first one, only forcefully reaching the initial-Type 7 realm with their piloting skills.

Chapter 1065: Chaos in the Mech Empire City!

Yue Zhong looked at that green human-shaped Mech in the lead, as it weaved in and out of the city guards, killing the Mechs one by one, and he could not help but be amazed, "Absolute genius, this pilot is an absolute genius!"

Yue Zhong had subdued a number of Type 7 Mechs, but in order to exploit their fullest combat potential, and raise it past their original threshold, the pilot had to be a natural, a talented expert.

He thought silently, "Still, it's not enough, the Type 7 strength is not enough to raise waves in this city."

In order to cause a proper commotion, one had to be at least at the Type 9 stage, otherwise, even a Type 8 heaven-defying genius would be suppressed.

"I need to make my preparations."

With a thought and a sweeping glance, he revealed himself as he snuck into the midst of some Mechs.

In a few seconds, the mechanical track up in the sky shifted, and revealed several B-Grade Particle Cannons, aiming downwards.

The next instant, numerous beams burst down from the skies, slamming into the 10 Type 7 mech frames.

The 10 of them quickly activated their B-Grade Energy Shields, but unfortunately, under the onslaught of beams, their shields collapsed and were shattered easily.

The green Mech with wings had already charged out towards another direction at the first instant, barely dodging most of the beams, withstanding a few that sent ripples through the shield.

As the Type 7 mech frame flew, it continued to release particle beams as though it was a dandelion, blasting the Mechs below,

obliterating their smart chips as well.

The sentient Mechs were not lambs for slaughter either, instead, they bared their fangs. Against the assault of the laser beams, they quickly reacted, and changed into their base forms, firing back.

Laser beams, particle beams, flames, ice shards, wind blades, poisonous waves, all sorts of attacks were sent towards the Type 7 mech frame in the air.

By now, the mech frame had already run out of ideas and was forced to retreat. It was hit by numerous attacks, as the shield finally shattered.

At that instant of the shattering of the shield, a number of beams slammed into the mech frame, riddling it with injuries.

Suddenly, a beast-type Mech shot out from the midst of the Mechs below, reaching out grab at the cockpit of the Type 7 mech frame.

The sharp claws instantly tore through the frame, grabbing the pilot. The cells were then sent to envelope the pilot within, before pulling him/her towards the inner part of the Beast-Mech.

After that, there was a bright beam that shot out from the Beast-Mech, obliterating the Type 7 mech frame, causing it to fly far away.

As the mech frame flew out, it was bombarded by countless particle beams, bursting apart in a shower of flames.

A strong scanning wave was then cast towards the location of the destroyed mech frame, and upon not discovering any strange movements, it went away.

Inside the Beast-Type Mech, Yue Zhong looked at the pilot, a woman with long black hair, wearing an Enhanced Armor. Her figure was voluptuous, her skin fair, and she was full of vitality. Yue Zhong quickly spoke, "Don't move. I'm human. I'm here to save you."

As he spoke, the black color mech-cells that were like tentacles unwrapped around her, before pulling away.

The beauty snorted coldly, scowling, "Human? Pei! Don't lie. If you're human, how did you infiltrate into this city? I know you're a Mech, don't even try to get information out of me. I will not sell out my organization."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Haha! You're really stupid. If I was a Mech, I could just hand you over to the Kingdom and with their brainwashing technology, all you know will be spilled by yourself. If I were your enemy, why go through so much trouble to ask you a question?"

Hearing his words, the female pilot was taken aback. She knew about the brainwashing technology of the Mech Kingdom. No matter how resolute or faithful a person was, once put under, he or she would become a traitor. It was something that modified the person's consciousness, and not something willpower could withstand.

Yue Zhong saw a resolute glint in the pilot's eyes, and laughed as he continued to mock her, "Are you thinking of committing suicide? It's useless. Unless you can ensure that your brain is destroyed in an instant, otherwise, with the Mech Kingdom's technology, they could restore your brain and control you entirely. If I'm your enemy, then even if you wish to die, you would not be able to do so. Even if you died, I would be able to get the information I want. If I turned out not to be your enemy, then committing suicide would be stupid."

Hearing that, her face gradually changed, and finally acknowledged him. However, she maintained her guard, as she asked, "Who are you? Why save me?"

Yue Zhong swept her a look and announced in an overbearing manner, "I'm Yue Zhong. I admire your piloting skills. This time, I've saved you because I want to recruit you under my wing. You

don't have the right to refuse. At the time the Type 7 mech frame was destroyed, you should be dead. Since I've saved you from the clutches of death, you have to become my subordinate and work for me. I won't waste too much breath, if you're not willing, I will brainwash you, and make you into my loyal subordinate. Make the choice now. Serve me willingly, or be brainwashed. Either way, you've been abandoned by them."

This female pilot had an outstanding gift in piloting the Mech, displaying 200% of a Type 7 Mech's strength. If she was given a Type 8 Mech, she could exert a Type 8 powerhouse's strength. Yue Zhong was naturally not going to let such a person go.

The pilot listened to Yue Zhong's tyrannical manner and could not help but be stunned. Her eyebrows furrowed, as she replied with a little desolate tone, "As long as you're not an enemy to the humans, and will not act against my past comrades, I can be your subordinates."

Yue Zhong replied, "Of course, I'm human too. What's your name?"

The beautiful pilot was silent for a while, before replying, "I'm called Mu Wei."

Yue Zhong asked, "Is your organization insane? You actually launched such an assault on the Mech Empire City, you're obviously sending your men to die! What does your organization have to gain from this?"

Such an attack was seeking death. Even a Type 8 powerhouse would be suppressed and killed, not to mention ordinary human soldiers. Even if they had Type 7 mechanical armor, they would not be able to raise any waves.

Mu Wei fell silent, unable to reply.

Yue Zhong swept her a look and did not mind. Instead, with a thought, he used the Stealth Armor and controlled the Beast-Mech

to dash towards a deep part of the city where one of the locations marked out by Bai Yi was.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Yue Zhong had not gotten very far, when there were sudden explosions all around the city, as though the entire capital was under attack.

Countless beams blasted the numerous mechanical tracks in the skies, destroying them.

Most of these tracks were ordinary transport systems normally, but once the city was in defense mode, they would become terrifying weapons, suppressing most of the rebellion. Thus, they were the targets of the rebels as well.

Hong!!!

Following an earth-shaking roar, a huge prison within the city was bombarded, as many Mechs were killed by an onslaught of laser beams.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!!"

"Kill those damned metal cans!!"

"They dare enslave us, people of the Scorpio Clan, I will destroy this damned Mech Kingdom and wipe out all these tin cans!!"

"Go to hell!!"

"..."

From the prison a large number of experts of foreign species broke out, roaring in anger and the joy of freedom. They pounced towards the nearby Mechs with powerful killing intent, obliterating them through whatever methods they had.

Yue Zhong looked at the chaos and finally understood, "I understand now, it was all a ploy to cause a misdirection. No wonder they were willing to sacrifice so many human experts. They were just cannon fodder to distract the Mechs!!"

Chapter 1066: 9-headed Type 9 Dragonhawk!

Not long after those convicts who had been imprisoned in the cells of the Mech Kingdom ran out on the streets, the mechanical tracks in the air above the city began to adjust and transform, revealing B-Grade particle cannons.

The forts in the skies also revealed their own cannons, aiming downwards.

Right at this moment, a huge black-scaled claw appeared out of the clouds, grabbing onto one of the forts and crushed it.

The huge fort was immediately destroyed in a second, exploding in a loud blast, causing the dragon claw to be sent far away.

The hundreds of mechanical tracks combined together, as they formed a huge face while revealing the aura and pressure of a Type 9 expert, "Emperor 9-headed Dragonhawk, our Mech Kingdom has always been cordial with your Death Beasts Valley, why have you attacked our Mech Kingdom this time?! Are you not afraid that our Mech Emperor will come back and wipe out all of you from the Death Beasts Valley?"

The terrifying existence within the clouds was the lord of the Death Beasts Valley, Type 9 Mutant Beast 9-headed Dragonhawk. The Death Beasts Valley was one of the few forbidden lands of Galastar.

"Hahaha! Track Lord, as long as you made the decision to hand over the Gates of Hell to our Death Beasts Valley, I will leave immediately, and not be at odds with your Mech Kingdom. Otherwise, I will destroy Zu Yuan Ting's base, even if he kills his way back, I'm not scared. At most, we can both be injured."

"This world that we live in is just a cage constructed by that entity God. As long as one breaks past the Type 9 realm, and reach

the Type 10 realm of the legends, one can escape the clutches of this damned cage, and become the master of his own fate!"

"The Gates of Hell represents that chance for us Type 9 existences! No matter what conditions or promises you can give me, as long as you refuse to hand it over, we will be enemies!!"

In the sky, there were the roars of the majestic Mutant Beast. It was filled with a boundless pressure and anyone below the Type 4 realm who heard it would not be able to resist nor exhibit more than 10% of their strength.

The higher the one advanced, the harder it was to breakthrough each stage. If a Type 8 Mutant Beast wanted to evolve, without the right fate and chances, it could die before it even evolved. As for a Type 9 Mutant Beast intending to reach the Type 10 stage, it was even more impossible.

The Mech Emperor was a Type 9 powerhouse, having conquered dozens of planets and wiping out thousands of civilizations, with numerous experts under him. He had might, authority and power, even so, he was still a trapped entity here, his life still within the grasp of the entity called God. It was natural that it would unwilling.

Every Type 9 expert had that thought, that was to evolve, passing by that critical step, escaping from their cage and grasping their own fates.

However, in the annals of history, there had only been legends of a rare few that had transcended. The 9-headed Dragonhawk only knew that within its soul memories, there was the sign of a Type 10 powerhouse's existence within its bloodline and the only way that was possible for it to reach that stage was to cross the Gates of Hell.

Earth was now the gathering point for various species, all harboring the hope of evolving once more.

Many of those powerhouses could feel it in their blood, that with

so many species descending upon Earth, the final victor among this competition would become the ruler, and thus obtain the right to evolve. It would then not be impossible to reach the Type 10 realm.

The Track Lord roared out, "Emperor 9-headed Dragonhawk, we will not give way with regards to the Gates of Hell!! If you were to retreat now, our Mech Kingdom will promise to never go against you and will be your ally forever. Otherwise, when His Majesty returns, your Death Beasts Valley will perish!!"

The Gates of Hell was important to the Mech Kingdom as well.

The Mech Emperor, Zu Yuan Ting, was a peak Type-9 powerhouse, regardless of whatever weapons, or treasures, they would be unable to help him break past that last barrier. He would not give up on the chance to evolve.

If the Track Lord dared to hand the Gates of Hell to the Death Beasts Valley, the Mech Emperor would not be merciful at all, and could possibly crush his smart chip, not giving it a chance of rebirth.

"Hahaha!! Even if the Death Beasts Valley is wiped out, so be it! I don't care! As long as I'm not dead, who could care about the rest!! However, before that bastard Zu Yuan Ting returns and kill my Death Beasts Valley, I will destroy his base!!"

The sound of the 9-headed Dragonhawk's cackling sounded, as a huge dragon claw came slashing downwards, grabbing onto another fort that was at least 1 km in height.

There was a bright flash, as a powerful energy shield congealed, protecting it.

When the dragon claw grabbed the shield, the 9-headed Dragonhawk clenched tightly, and the energy shield cracked instantly, and the Fort followed suit.

The shield that could withstand the innate abilities of a Type 8 powerhouse for an entire day, actually crumbled within 10

seconds, this was the power of a Type 9 powerhouse.

The face of the Track Lord fell, as he roared out in panic, "Damn it!! 9-headed Dragonhawk, damn you!!"

Of the various forts in the skies, each of them began to glow and combine together, forming a huge energy shield, shrouding the entire Mech Empire City.

In the skies, a huge dragon claw of over a hundred meters slammed onto the energy shield.

The space around it trembled, as a powerful shockwave blasted outwards.

The tyrannical energy flow formed into a hurricane, surrounding the city.

The strength of a Type 9 powerhouse was extremely heaven-defying. Every single move was capable of causing a calamity or destroying a city. If there was nothing held back, then the might would even be equivalent to a nuclear weapon.

The Mech Empire City was a powerful treasure refined by the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting, and the countless forts formed a formation capable of resisting the attack of the 9-headed Dragonhawk.

At the same time, numerous Grade C-cannons that could kill Type 8 powerhouses came out, pointing at the sky.

Upon adjusting their aim, without any warning, they fired at the 9-headed Dragonhawk.

Hundreds of beams blasted out, each of which could kill a Type 8 powerhouse, and even a Type 9 powerhouse had to be careful.

"Hahaha!! This Mech Empire City is a treasure, if Zu Yuan Ting was here himself controlling, I would be more careful. However, just you? A Type 8 powerhouse, and you want to harm me? I shall let you witness my strength."

In the skies, the unbridled laugh rang out, as a huge dragon claw came crashing down, as the clouds rolled and the sky dimmed out, as though all life was on the verge of being exterminated.

Space continued to tear, as a huge rift appeared.

Those beams that could tear apart a Type 8 powerhouse was directly consumed by the space rift, dealing no damage whatsoever to the 9-headed Dragonhawk.

"Strong!! This Type 9 powerhouse is really too heaven-defying!!" Yue Zhong exclaimed in shock, hiding within the clouds.

The C-Grade cannons were enough to harm a Type 9 powerhouse, but if it did not hit, then it was useless.

The Type 9 Mutant Beast could already control space, and with its ability to tear apart space, it was practically invincible to the people below.

A single Type 9 powerhouse could wipe out an entire species. His combat power was incredibly powerful, and it was a huge difference from the Type 8 experts.

After the C-grade particle cannons were drawn away, the rest of the B-grade beams started to fire, blasting onto the scales of the 9-headed Dragonhawk.

Water could wear down even the toughest of stones. Although those B-Grade Particle Cannons were not particularly effective against the Type 9 Mutant Beast, the injuries would stack up, and become the last blade of grass that pressed down on the camel's back.

In the sky, the 9-headed Dragonhawk braved the countless beams and sent out another claw that caused the entire shield to tremble.

At the same time, countless Mech Beasts soared out towards the 9-headed Dragonhawk.

As they got close to the Type 9 Mutant Beast, their bodies

trembled, before turning into dust. Only those of Type 5 and above were safe.

In order to resist the 9-headed Dragonhawk, all the forces of the Mech Empire City were deployed to deal with the crisis, and no one was available to handle the internal prison break.

The uprising was instead getting even more chaotic.

Chapter 1067: Young Star Lord!

Hong!

In that city, as the escaping inmates were wreaking havoc, inside one particular ice prison, there was a huge explosion.

Miss Green and the rest of her team charged straight into it.

In the deepest part of the prison, there was an ice crystal-like cell, and within it sat a beautiful lady dressed in men's attire. She sat quietly, her long hair laying lush across her shoulders, her skin fair and she looked exquisite.

"Young Star-Lord!!"

The moment they saw the lady, Miss Green and her team exclaimed out in joy.

This particular beauty was the only descendant of the Star Luo Clan, the Young Star-Lord.

Miss Green quickly rushed up, and waved her hand, pulling a number of Type 6 Nuclei that was powering the prison.

After losing the power source, the door of the huge icy prison that was sealing the Young Star-Lord opened up, revealing the frozen Young Star-Lord.

Miss Green dashed forward, waving her hands, as a blue flame appeared and began to melt the ice.

When the ice melted completely, the Young Star-Lord opened up her eyes. When she did, she took in a deep breath, and the surrounding atmospheric energy began to gush into her, as she absorbed them in huge amounts.

The next instant, her body shuddered, as the remaining ice around her body shattered. She took a step forward, her eyes flashing with a bright glint, and revealed a powerful strength.

The Young Star-Lord swept everyone present a look, frowning as

she emitted a pressure, "Green? Did you save me? But, how? There're so many experts here, and Zu Yuan Ting that old bastard is holding the fort. How could you guys have come?"

Miss Green quickly replied, "Replying to Young Star-Lord, the old dogshit Mech Emperor had left for the Ghost Clan, attacking them. Within a short time, he would not be able to rush back. The Emperor 9-headed Dragonhawk had also agreed to work together with us this time, attacking the Mech Empire City."

Only then did the Young Star-Lord ease up, as she responded solemnly, "So this was the case. Zu Yuan Ting that old bastard actually acted against the Ghost Clan. This time, it truly is a rare opportunity for us."

"Come with me! Let's go take as much as we can, and make that old Mech bastard suffer a great loss!"

She then stepped forward once and instantly traveled over a hundred meters away.

Miss Green and the rest quickly followed after.

"Audacious, you dare to break out of prison! Stop right there, or you'll face the death penalty!"

The moment the Young Star-Lord left the icy prison, a Type 7 Mech Lord quickly led 30-over Type 6 Mech Generals, as well as over a hundred Type 5 Mech Beasts and arrived in front of her, with countless weapons pointed at the group.

With the appearance of the Mech army, the rest of the group turned pale. Among them, the strongest was at most at the Type 6 realm. They could break into the prison was because they had the protection of the other species while employing all sorts of tactics to get in. Against a troop led by the Mech Lord, they would only perish.

"Hmph, a bunch of ant-like trash, die!"

The Young Star-Lord shot the army a condescending look, as she

snorted coldly, and in an instant, the entire area of about 3km radius with her in the center turned dark, and everyone's perception was cut. Only a number of constellation flickered in the sky, radiating in a profound and mysterious manner.

"Domain!! You actually comprehended Domain!! You're a Type 8 powerhouse?! Not good, everybody!! Retreat!!"

The Mech Lord leader had a change in expression as he roared out in panic while extending countless cannons to fire at the Young Star-Lord.

A Type 8 powerhouse that had comprehended domain was a terrifying existence. They could easily kill off a peak-Type 7 powerhouse without batting an eyelid.

"Constellation Extermination!!"

The gaze of the Young Star-Lord turned cold, as the void compressed and all the constellations within her Domain began to slam towards the Mechs like rainfall.

The sentient Mechs began to operate their shields, trying their best to block the constellations that had formed within the Domain.

However, if it were so easy, domains would not be so terrifying. The force of the constellations was almost the same as being struck by an actual asteroid, hence, their defenses burst apart like egg shells, and the Mechs were also crushed beneath.

In just a single hit, the hundreds of Mechs had all turned to ashes, with nothing left.

"Young Star-Lord, awesome!!"

"The Young Star-Lord is invincible!!"

"..."

Seeing how the Young Star-Lord was able to kill the Mechs with a single hit, the experts from Star Luo began to exclaim in joy. All

their sacrifices seemed to be worthwhile.

In order to save the Young Star-Lord, these people from Star Luo had paid the price of over a thousand elites, and there seemed to be at least some validation.

While a Type 8 powerhouse who comprehended a domain might still not be a match for a Type 9 powerhouse, he or she would still be able to crush all other opponents of the same realm or below.

"Go!"

After killing the hundreds of sentient Mechs, the Young Star-Lord continued in the direction of the various forbidden areas in Mech Empire City.

Soon after, the group came to the central portion, right in front of a majestic palace made out of super-alloys, engraved with countless runes, exuding a mysterious, grand, and even sacred feeling.

One Type 8 sentient Mech flew out from the palace, his frame over 10m-tall, his entire body red in color and carved with special runes as well. Each limb was powered with a Type 7 nucleus, while his mainframe was powered by a Type 8 nucleus. There were 6 phoenix-like wings on his back, also giving off a grand and suppressing aura.

This was the Type 8 sentient Mech Lord, Phoenix Wings Lord, a powerful expert in his own right as well.

Phoenix Wings Lord barked out as he shot the Young Star-Lord a look, "Xing Bing Yun, you dare to come here, haven't you had enough of a lesson previously? His Majesty was merciful previously and did not brainwash you into a slave, you should be grateful! Now, you dare come here and repay his kindness with evil? You want to be brainwashed and sold to some other species as a slave, do you? It's still not too late to head back to your prison. Otherwise, your fate will be much worse than before."

"What a joke! Your Mech Kingdom destroyed my home and wiped out my people, treating those survivors as slaves! Do you dare say you guys had grace? What a load of bullshit. Phoenix Wings Lord, today, that old bastard Zu Yuan Ting is not around, you can pay with your dog life!"

There was a cold look in Xing Bing Yun's eyes, and with a thought, the atmospheric energy rolled and gathered around her, and the Constellation Domain enveloped towards the Phoenix Wings Lord.

"Constellation Domain! If this had been executed by your father the Star-Lord, I would have been killed in a second! Unfortunately, you're still far from it! And you've been imprisoned for too long, your strength is lacking! You're not my opponent!!"

The Phoenix Wings Lord had a cold look himself, as he retreated backward, while numerous cannons extended from his body, firing out powerful laser beams at the direction of the domain. He even pulled out a C-Grade Particle Cannon to fire at the oncoming void.

Under the assault of the laser beams, the domain was struck and dented in many places, almost collapsing.

Although Xing Bing Yun was a heaven-defying genius in cultivation, she had been trapped and sealed in ice for too long. Even her absorption of the energy around could not return her to her peak condition.

"What a strong usage of energy. Their strength is above mine, likely Type 8 powerhouses. That direction is also one of the locations pointed by Bai Yi. Since there's a Type 8 powerhouse guarding it, it is very likely that it has treasures within."

Yue Zhong looked at the battle and became excited. He flickered and swiftly proceeded towards their direction while under his Stealth Armor.

He soon arrived at the location where the 2 of them were battling

intensely.

By now, the Constellation Domain was continuing to expand, while the other side continued to blast against the encroaching darkness with firepower. Both sides were at a stalemate, and the resulting force shook outwards, causing a powerful hurricane.

"Very good, while this fellow is being tied down, it's a chance for me to go and check out the treasury of the Mech Kingdom."

Yue Zhong swept the battle one more glance, before soaring towards the palace noiselessly.

Right now, the entrance was sealed tight. Yue Zhong arrived at the location and pulled out the Type 7 mech frame that had Bai Yi controlling it.

The Type 7 mech then released a few data cables that plugged into the palace gates, and with a bright flash, the door opened, revealing the tunnel within.

Inside the entrance, there were 4 Mechs. When they saw the door open, their eyes flashed and released a warning signal.

Immediately, the entire palace blared out with resounding alarms.

Chapter 1068: Type 8 Ape Lord Titus!

A bright scan shot towards their location, attempting to reveal Yue Zhong's silhouette.

"I cannot reveal Bai Yi's existence!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong revealed himself and dashed towards the 4 Mechs like a flash of lightning. In just a breath, he had appeared in front of them and pointed out with his fingers. He pierced through their heads and dug out their smart chips, destroying them immediately.

After killing those 4 Mechs, Yue Zhong continued straight into the inner parts of the palace like a shooting star.

Inside the palace, numerous alloy doors slammed shut, intending to impeded Yue Zhong's advance.

Hong!

Yue Zhong sent a fist each time, and it was like the door had been blasted by TNT, instantly revealing huge holes. He continued through the doors immediately.

Under his relentless fists, the multiple doors swung down only to be destroyed by him, not even impeding him in the slightest.

As he passed a tunnel, he rounded the corner, only to be faced with over a thousand Mech Gobbler Ants, that were capable of tearing a Type 8 Mutant Beast into pieces.

Each of them was able to swallow a single Type 5 Mutant Beast on their own, with over a thousand in a horde, they were able to pick a Type 7 clean.

As Mech Gobbler Ants flew towards Yue Zhong, he reached out with his hands to slap and caused the God-Devil Flames to burst out and envelop them.

The defense of these Mech Gobbler Ants was insane, as it was

tough to even for a Type 7 powerhouse to break through. However, under the golden God-Devil Flames, they quickly melted into useless puddles of liquid metal.

In a flash, the entire horde was melted, leaving only liquid metal on the floor.

Yue Zhong continued to pass through the tunnel, running further into the palace.

He asked Bai Yi, "How is it? Where is the treasury? Are you able to find it out?"

Bai Yi responded swiftly, "Based on my calculations there is a 65% likelihood that the treasury is in the center of the palace. The probability of it being in other places are very low.

The cells of the Mech Kingdom was incredible, as they could configure their shape and size, thus Bai Yi made use of the frame that she was in to transform into a patch of skin that stuck onto Yue Zhong's right arm.

"Then I shall just bulldoze right through it!"

A resolute glint appeared in Yue Zhong's eyes as he charged towards the center of the palace, there was already no room for retreat

This time round, there was a Type 9 powerhouse helping to take on most of the attention and pressure, with the countless species rioting out there, that was how Yue Zhong could infiltrate the place smoothly. It was his only chance to get everything and escape.

"Quick, block him!!"

"C2 area has been destroyed!"

"General Dorzim has been destroyed!!"

"The 7th Squad has been destroyed!!"

"..."

Yue Zhong leaped through many corridors, annihilating the waves of Mechs and Mech Beasts that were deployed to attack him. Not one of them could handle a single hit, and inside the palace, it was like a tiger had been set loose.

After destroying many enemies and passing through many corridors, he finally came to the center of the palace.

There was only one man who stood alone, tall and burly, his face sharp and resolute.

Yue Zhong took a look at that man and his gaze narrowed. He could sense a terrifying pressure and danger, "You're a Type 8 expert?"

Yue Zhong did not think that there would still be a Type 8 powerhouse guarding here.

After all, outside this palace, the Young Star-Lord was currently fighting the Type 8 Phoenix Wings Lord. Based on his estimations, there should not be any more Type 8 powerhouses left to defend.

The burly man had a cold look as he spoke imposingly, "That's right, I am Ape Lord Titus! Human, you dare barge into the Holy Palace, it is a grave sin! You can surrender now, and I'll give you the chance to redeem yourself. As long as you quell the rebellion and gain enough contributions, I can make you a Lord over the humans, commanding millions of slaves, killing them or toying with them as you wish. If not, when I subdue you, I will tear you limb from limb, and feed you to the wild dogs!"

"Haha! Just based on you? If the Mech Emperor himself was to appear, then it would be likely. Your strength is still far from it!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and shot forward, sending his fist punching towards the Type 8 Ape Lord Titus.

With his Second Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's physique was his most powerful weapon. Currently, as long as he did not stand in the center of a nuclear blast, he would not even suffer the

slightest of harm. His combat strength was truly astounding and almost on par with gods.

If it had been Earth before the apocalypse, with Yue Zhong's current strength, it would be possible for him to call himself a god and subdue the entire planet.

The Type 8 Ape Lord Titus snorted coldly and had a look of ridicule. He did not dodge or evade, instead, the muscles on his right hand trembled and shot out suddenly, tearing a huge rip in space as it punched towards Yue Zhong. He wanted to use his own strength to destroy Yue Zhong's self-confidence, "A mere Type 7 Divine Warrior and you want to challenge me, a Type 8? Truly ignorant!!"

Both fists met and with a loud explosion, the resulting shockwave blasted outwards in all directions, before the right fist of Ape Lord Titus disintegrated and scattered in many pieces.

The Type 8 Mech stared in shock, as he shouted out frantically, "How is this possible?! My body was made out of C-Grade super-alloys!! Even a C-Grade cannon would take 3 shots to injure me!! You're just a mere human! How could you be stronger than me?! Impossible!! Humans' physiques are known to be the weakest!! You're not human at all!! Who are you exactly?!"

In the universe, humans were one of the weaker race. As a sentient Mech made out of superior materials, the Type 8 Ape Lord Titus had a physique that far surpassed most humans. He had trumped countless other experts of the same realm using his body alone. Yet now, he was bested by a single hit from Yue Zhong and his flesh body, this was why he was shocked to the core.

In truth, Yue Zhong was already on the path of evolution that had already surpassed humans, with his God-Devil Body. His talent and potential were insane, already crossing the limit of humans.

"I'm human! You can die for me!!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and with a step of his foot, over a hundred clones appeared, filling up the palace, as they stretched out to slash Ape Lord Titus's head.

"Human kid, you're too arrogant! Don't look down on Type 8 powerhouses, I will show you the difference in strength!!"

The Type 8 Mech roared out in rage, as his mechanical cells trembled and moved to regenerate his broken right hand. At the same time, he transformed into a 5m-large mechanical ape that was covered in thick scales, his 5 fingers as sharp as knives. Every single part of his body had some form of a sharp blade.

This was the true combat form of Titus, and after transforming, he would be able to exert all of his strength. He pounced towards Yue Zhong, his eyes flashing with a cold look, and at the moment they were near, he fired out numerous spikes from his body, intending to slice through Yue Zhong.

At that instant, the mechanical blades shredded through Yue Zhong's shadow clones, eliminating them.

When the Ape Lord Titus had transformed, Yue Zhong was already filled with a sense of crisis. Against those sharp alloy blades, he had quickly summoned his blood radiance to block in front of him.

Kacha!!

The sharp blade slammed into the blood radiance, and with a loud crack, a hole was torn, as the blades pierced through.

After that, Yue Zhong retreated explosively, barely evading that dangerous strike. He could sense that the sharp blades were not simple, and they were not something his Second Order God-Devil Body might be able to defend against.

Since the Type 8 Ape Lord Titus had managed to force Yue Zhong back, his body continued to flicker forward as he charged towards Yue Zhong without losing his momentum.

In that instant, he appeared right before Yue Zhong once more, his fist moving too fast for the naked eye to see, as it punched towards Yue Zhong.

Due to the momentum and his insane speed, Yue Zhong had no way of evading, as he raised his right shoulder to block it forcefully.

Hong!

When the fist slammed into Yue Zhong's right arm, a powerful force traveled up his shoulder, sending Yue Zhong flying towards a wall as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

His internal organs felt displaced as his blood flow was disrupted. He frowned and thought to himself, "Strong! This is a Type 8 powerhouse! After he transformed, he's even stronger than me."

Near the end of evolution, it was increasingly harder for anyone to progress beyond a realm. The difference in strength between two powerhouses of the different realm would be huge as well. Even with Yue Zhong's heaven-defying God-Devil Physique, against a Type 8 expert, it was truly exhausting.

Chapter 1069: Suppressing Titus!

The Type 8 Ape Lord Titus laughed savagely, without giving Yue Zhong any chance to breathe, and charged towards him in another flash, sending a fist towards his head, "Haha! Die!!"

At the moment when the fist was about to strike Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and suddenly, flames erupted all around him. The area surrounding him, as well as Titus, started to blaze
Flame Domain, activate!

"Domain!! You actually trained a Domain?! How is this possible?! You're just a mere Type 7 human expert! How could you cultivate a domain?!" Titus saw the flames all around him and was filled with endless shock. He tried to retreat while activating the C-Grade Energy Shield, as a translucent barrier appeared around him.

Inside the palace, the blazing flames enveloped everything in its region, directly consuming Titus.

Yue Zhong also disappeared in a flash, melding into the flames.

The Flame Domain was extremely Yang in nature, able to incinerate anything. Even a mountain would be reduced to nothing if wrapped in this domain.

Within the Flame Domain, Titus's C-Grade Energy Shield continued to distort, on the verge of collapsing any moment.

His expression was extremely unsightly to behold. He gritted his teeth and with a stomp of his foot, he tried to shoot out. Inside this small region, against a powerhouse with the Flame Domain, it was death to remain here. As for the treasury, he could not care anymore about it. After all, his own life was more precious.

"You want to escape? It's impossible!! Get your ass back here!!" Within the flames, Yue Zhong appeared suddenly like a specter, sending a fist explosively towards Titus.

Dang!

Following the loud collision, Ape Lord Titus was sent sprawling back into the Flame Domain, and the C-Grade Energy Shield teetered on the edge of collapsing in the midst of the distortion.

The eyes of Titus flashed fiercely, as he continued to run, hoping to break through Yue Zhong's defense. However, he was stopped again and again, with no way of leaving the domain region.

After a few times, he gritted his teeth, and extended a C-Grade Particle Cannon from his chest.

The C-Grade cannon was able to injure, even kill, a Type 8 powerhouse if utilized properly. However, the stronger the weapon, the longer the cooldown. This time, Ape Lord Titus was being forced to a corner, and had no choice but to use this.

The moment it appeared, a large amount of energy began to gather at its barrel, and in a flash, a powerful beam shot out at the Flame Domain.

The might of the C-Grade Particle Cannon was incredibly powerful, capable of destroying an entire city. The beam blasted through Yue Zhong's Flame Domain, without diminishing, and punctured through the palace, revealing a huge hole. Yue Zhong's Flame Domain also fell apart after that attack.

Yue Zhong might have comprehended domain, but he was not yet a Type 8 powerhouse, thus, his Domain could not withstand a strike from the C-Grade particle cannon.

At the instant the Domain collapsed, Yue Zhong had an impassive expression, as he channelled his secret technique, the Yin-Yang Palm, and the powerful palm came descending from the skies, as though Buddha himself had just sent a palm down at Titus.

Against that powerful Yin-Yang Palm, Titus, who had already consumed 50% of his power, raised both hands, and used all his strength to hold on.

Kacha!

The C-Grade Energy Shield that had withstood the countless attacks burst apart like an egg shell, and the Yin-Yang Palm continued downwards, flattening Titus as though he was a piece of dough made into bread.

Yue Zhong shot forward and grabbed out, piercing through the smart chip that was still intact, and pulled it out with all his strength.

The moment Titus's chip was pulled out by Yue Zhong, his body quickly extended out, reforming into the form of that huge ape, as he slammed a fist towards Yue Zhong.

The smart chip in Yue Zhong's hands continued to struggle as though it was alive, trying to escape from his grasp.

Yue Zhong then retreated, while he allowed Bai Yi on his right hand to reach out with some cables and plugged them into Titus's smart chip.

A huge amount of data then flowed into Titus's chip, as the huge ape shuddered to a stop.

Bai Yi suddenly spoke out, "Master, the sentience of a Type 8 Mech is truly powerful, I will need at least a day to complete override him. I'm sorry."

Yue Zhong replied, "No problem, so be it. I'll give you the time."

The higher the level of the sentience, the harder it was to infiltrate and override. If it were the Type 9 Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting himself, even Bai Yi had no means to wash him. In fact, if she were to use her cables to link up, there was a possibility of being overridden herself.

After suppressing Titus, Yue Zhong waved his hands and kept the Ape Lord frame into his Storage Ring, before looking at the palace once more.

Currently, due to Yue Zhong's Flame Domain, a huge portion of the palace had already melted, however, right on top of an altar,

there was a white sphere that was glowing brightly, allowing the altar to remain intact.

Yue Zhong walked over to the altar, taking a look at that white sphere with curiosity, "What is this?"

When his gaze landed on the sphere, he noticed that within it, there was a space, and in it, there were countless resources, natural treasures, and precious armors.

"This is a spatial treasure!! It's even bigger than my Storage Ring!" Yue Zhong celebrated, and reached out for it.

When he grabbed it and pulled quickly, intending to take it away, he was met with an unbelievable resistance, no matter how much strength he exerted.

He swept that huge treasure trove a look, and frowned, "Damn it! This treasury is not easy to take."

At this moment, there was a notification in his mind, "Your Storage Ring has discovered a Space Crystal. The system can help you merge them, with a fee of a million Survivor Coins? Do you want to proceed?"

Yue Zhong was overjoyed as he made his choice, "Merge them!"

As the leader of China, Yue Zhong had collected so much Survivor Coins. While a million of them was impossible to fork out for others, to him, it was as simple as flipping his hands.

In truth, after becoming the leader of China, Yue Zhong had come to own countless pieces of system equipment. However, the highest that he had come across was only in the Bronze-t-er, and they were not of much use to the him now. In any case, he had amassed quite the sum of Survivor Coins, because they were incredibly useful.

A bright, profound rune shot out from the Storage Ring, and landed on the white sphere. The sphere swiftly flew out and turned smaller, into a bean, as it got absorbed into the ring.

"White-silver Grade Treasure Ring - Universe Ring. This is a Storage Ring that had evolved upon absorbing a Spatial Crystal, it can hold a universe within."

The moment the white sphere combined with the Storage Ring, a powerful message appeared within Yue Zhong's consciousness.

With a thought, he sent his will into the ring, and realized that his Storage Ring had become incomparably vast, as though capable of hosting an entire universe within it.

At the same time, inside, there were many Mech Beasts, Mech Armors, and all sorts of treasures and Mutant Beast nuclei.

Yue Zhong looked at the treasury and was elated, "Rich!! I've become rich!! With this treasury, against this damned Mech Empire, I finally have some capital against them!! There's hope for us humans!"

"I need to leave now, and quickly transform these resources into strength! Otherwise, they're just that, items!" Yue Zhong made a decision, and quickly escaped for the outside.

In a few breaths, he had already charged out of the palace, and was greeted with the still ongoing battle between the Young Star Lord and the Phoenix Wings Lord.

Although the Young Star Lord was strong and talented, with a good grasp of the Constellation Domain, she had been sealed for far too long, and her strength had suffered. Against the attack of the Phoenix Wings Lord, she was gradually at a losing end.

At the same time, there were already 35 Type 7 Mechs gathered behind the Phoenix Wings Lord, forming a large array, and revealed a might that was not weaker than a Type 8 powerhouse.

The Young Star Lord was seemingly holding out against 2 Type 8 powerhouses. If it was not for her Constellation Domain being freakishly strong, she would have been suppressed or defeated a long time ago.

"This brother, since you have gained something good, why not join forces with me and wipe out these metal cans?"

At the moment when Yue Zhong got out of the Palace, the Young Star Lord swept Yue Zhong a look, as a powerful spiritual force was transmitted into his consciousness.

Chapter 1070: Joining hands with Xing Bing Yun!

Yue Zhong's heart trembled with shock, "This woman is dangerous, to think she actually discovered my presence. What kind of treasure or skill does she possess?"

After all, he was currently in his Stealth Armor, and all signs of his presence hidden. As long as he does not act, it would be impossible to detect him. Yet, this Young Star-Lord actually called out to him accurately.

Yue Zhong did not hesitate as he agreed, and transmitted back, "Alright! We'll work together to take out these machines!"

The might of the Mech Kingdom was too large and vast. Even if Yue Zhong obtained a treasury, their strength was still on different levels. If there was anything he could do to chip away at the strength, he would gladly do so.

Relying on the Stealth Armor, he made his way noiselessly towards the array formed by the 35 Type 7 Mechs, and the countless Type 6 and Type 5 Mechs.

In that instant, he suddenly burst forth with a powerful killing intent, grabbing for the head of one Type 7 sentient Mech.

The Mech had his attention on the Young Star-Lord and was not prepared at all. His head was immediately crushed by Yue Zhong, along with the smart chip.

After killing that Mech in a single hit, he immediately activated his Flame Domain, which was able to melt even a Type 8 powerhouse, as the flames enveloped all the Mechs.

At that moment, everything in a 3km radius was shrouded in flames, and many of the lower-leveled ones melted into puddles of liquid metal.

If the 34 Type 7 Mechs were to face Yue Zhong in a frontal clash, working together, they could maybe deal with him. However, since they were caught off-guard and were instantly wrapped in the Flame Domain, in just a second, they melted.

The might of the Flame Domain was too domineering, if Yue Zhong had used any other methods, he would have to expend more energy in order to get rid of them. However, the Flame Domain took care of them in a second.

When the Type 8 Phoenix Wings Lord saw Yue Zhong taking out all 35 of his Type 7 subordinates, his expression turned, as he roared out in rage, "What?! Flame Domain?! There's actually a human Type 8 powerhouse here!! Xing Bing Yun, you're truly shameless and despicable!! Just you wait, when His Majesty returns, all of you will die here!!"

After that, he flapped his wings and turned into a beam of light as he disappeared within a mechanical track.

Yue Zhong swept the direction a look, with a gaze of regret. If the Type 8 Phoenix Winged Lord did not flee, he might have been able to suppress or even kill him with the help of the Young Star-Lord.

The strength of a Type 8 powerhouse was shocking, Yue Zhong had no confidence in killing them in a blow, that was why he chose to ambush the Type 7 Mechs.

In the skies, the Constellation Domain retracted, and the graceful, immortal-like Bing Xing Yun came over towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong gazed at her, and retracted his Flame Domain, appreciating the beauty walking towards him.

Bing Xing Yun was heaven-defying cultivation genius, her aura extraordinary, with a hint of holiness. It was the first time Yue Zhong had seen someone like her.

Luo Qing Qing was similar in almost all the aspects, but she just

paled in comparison by that little bit.

As a Type 8 powerhouse, Bing Xing Yun had tyrannical strength and exuded a self-confidence that added more to her charm.

When she reached in front of him, she reached out with her fair hands, and smiled, "I'm Bing Xing Yun. This brother, you had taken the chance when I was battling the Phoenix Winged Lord to sneak into the palace, obtaining some of the treasures within. Don't you think that you should give me some?"

His thoughts flashed, and he suggested, "I'm Yue Zhong. Miss Xing Bing Yun, there's naturally your share, but before that, we should leave this place."

With her aid, Yue Zhong was more confident about leaving the Mech Empire City.

She frowned slightly, and replied with her clear, nightingale-like voice, "The two of us can work together and wipe out even more Type 8 powerhouses. Combined with the 9-Headed Dragonhawk, it is not impossible to take down this Mech Empire City. Why not work with us to destroy it?"

The Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting was at the frontlines, fighting against the Ghost Clan. There were only Type 8 powerhouses holding the fort right now.

If it was not for the fact that the entire City was a treasure in itself, it would have long been torn apart by the 9-Headed Dragonhawk. Currently, it was truly the best time to wreak havoc.

Yue Zhong frowned, "No! That 9-Headed Dragonhawk is unstable emotionally, we don't even know what he truly thinks. Once the city is destroyed, our fates will be in his hands. It's not safe. I need to take the chance to leave as soon as possible. Miss Xing Bing Yun, if you want to stay, I won't stop you, we can bid our goodbyes here."

Yue Zhong hated leaving his fate in other people's hands. He had

never even communicated with the 9-Headed Dragonhawk, nor was there any feelings. If the city was destroyed, there would be no one left to hold the 9-Headed Dragonhawk in check. Who knew what he would do then.

"Wait a minute." Xing Bing Yun's brows arched, as she assessed Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, you must not be from this planet Galastar right? Most humans here have been suppressed heavily, never exceeding the Type 6 realm. Furthermore, if there had been such an expert like you hiding in the shadows, they would have long since been suppressed or eliminated. Your appearance coincides with the appearance of the Gate of Hell, so you must be from the other side. The fact that you comprehended a Domain in the Type 7 realm, you must be an Oracle with the God and Devil Imprint, am I right?"

As she mentioned the word 'Oracle', her brows lifted and there was a glint in her eyes.

Yue Zhong immediately became guarded, his energy coursing through his body, ready for battle. He then chuckled indifferently, "That's right, I'm an Oracle."

The moment the God and Devil Imprint was mentioned, the atmosphere turned strange, and there was a guarded feeling from both parties.

Oracles could use the God and Devil Imprint to absorb life force and evolve faster. However, they were just like other experts, having to breakthrough, except they were usually geniuses.

If a peak-Type 8 Mutant Beast were to devour Yue Zhong successfully and make use of the God and Devil Imprint, it could definitely shed its past self, and evolve to the Type 9 stage, living over tens of thousands of years.

Few could resist the temptation of such a heaven-defying resource.

Xing Bing Yun laughed lightly, "Yue Zhong, you don't have to be worried. I, Xing Bing Yun, am not the type to kill my own kind, just to become stronger. Since you're an Oracle, I have a request, that is, I hope that you can bring us from the Star Luo to your world."

Yue Zhong arched his eyebrows, "Isn't the rule of the Gates of Hell that Type 7 powerhouses cannot cross? As a Type 8 expert, it is impossible to cross."

Xing Bing Yun continued to put on a bright, clear smile, "That's not true. Every Oracle has the ability to bring powerhouses away from worlds, to pass through the Gates of Hell. This is one of the largest advantages of an Oracle. Without this, as well as ample protection, our human race would have already been wiped out long ago, without a shred of hope. Although that mighty God had caused calamity to befall upon us, he had also left a shred of hope, which is the Oracle of every generation."

Yue Zhong's heart shook, and felt a sense of fear on hindsight, "So this was the case. Thankfully, I had conquered China and transcended into the 2nd World, becoming an Oracle. Otherwise, how would our fates be? In the end, the whole of Earth would have been consumed by so many strange species. The road of evolution is truly tough, one small mistake and everything would fall apart. If it was not for risk, there would be no reward. In the end, one can't really escape from death."

Had Yue Zhong not conquered China in time, and entered the 2nd World to obtain the God and Devil Imprint, he would have just been an ordinary Type 5 powerhouse at most, not his current stage, one who had comprehended Domain and could walk around Earth unbridled.

As he organized his thoughts, he quickly made the decision, "Since that's the case, let us go now."

Xing Bing Yun was a true Type 8 powerhouse, with her holding

the fort, China would have another trump card. If she had any bad intentions, then Yue Zhong would utilize all his trump cards, even if it resulted in heavy losses on both sides.

Having made that decision, Xing Bing Yun brought all the experts of Star Luo to follow him.

Yue Zhong quickly returned to his residence, collecting Yue Ying and the rest, before making his way out.

All of a sudden, one bull-headed Beastman with the wings of an eagle on his back led a bunch of his people to block Yue Zhong and the rest, their faces unfriendly as he barked out, "Halt, where do you guys think you're going? How come you aren't attacking the Mechs?"

Chapter 1071: Fleeing Mech Empire City!

Yue Zhong frowned, and stepped forward to bark, "Get lost, if you want to attack the city, go yourself, don't get in my way!"

Currently, the entire Mech Empire City was engaged against the 9-Headed Dragonhawk, and it was the best opportunity to flee. Yue Zhong did not want to waste a single moment here.

After all, the city was a powerful treasure that could fight against a Type 9 powerhouse. If it was not for the 9-Headed Dragonhawk grasping the attention of the city, Yue Zhong and the rest would have long since been put down.

Even if all the slaves within the city were to rise up in riot, they would not be able to withstand the suppression of the city. This was how terrifying it was.

"Deserters will die!"

The Beastman with the bull head and eagle wings had a dangerous look, as he reached out with his hands, appearing in front of Yue Zhong, grabbing towards his head viciously. He wanted to make an example out of him.

The Beastman was a speed-and-strength type, within the Type 7 powerhouses, they were well-known for their close combat as well. In a small area, they could suddenly explode forth and take out experts of the same realm.

This bull-head Beastman was also an experienced fighter. His sudden attack was terrifying, and even the Saint Lord of the Saint Lands would have a 50% chance of succumbing to such a strike.

The faces of Yue Ying and the rest fell, as they shouted out, "Be careful, Master!!"

Miss Green and the rest also had ugly expressions.

Only Xing Bing Yun maintained her smile, looking towards Yue

Zhong in anticipation.

"Truly looking to die! I'm in need of a few Type 7 slaves anyway! You can fill those positions!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he used his Dragon Catching Claws and aimed for the Beastman's head. A powerful dragon-shaped force slammed into the Beastman, suppressing him on the ground.

The Beastman started to struggle frantically, his expression contorted as he roared, "How is this possible?! You're just a mere human!! How could you be so strong?!"

The physiques of humans were widely known to be weak, even at their Type 7 realm. However, this Type 7 Beastman was actually suppressed by Yue Zhong. He could not believe it, not even when he had seen it with his own eyes.

Other than Xing Bing Yun, everyone else present were shocked, not daring to believe their eyes.

The gazes of Yue Ying and the rest were filled with idolization, as their love and respect for Yue Zhong increased another notch, "Master is truly formidable! He's invincible."

"Haha! What's impossible about it? My strength is above yours, you guys can become my slaves." Yue Zhong had a fierce glint in his eyes, as he stepped on the Type 7 Beastman mercilessly, knocking him out with an outburst of his strength.

At the same time, he sent out a Type 7 Puppet Rune through his legs, into the head of the Type 7 Beastman.

"Let go of my family head!"

Seeing Yue Zhong suppress the Type 7 Beastman, the hundreds of bull-heads were in shock, yet some of them pounced towards Yue Zhong in madness.

"Get the hell down!!"

Yue Zhong swept them a look, his gaze turning frosty. His Gravity Manipulation burst out, and a terrifying gravitational force weighed down upon them.

At that instant, the hundreds of them felt like a mountain was pressing on their back, causing their bones to creak loudly, as they were forced to the ground, immobilized. Only a dozen Type 6 was able to maintain standing, but their speed was reduced drastically.

With a wave of his hands, a bright blood radiance swooped out, enveloping the hundreds of bull-head Beastmen.

In that instant, they were all swallowed up and turned to dried corpses.

Seeing how they all became corpses in a second, Miss Green and the rest of the Star Luo experts turned slightly pale, "Strong!"

With his methods, if it was not for Xing Bing Yun being there, he could easily swipe up the rest of the Star Luo people as well.

After a moment, the bull-head Beastman that was subdued by Yue Zhong got up, responding with respect, "Arariwang greets Master!"

Witnessing these, the people present were shocked once again, "What the hell? Just like that? That was a Type 7 expert, what the hell did he do? That's quite sick, right?"

Even Xing Bing Yun had a serious look on her face. Such a method of subduing a slave was extremely strange and disturbing. While Xing Bing Yun could defeat a Type 7 powerhouse easily, she had no means of getting someone like that to willingly submit.

Her brows arched as she chuckled, "Truly the Envoy. If my guess is right, that should be the strength of a Treasure of Hope, right?"

Yue Zhong did not bat an eyelid, as he replied, "That's right, it is the power of a Treasure of Hope.

Although Yue Zhong was cooperating with Xing Bing Yun, there

was a slight competition for leadership. Yue Zhong would not hand over the reins to such a mysterious and powerful woman. He had to flex his muscles from time to time, displaying what he was capable of, just to keep them at bay. Otherwise, if something bad were to happen, it would be too late to try and make up for it.

Right now on Earth, the human race was about to face countless superior species. Yue Zhong could only gather all the strength and cards he had, in order to have a sliver of hope. Unless he was forced to, he did not want to engage other human factions as much as possible.

Xing Bing Yun chuckled and did not say anything after that.

"Let's go!"

Yue Zhong then led the rest towards the edge of the city quickly.

Within the city, many species and races were present, and when they saw how easily Yue Zhong had subdued Arariwang, they were taken aback. Most of them evaded him, not willing to antagonize him.

Soon, they came to the border.

At this time, the Mech Empire City was covered in a layer of a shield, not allowing anyone in or out.

Xing Bing Yun walked up to the shield and pressed her hand to it lightly, before frowning. "Yue Zhong, this shield is too strong, it should be a D-Grade one. It is currently utilizing the power of the city, and even a Type 9 powerhouse would not be able to tear through it. I have no way of getting past."

A D-Grade Energy Shield could withstand the hits of a Type 9 powerhouse, even those attacks that had spatial laws. No matter how strong Xing Bing Yun was, she was just a Type 8 expert and had no way of tearing this shield apart to flee the city.

Miss Green suggested, "Why don't we go help the 9-Headed Dragonhawk? If we destroy those key structures and take down the

city in turn, at that time, we will naturally be able to flee.

The Star Luo group all nodded in agreement, evidently in favor of attacking the city.

Yue Zhong also stepped up the shield and pressed it lightly, "No need, this shield has flaws. I can find an exit."

The experts of the Star Luo group revealed doubtful expressions but based on his previous display of power, no one dared to say it to his face.

Facing their doubtful glances, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, as he activated his Flame Domain, and the blazing flames slammed into the shield, as they began to incinerate the D-Grade energy shield.

However, the flames that could burn even a Type 7 powerhouse, was not able to do anything to the shield.

Yue Zhong then stepped into the region, and his hands began to blaze with the gold God-Devil Flames, as he pressed them onto the shield.

The moment the God-Devil Flames came in contact with the D-Grade shield, it began to sizzle and crack, and a hole appeared, in the shield that not even a Type 9 powerhouse could do anything against.

The God-Devil Flames were one of Yue Zhong's strongest cards, there was nothing they could not burn. With the support of the Flame Domain, their might was even more terrifying. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would slowly be burnt and incinerated if he or she was in contact with those flames.

Of course, a Type 9 powerhouse would have plenty of moves, Yue Zhong would be unable to get close, not to mention using the God-Devil Flames to burn the enemy.

After a hole that could fit 2 people appeared in the shield, Yue Zhong retracted his Flame Domain, barking out, "Move!!"

The people present were all decisive characters, without any hesitation, they began to pour out the hole and escaped outside.

After 20 of them escaped, the hole began to close up, forcing Yue Zhong to utilize the same method once more.

The process repeated for a number of times, everyone present managed to escape from the Mech Empire Capital.

"Ah? There're people who could escape from the city? You fellows, since you could escape, you must have the strength!! Why didn't you stay inside and help me destroy the city?! Damn you!!"

Just as everyone managed to escape from the city, the enraged roar of the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk came from above.

With his comprehension of space, he could sense anything within a 3km radius. If Yue Zhong had been alone, it would not be so bad. Based on his methods, he could forcefully hide. However, there were over a hundred Star Luo experts with him, they were naturally unable to escape the notice of the Type 9 Mutant Beast.

Chapter 1072: The Strike of the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk!

When he heard that voice, Yue Zhong's face fell as he barked out, "Flee!!"

At the instant, a huge dragon claw of over a thousand kilometers came crashing down in a destructive manner, aiming for the entire group.

Feeling the overwhelming pressure, Miss Green and the rest, even Yue Ying and her 2 sisters began to tremble, their faces full of fear, without any strength to move, as they stood there to receive the punishment of the dragon claw.

The claw of the 9-Headed Dragonhawk was carrying its innate dragon might, even a Type 6 powerhouse could not resist the fear. Their strength would be reduced to 10%, and could only watch as death loomed. This was the terror of a Type 9 powerhouse, and his ability to kill a Type 7 expert from over a thousand li away.

At the critical moment, Xing Bing Yun's eyes flashed as she stepped forward to channel her Constellation Domain, as the region wrapped around the dragon claw.

"Domain? This fellow has decent talent. Too bad, you're obviously injured, and your domain is lacking! Break for me!!"

The icy words of the 9-Headed Dragonhawk traveled through space, and in a flash, the huge dragon claw glowed brightly, as a archaic and tyrannical energy blasted outward.

The various constellations with the domain broke down and the whole domain itself shook violently before shattering.

Seeing her own domain shattering, Xing Bing Yun's fair face flushed red as she spat out a mouth of blood. There was a look of unwillingness, "Damn it! If it was not for me being sealed, and my energy sapped from the fight earlier, this claw would not be able to

injure me."

"Xing Bing Yun, take them away, I'll block him!!"

Yue Zhong stepped forward as he shouted, soaring into the sky and bore the brunt of the pressure.

"This man has some backbone!"

Xing Bing Yun glanced at Yue Zhong standing in front of everybody, as a look of appreciation flashed past her eyes. She immediately turned around and swept up everyone in her constellation as she fled towards the distance.

Yue Zhong faced the dragon claw and could sense the terrifying might and vast strength.

"Kneel! Kneel! Kneel!! Submit to me!! Submit!!"

The dragon claw carried the might of the Type 9 Mutant Beast, exuding an overbearing will that enveloped the area. Under that suppression, Yue Zhong felt a deep fear within him, and an intense desire to kneel and express his subservience, awaiting judgment.

"Get lost!!"

At that moment, an intense rage and shame welled up in him as he let out a mighty roar, breaking through the shackles in his heart. He charged into the skies, his hands exhibiting the seals of the Yin-Yang Palm, as he punched towards the dragon claw.

The huge dragon claw clashed with Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm, and the resulting shockwave blasted outwards.

Yue Zhong's Level 5 Yin-Yang Palm was instantly shattered by the dragon claw, however, due to his own power as well, the dragon claw dimmed a lot.

Tearing through Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm, the huge dragon claw tore through space and slammed into Yue Zhong's body.

As a result, he was sent flying like an ant, shooting backward over a hundred km, his bones broken and his internal organs

suffering huge damage. He was like a broken lump of meat as he laid on the floor without any signs of life.

In the skies, the condescending tone of the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk sounded. "Human, your strength was not too bad, you could even be called a hero among the Type 7 realm. However, challenging my might only results in death."

Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm was incredible, its might on par with Type 8 powerhouses. However, in front of the Type 9 Mutant Beast, it was insufficient. Furthermore, the opponent had transcended a distance of 3km to attack, had it been a frontal clash, that strike could have slapped Yue Zhong into meat paste.

After the 9-Headed Dragonhawk felt that he slapped Yue Zhong to death, he no longer paid any attention over here. His aim was to destroy the Mech Empire City, as well as its structure, breaking this structure of Zu Yuan Ting that had been his hard work. A Type 7 powerhouse was a mere ant in his eyes, a single slap was more than enough to deal with him. It was just like humans would not bother with a mere fly before handling any major matters.

As for the lump of bloody meat, a finger suddenly twitched, as a weak will sound out, "Bai Yi, take me out of here."

"Yes, Master."

From the lump of flesh, a swarm of mechanical cells flew out, forming into a white lizard. The lizard opened its huge mouth, and took in the lump of flesh, before swiftly crawling its way out.

The white lizard was formed from mechanical cells, lacking biological life signs, and the distance was too far for the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk to care.

That lump of flesh was precisely Yue Zhong, having suffered such a hit, his body had almost collapsed. Only his brain remained intact. He had never suffered such a grievous injury before, and he was half a step from death. There was only his willpower keeping

him going.

"It hurts! It hurts! It fucking hurts!! My body hurts!! It's killing me!!! I can't die!! No!!! I must definitely not faint!!"

Yue Zhong was tortured by that intense pain, and he was on the verge of passing out. However, he gritted his teeth and bore the brunt of it.

Currently, his Second Order God-Devil Body was displaying its miraculous ability, regenerating all the broken parts of his body, including the bones, veins, and channels.

His current state was horrible, if it were any other normal person, it would be death 10 times over. He could stay barely alive due to the God-Devil Body, and his incredible will. He could sense that if he fainted, it would truly mean his death.

"Die! Die! Just die!! If you die, you'll be forever at peace!! No more torment!! Just die!!"

The strong sense of death continued to loom over him, as he tried to regenerate his body. Each time it formed, it would break apart in sharp stabs of pain.

The attack of the Type 9 powerhouse had laws and might imbued within it, therefore, while Yue Zhong's physique was truly astounding, due to the difference in strength, it constantly corroded his healing body, preventing him from resurrecting.

Yue Zhong was resolute, however, and he continued to scream out in his mind, "I will not die!! In the future, I'll be sure to come back and tear you limb from limb and roast you alive!!"

Under that torture that could drive a person crazy, Yue Zhong's Second Order God-Devil Body continued to repair his body, finally forming a human shape.

In the vast desert, a Mech was riding a Mech lizard, moving forward.

The Mech was precisely Yue Zhong, piloting within, while the Mech Lizard was Bai Yi's current form.

As they moved, Bai Yi suddenly asked, "Master, are we going to meet up with Miss Xing Bing Yun?"

Yue Zhong had handed Yue Ying and the rest a locator, with it, he could easily find the position of Xing Bing Yun and the rest.

Yue Zhong thought and shook his head, "No, it is too dangerous to meet with her right now."

With his God and Devil Imprint, to an expert who knew about the uses of it, Yue Zhong was basically a tonic. Although Xing Bing Yun seemed to be upright and just, he was not willing to risk his life.

Before he met her, he must have the ability to preserve his life, otherwise, he would not take the chance.

Currently, Yue Zhong might have recovered his exterior, but his internal organs were still a mess. Any Type 7 powerhouse could kill him easily. At this stage, how could he dare to appear in front of Xing Bing Yun?

Suddenly, the desert trembled, and with a swish, over a hundred human militants jumped out, raising their ordinary particle cannons at Yue Zhong.

The leader, a middle-aged man wearing a helmet and wielding an A-Grade Particle Cannon and equipped with full military gear barked out, "Don't move! Do not resist, otherwise, we will act and wipe you out, destroying your smart chip!"

The rest of them also stared venomously at Yue Zhong, their muscles taut, prepared for a fight.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "Bai Yi, why was there no warning?"

Bai Yi replied, "Master, they're using equipment that masked

mechanical and electrical signals. I had no way of scanning for their presence. Furthermore, there are no satellites that I could use around here."

"So that's the case! Seems like the human resistance who could survive here in Galastar have some abilities."

Yue Zhong swept them a look and pressed a button. His outer Mech then opened up to reveal himself, as he spoke in a low voice, "I'm human, not some Mech."

Chapter 882: Human Underground City!

Lisa's Note: This chapter is from QI. But the story continues from the previous chapter from another translation group. So you're not really missing anything out.

When they saw Yue Zhong emerging from the Mech, the leader heaved a sigh of relief. At the same time, he frowned and shot Yue Zhong a suspicious look, "Human?"

Each time the human resistance took on the Mechs, it would be a grueling battle. If the Mech they were hunting turned out to be too strong, then their losses would be huge as well.

The human expert continued to ask, "Who are you? Why would you appear here?"

Yue Zhong had already prepared for such a contingency, as he replied smoothly, "I'm from one of the Star Luo Universe's planets, Planet Lei Huang. My name is Wang Sheng, and this time, in order to save my Young Star Lord, our forces had taken the chance when the 9-Headed Dragonhawk attacked the city to infiltrate. In the end, I managed to steal a Mech Lizard to escape."

The human leader took out a white box and pointed it at Yue Zhong, as it shone a green light, before his expression relaxed, "You're truly a human, since that's the case, come with us."

Yue Zhong replied, "Sure!"

Right now, since he was still injured, he needed to find a place to recover properly. He also needed to cultivate to erase the lingering will of the 9-Headed Dragonhawk.

The humans had been resisting against the Mechs for a long time, and while their combat ability might not count for much, their evasive and hiding abilities were truly astounding. Even the satellites that covered the entire planet was not able to do anything about them.

If the human base was found so easily, they would have been wiped out long ago.

Inside Galastar, the Mech Kingdom and its sentient Mechs were the rulers. Only the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk was able to resist the entire kingdom.

Yue Zhong followed the group through the desert, and when they came to an ordinary-looking sand dune, the leader retrieved a jade plate. The item immediately released a beam of light, as it tore open the ground and revealed a deep tunnel that seemed to go on forever.

The soldiers quickly got in.

After Yue Zhong entered, he immediately assessed his surroundings, discovering that there were many mechanical spheres, other than that, nothing was out of the ordinary.

At the same time, there were lights illuminating the tunnel, revealing the contents.

There were many tunnels branching off, and the leader seemed to know it like the back of his hand, choosing specific ones as they maneuvered through the maze, heading deeper.

After passing through the tunnels, having traveled almost 40km, they finally went through a mountain cave, and a huge underground city greeted Yue Zhong.

The city was not particularly lavish, instead, it was ordinary, with countless ordinary houses. The inhabitants were all carrying some form of firearms. Inside this city, regardless of the gender or age, everyone wielded a weapon, assessing their surroundings guardedly.

Yue Zhong even saw a young girl of about 10 carrying a particle cannon about the same size as her, and it was a disorienting sight.

The leader then led Yue Zhong towards a dirty water pipe, into a particular slum, before saying, "I'm called Zhao Hao, welcome to

our base, Wang Sheng. Before you go through our test, you can only stay here. After we have passed you and gained our trust, you will gain better treatment."

Yue Zhong swept a look at the sallow humans with emaciated features, frowning slightly. He considered a while, before nodding, "Fine!"

"In here, your Mech Lizard will be confiscated. As long as you head out to battle, we will return the Mech Lizard to you. This is the rule." Zhao Hao then took out a smart chip, placing it on the head of the Mech Lizard and pressed a button. With a button, it imprinted something on it, before he handed Yue Zhong, "This is your proof of ownership, as well as your I.D. When we go out to battle, you can retrieve your Mech Lizard to battle."

Yue Zhong took it silently and did not say much. He just wanted to recover his strength quietly. Once he was back to full health, this little base would not be able to hold him down.

The Mech Lizard was just a Type 5 Mech Beast, even if it was confiscated by this human base, he did not really care.

Zhao Hao saw how Yue Zhong was so compliant, and was extremely satisfied, and reminded him, "Wang Sheng, if you want to be a part of us and gain more benefits, you need to obtain more merit. Hunting Mutant Beasts, entering the Mech cities, stealing, bringing back resources, killing Mechs, these can all be exchanged for points. Points are our currency, and with that, you can purchase anything you want here."

Yue Zhong seemed to have thought of something, as he pointed at his Mech Lizard, "Zhao Hao, this is a Type 5 Mech Beast, are you interested to buy it?"

There was a look of joy in Zhao Hao's eyes, but he frowned after, "I am indeed intending to purchase a Mech Beast. Yours is really decent, in our City 67, it could be considered an elite equipment. Such a Mech Beast would be worth about 1 million

points. I don't have that many, only 300,000, thus I can't afford it."

A Type 5 Mech Beast was practically just cannon fodder to the Mech Kingdom, however, to the human resistance, they were a powerful piece of equipment. Each one was extremely expensive.

When Yue Zhong saw that Zhao Hao had no intention to lie to him, he had a favorable impression of him, and laughed out, "Since you don't have enough, I'll deal for 250,000 points. I'm still new here and not too familiar with the place and people, I will need you to lookout for me."

To Yue Zhong, this Type 5 Mech Beast was nothing much. In his Universe Ring, he still had over 100,000 of them. He could even gift this away without feeling a pinch.

Having obtained the treasury, Yue Zhong was more confident of his assets now.

When Zhao Hao heard that, he had an overjoyed look, as he laughed out loud, "Good! Good! Wang Sheng, you're counted as my friend!! Oh yes, this place is truly too unsuitable for you. Come, I have one more property over at the civilian district, I can let you have it!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Alright!"

Inside the slums, the conditions were terrible, with little to no security. If he was to meet some unknown people barging into his place while he was recuperating, he might be killed before he could react.

They went back out the soiled pipe, where the stench was unbearable, and soon entered the civilian district.

Inside here, there were many houses built, but the density of the population was not too overcrowded. There was also order here, and the streets were clean.

Zhao Hao took Yue Zhong to an ordinary-looking house and chuckled, "This is your new place."

Yue Zhong assessed his surroundings, noticing that it was about 60sqm, about the size of an ordinary 2-bedroom unit on Earth.

Zhao Hao then handed the identification card to Yue Zhong and chuckled again, "I've already transferred 250,000 over, and handed the rights of this place to your name. From today onward, you are a civilian of our City 67."

Yue Zhong put on a pale expression as he smiled back, "Many thanks, Zhao Hao. I would like to rest for now."

Zhao Hao immediately made his way out, "In that case, I shall make a move first, go rest well."

After he left, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and his back broke out in sweat.

Although he had forcefully regenerated his shape, every step was like a sharp stab to him. Having lost the Mech Lizard, every step was a torture to him.

"Fine, this place is safe, I can focus on recuperating."

He sat on the bed, and flipped his hand, as a bottle filled with a clear, silver heavenly treasure appeared in his hands, and he quickly gobbled it up.

When the silvery liquid entered his chest, it turned into a powerful energy that nourished his body.

That silvery liquid was incredibly precious, a single drop could help a peak-Type 4 powerhouse to breakthrough to the Type 5 realm.

After absorbing the liquid, Yue Zhong flipped his hands once more, and a bright-red 10,000-year-old blood dragon ginseng appeared, which he promptly consumed.

The 10,000-year-old blood dragon ginseng was also precious, formed from an ordinary blood dragon ginseng having consumed the blood and flesh of a Type 9 powerhouse to form. If an ordinary

Type 7 powerhouse were to eat this, there was a chance of a breakthrough into the Type 8 stage. As it was incredibly precious, there was only one such stalk in the treasury of the Mech Kingdom.

When it was consumed by Yue Zhong, there was a soft explosion as it turned into energy and began to course through Yue Zhong's body, constantly strengthening him.

As he willed it, he continued to retrieve all sorts of treasures to consume, before shutting his eyes and channeling the energy into rebuilding his body.

Kacha! Kacha!

Under the flow of the immense energy, it finally congealed within his sea of knowledge, transforming into gold energy, re-entering his body and into his blood. His blood began to shine a pure, bright gold, exuding a holy and powerful might, that seemed archaic and capable of suppressing other races and species.

Chapter 883: Dark Saint Assembly!

"Break apart! You damn lingering will!"

As the gold blood congealed, Yue Zhong's will roared out within his sea of consciousness. An immense force exploded forth, turning into a golden sword-like will that seemed capable of tearing apart the heavens and ripping space, slamming into the remaining will of the 9-Headed Dragonhawk.

Inside his will, there was a small-scale 9-Headed Dragonhawk roaring frantically, exuding a pressure within his sea of knowledge, "Die! Die! Die! Go to hell! Go to hell! Only death can bring you eternal peace!"

The sword that carried Yue Zhong's will sliced down on that Dragonhawk, and in that instant, a powerful and sacred will exploded forth, directly exterminating the beast.

When he killed off the 9-Headed Dragonhawk, Yue Zhong could feel that some seal in his body seemed to have cracked open, as though nothing could hold him back anymore.

He opened his eyes, and 2 bright, gold beams shone. They were focused, and resolute. He quickly sensed the changes in his body, "I've been destroyed once, and after my rebirth, I seemed to have become stronger. However, in the metamorphosis, it would take another 3 days to fully evolve. Although I have not reached the Third Order God-Devil Body, my body has become stronger than before. Once I've fully recovered, my combat strength would have risen once more."

Since he cleared the lingering will of the 9-Headed Dragonhawk, his mood was comfortable, and he began to understand and comprehend 'Will' better.

Most powerful existences had strong wills. While a Type 8 powerhouse might not be able to materialize 'Will', a Type 9

powerhouse was able to exert such a force on their enemies.

The Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk had crossed a distance of over 3km, using an attack imbued with his will to deal a fatal strike to Yue Zhong, almost preventing him from resurrecting. It was almost impossible to withstand.

Now that Yue Zhong had comprehended Will, once he recovered fully, even if the 9-Headed Dragonhawk were to attack once more, he would not be afraid. Of course, if it were a frontal clash, then he could still be easily killed.

Yue Zhong stood up and saw that there were items on the table. He went through them curiously, and almost understood what he saw, "These are... synthetic food?"

He was interested and took up one piece, putting it into his mouth, "Let's see how it tastes like."

"Peh! This is not fit for a person's taste!" Once the food was in his mouth, it released some strange sour taste, and there was a stench as well, and he could not help but spit out the food.

As he shook his head, he walked out in large strides, "The people here actually eat this sort of shit, what admirable palette."

Currently, Yue Zhong's body was still undergoing a metamorphosis, it required 3 days to complete. He wanted to make use of this chance to walk around the city.

In the civilian district, there were many humans, and Yue Zhong saw that their lives were much better than those in the slums. Their clothes were not too tattered, and every one of them had some form of weapon.

Within this city, it was as though constant peril and fear weighed on every one of them, and only a weapon could make them feel safe.

As Yue Zhong walked without any weapons, many of them shot him strange looks.

All of a sudden, in the civilian district, there were a bunch of men in black military uniform, and behind them, were young girls of about 11 or 12, chained up and dragged along as they cried out pitifully.

When they saw the men in uniform, almost every one of the civilian district quickly got out of the way, hiding within their homes, raising their own weapons in guarded defense.

The originally bustling street was soon empty, leaving behind only Yue Zhong alone.

One of the militants, a burly and ferocious-looking man saw Yue Zhong standing quietly, and a savage glint flashed past his eyes, "Get the hell away! Don't stand in our way! Are you seeking death?"

Yue Zhong glanced at that man and frowned, speaking solemnly, "Who the hell are you guys? Why did you capture someone casually?"

The burly man laughed out cruelly, pointing the ray gun in his arms at Yue Zhong, "Haha, you don't even recognize us from the Dark Saint Assembly? Ignorant. Good, we lack slaves up there anyway, even if you're a man, you should be worth some amount. Kneel down, otherwise, this senior here will blow your brains out."

"Haha, this kid is ignorant, to actually antagonize Master Zhang, he doesn't know death."

"This kid is dead. Who knows if he will be sold to the battlefield of the slave market."

"..."

The rest of the militants beside 'Master Zhang' began to laugh out in ridicule, as they began discussing.

Yue Zhong frowned, a killing intent flashing across his eyes, "Slave? Since you guys are so arrogant and unbridled, does this City 67 not have rules? They actually allow you folk to walk around?"

That 'Master Zhang' laughed out loud, as his savage nature burst forth, "Hahahaha!! Law? In this city 67, I am the heaven!! I am the law!! Whoever dares touch me will be put to death!! You fool, you dare challenge me? You're going to die! For sure!! I will capture you and put you into a pit full of donkeys fed with an aphrodisiac, and let you enjoy the taste of your asshole being torn open! Haha! HAHA!!"

In the midst of his laughter, Master Zhang directly hoisted his particle cannon and aimed at Yue Zhong's legs, before firing off with a vicious expression. There was a bright flash, and the beam shot towards Yue Zhong.

"What a beast seems like there are areas in City 67 where the ugliness of humans still rears its head."

Yue Zhong sighed and disappeared from his position. The next instant he was already in front of Master Zhang, waving his hand as Master Zhang's right arm flew in the air. At the same time, he made a grab for the particle cannon and aimed it at Master Zhang's head in a slick motion.

"Ah!! It hurts!!! IT HURTS!!" Having his right arm sliced off, Master Zhang screamed out like a pig being slaughtered. When he saw the particle cannon pointed at his head, he was so frightened that he pissed himself, as warm, yellow liquid came down his waist. He suppressed the pain and quickly got on his knees, pleading out of fear, "Lord, please don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! I'm the man of Black Widow, Liu Man Yu!! If you kill me, you're going against the entire City 67!! Spare my life, the Black Widow would give you benefits. Please, don't kill me!"

Yue Zhong shot him a disdainful glance, "What a useless trash. When you opened fire earlier if I wasn't strong enough, wouldn't I have been killed by you? It's kind of late for you to plead, isn't it? Just die."

A bright flash occurred, and the beam directly pierced through

Master Zhang's head, bursting it apart like a watermelon, causing him to die instantly.

"You killed Master!!"

"You're dead!! No one can save you now!! The Black Widow is going to kill you!!"

"You're finished!!"

"..."

The rest of the militants following Master Zhang saw how he had been killed, and their expressions turned to one of shock, as they began to fire at Yue Zhong wildly. Since Master Zhang was dead, the moment Black Widow turned furious, they would all be branded as slaves or killed. Only by bringing Yue Zhong in, dead or alive, would they have a chance.

In that instant, a dozen particle beams shot at Yue Zhong.

"Seeking death!"

There was a cold light in his eyes, and with a tap of his foot, he disappeared. The dozens of beam slammed into his afterimage, not hurting him in the slightest.

In the next moment, dozens of his Shadow Clones appeared in front of each militant, firing off beams at their heads.

With a flash of beams, the dozens of militants from the Dark Saint Assembly had their heads explode, leaving only 5 of them.

Yue Zhong swept the remaining 5 members a cold look, and barked out coldly, "Kneel, or die!!"

Feeling the threat, all of them turned ashen as they got on the ground, and kowtowed profusely, "Sir, spare us!! Please!! Spare our lives!! Spare our lives!!"

Yue Zhong swept them a cold look and asked, "What is this Dark Saint Assembly? Who is the Black Widow? Tell me everything about this city, truthfully."

The soldiers quickly replied, "Yes! Yes! Yes! Sir, we'll say! We'll say!!"

Chapter 884: The Black Widow!

Wherever there were people, there would be competition, there would be light, as well as darkness. The Black Widow Liu Man Yu was a huge idol in every member of the resistance. Making use of the authority of the higher-ups, Liu Man Yu had started her own Dark Saint Assembly, running things on the side as well as conducting shady businesses.

The poor and the people in the slum were those who were weak and had poor backgrounds, ordinary folk. The Dark Saint Assembly would usually enter the slums to traffick someone up to other places.

They were overbearing and tyrannical but did not enjoy the perks that other people in power did. Liu Man Yu was a person who knew how to work her charms. Most of the higher-ups treated her well, and everyone worked together, doing things fearlessly.

In truth, most of the ordinary people in the slums were taken away without warning and sold without any future.

Yue Zhong frowned and sighed, "You guys are all already hiding out here like rats, with bad enough circumstances, but to think that there are those who would act against their own kind. Truly inhumane beasts! Fools!"

Humans were truly complicated creatures. Those on Galastar had to hide underground, without seeing the sun. There did not seem to be any hope of winning the Mech Kingdom, nor returning to the surface.

Hence, in the thousands of years, the upper echelon had been starting to rot and drop, and they began to chase after pleasures and sick depravities.

Furthermore, in the distribution of the resources, the ones at the top wanted more, thus, they decided to do away with more from

the lower levels, thus, the slums became their target.

Yue Zhong swept those little girls a look, noticing that they were all emaciated and malnourished, looking like dried fishes. They were so skinny that it was almost inhuman, and their eyes were filled with fear.

He spoke warmly, "Those men from the Dark Saint Assembly have been killed by me, you are all free to go home."

The girls exchanged looks, but no one turned to leave.

The tallest, and presumably oldest, stepped forward and kneeled on the ground, as she started to plead while sobbing, "Big brother, we were all captured by them. If the Dark Saint Assembly got wind that we escaped home, we will be captured once again and tortured. This time even our families will be dragged in. Please, please, take us. We're willing to be your slaves, and we will do whatever you want of us. Please."

The rest all began to kneel, as they echoed after the girl in the lead, "Please, take us away! We're willing to be your slaves!"

In this underground city, these human kids matured from a young age, knowing how to utilize weapons at the age of 10 and learning of the darkness of the world. Since they grew up in the slums, they knew clearly that only someone who had extended some form of kindness as Yue Zhong would be the only way out.

As Yue Zhong watched this, he frowned, and felt helpless, "Damn, it feels like something troublesome has happened."

If he were alone, then even if his strength had not recovered, inside this city, he could walk around unfettered. However, if he brought these girls along then he would have an additional responsibility and had to ensure their safety.

Defending was always harder than being on the attack.

The lead girl saw that Yue Zhong was hesitating, and she crawled over like a kitten, hugging his legs, as her tears flowed, "I'm

begging you, big brother, save us."

He continued to ponder before his gaze sharpened at last and asked the girl, "Alright, I'll take you girls in. What is your name?"

There was a look of joy in the girl's eyes, as she replied quickly, "Master, I'm called Apple."

She was intelligent and knew their background was poor, even if they followed him, they were just slaves. They wanted to live on, even if it was going to be with a lowly status.

"Apple, gather the rest, then follow this uncle, he will ensure your safety."

With a thought, there was a rip in the void, and White Bones stepped out, standing beside Yue Zhong quietly.

Apple saw the unearthly means that Yue Zhong had, and was shocked, as she replied respectfully, "Yes! Master."

Yue Zhong swept a look at those trembling members of the Dark Saint Assembly, "Let's go! Take me to see your Black Widow!"

The few militants responded shakily, "Yes! Yes!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands, as atmospheric energy shrouded the group of soldiers. He then brought them up into the air, as he flew towards the center of the city with the rest of them in tow.

Apple watched on in awe, "My Master is so strong."

The rest of the girls looked on at the immortal-like Yue Zhong, with similar gazes of adoration and respect.

All the humans in the underground city were exceptionally fearful of powerhouses. Such an expert could easily obtain whatever they wanted. These girls had lived pitifully for a long time, thus, they naturally hoped for their master to be someone strong. Only then they could live a better life.

In the center of City 67, there was a huge villa of about 4 to 5 stories, each of them easily tens of acres.

Inside these villas, there were all sorts of strange plants and flowers, giving off interesting scents. There were pools and amenities, at the same time, the entire place was illuminated at all times, allowing the inhabitants to feel like they were on the surface.

In this world below, in order to construct such a setting, the expenditure was high. Especially the villa alone. Every day, they had to spend a Type 3 Mutant Beast nucleus in order to maintain it. If the entire City 67 was to be given the same amenities, then the expenditure could easily be astronomical.

Beside the swimming pool of one particular residence, there was an incredibly sexy woman with an alluring body, thick lips, her long lush hair wavy and healthy. She looked slightly snobbish, as she laid comfortably on a sunchair.

On either side of this top beauty, were a dozen naked men with handsome looks and muscular physiques.

They were either massaging her or licking her legs like shameless dogs.

All of a sudden, the beautiful woman frowned, her eyes filled with a vicious gaze as she waved her hand and the whip she was carrying struck the back on one of the men, causing a deep and bloody gash, "Damn slave. Use more strength. Did you not eat enough? Better be careful, lest I throw you to the cage and feed my precious!"

The man who was struck heavily only revealed a look of shock and fear, instead, of pain, as he kowtowed profusely, "Mercy, Master!! Mercy!!"

This beauty was the renowned Black Widow Liu Man Yu of City 67. The precious she was referring to was a Mutant Dog that fed on human flesh. Once thrown into the cage, the man would be dead.

Liu Man Yu swept the man a disdainful gaze, she waved her

hands, "Drag him away, this trash. Compared to Little Zhang, he's truly lacking. There's no manliness in this one. Feed him to my precious."

The man was frightened out of his wits, as he began to kowtow even more angrily, "Master!! Spare me!!! Master!!"

2 black-suit experts shot forwards out of the dark, grabbing the man casually, as they dragged him away and threw him into a cage.

Inside the cage, there was a burly Type 3 Mutant Dog the size of a lion, its eyes flashing with a cruel light.

Seeing the man thrown into the cage, the Type 3 Mutant Dog had a savage expression, as it pounced towards the man.

Soon, the screams of the man rang out, as meat and blood splattered everywhere, as he was ripped to pieces by the Mutant Beast.

All the slaves who were waiting on for Liu Man Yu began to tremble with pale faces.

As for the Black Widow, she laughed out in perverted ecstasy, her face drunk with pleasure.

All of a sudden, the communication device beside her rang out. Her face fell, as she barked out, "Scram within 2 seconds, otherwise, you will be fed to the dogs."

The men became frightened, as they quickly ran out within a breath.

After they left, Liu Man Yu pressed her button, and there was a bright light that flashed, revealing a figure of an old man, with freckles and a huge nose. He was wearing a suit as his eyes flashed with a crafty light.

Liu Man Yu began to exert her charm as she spoke coquettishly, "Godfather, why are you only free now to find Yu-yu~~? Yu-yu~~"

really misses you~~!! You haven't doted on me for a long time, I'm so lonely!! I've missed you so~~!"

Chapter 885: Killing the Black Widow!

The big-nosed old man laughed out obscenely, "Haha, little precious. I've not seen you in a long while, in a few days, I'll be over there for a short while. When that time comes, I'll treat you well! Haha!"

He then turned serious, "Alright! Precious, go get Beck and the rest ready, I want a troop of 10,000 elites, ready for battle any time. In these 2 days, there will be orders for you."

When Liu Man Yu heard this, she lost her composure, "Godfather, we only have about 7,000 elites in this underground city, how could we gather 10,000?"

The big-nosed old man immediately turned icy as he barked, "Oh! So your wings have grown eh? You dare go against my orders? This matter, even if you can't, you'll have to! If you won't, you better scam the hell back, I'll get someone else to take over your position."

Liu Man Yu turned pale when she heard this, her voice turning softer, "No! I'll do it! Godfather, I'll definitely do it! I will settle whatever you ask of me!"

She knew his character if she went against his wishes, not only would her position be taken away, when she went back, she would lead a life worse than a dog.

The big-nosed uncle then nodded with satisfaction, "Hmph, that's right, go get yourself cleaned up, I will head over anytime in these few days."

After that, his figure disappeared.

Seeing that the old man was gone, Liu Man Yu's face turned incredibly venomous, and contorted with rage as she spoke in a low voice, "Damn old fart, one day, your mother I will let you see how terrifying I can be!"

Liu Man Yu might just be a pawn and pet of the old man right now, but she was filled with hate and vengeance towards him. However, she knew clearly, that she could be this unbridled, and everyone was afraid of her, purely because of the Godfather behind her. Without him, she would just be anybody's toy, her life and fate out of her hands, and worse than hell.

After venting her hatred, she screeched like a shrew, "Men! Throw those men to my precious!!"

The black-dressed security guards came out from various dark corners, dragging those well-built slaves towards the cage.

The Black Widow was a vicious woman, killing off all those men that had relations with her, otherwise, if the Godfather knew, it would be trouble. Furthermore, it was pleasurable for her to watch them being torn apart, as though she was in control over their lives.

"No!"

"Please! Don't kill me!!"

"I don't want to die!!"

"..."

The men all revealed expressions of fear and despair, as they screamed out and begged for their lives. However, Liu Man Yu just smiled viciously, watching them as they headed towards their deaths.

"What an ugly, venomous woman."

Right at this time, there was a voice, causing Liu Man Yu to turn around, only to see Yue Zhong walking over, followed by 5 militants of the Dark Saint Assembly.

Seeing him, Liu Man Yu's expression turned, as countless thoughts flashed past her mind. She quickly exerted herself, "Who are you?!"

She was extremely fearful of death, and in this villa, there were over 30 Type 4 experts. And yet, Yue Zhong had been able to walk in without raising alarms, meant that he was not simple.

Yue Zhong's eyes were blazing as he shot her a look, like a king that was looking at this beautiful, but poisonous flower, "Black Widow Liu Man Yu, are you the one controlling this city, capturing numerous people of the slums to sell as slaves?"

Her face changed, as she revealed a pitiful expression, "It was not me!! It's those above who forced me! I'm just their puppet, their you! I'm not in control over my own life! I can't go against their orders!"

Her acting was truly worthy of an Oscar if there was one here. At this moment, she truly looked like someone who had been forced against her will, a weak lady, who truly deserved pity. In truth, she had managed to hook the Godfather around with her acting, playing countless ploys to be separated from the numerous slave girls she was a part of, gaining the power and authority she had today.

Yue Zhong sighed in admiration, "What good acting if I had not seen you throwing those fellows to the dog, I would have believed you. Truly admirable, commendable!"

Any Oscar winner would pale in comparison with her. After all, in order to live on, she could truly pull off any character. Had the old Godfather seen through her, she would have died a long time ago. Under the sort of pressure, how could she not be amazing?

In a flash, 2 Type 4 experts burst out from the shadows, slashing their weapons at Yue Zhong viciously.

"You want to kill me? Too weak."

Yue Zhong laughed indifferently, without even turning around, he slapped out casually, as though he was swatting flies.

At that moment, the 2 experts exploded where they stood, their

body parts splattering everywhere.

"Type 6 powerhouse?"

Seeing his prowess, the rest of the experts were stunned silly and did not dare act. There was a sense of invincibility exuding from Yue Zhong, affecting their states of mind.

Among the human resistance on Galastar, the strongest was at most Type 6. In the whole rebel force, there were only 3 such experts, termed as the 3 Kings. They were also the leaders of the rebel force.

Everyone knew Type 6 powerhouses to be invincible, thus no one was willing to act against Yue Zhong.

Liu Man Yu's face fell, as she immediately went to the ground, revealing a respectful expression, while trying to flaunt her worth, "So you're an esteemed Type 6 powerhouse! Sir, please take me in, I'm willing to be your slave. I'm well-learned and can help you run a city, I can help you raise top slaves, and help you gain favor. I will help you acquire City 67 as well. Please take me in, even if I have to be your bitch! I'm willing!"

She was clear that she was just an ant in front of a Type 6 master. If Yue Zhong wanted to kill her, no one could save her, thus she could only plead for her life.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Smart, capable, and among the women, I have met, you can easily be in the top 50."

Hearing those praises, Liu Man Yu felt a sliver of hope. Unfortunately, Yue Zhong's next sentence sent her straight to hell, "However, your character is too venomous, and you're too ambitious. Because of you, who knows how many have died. I can't pardon you, you should be fed to your dog."

With that, he waved his hands and sent Liu Man Yu soaring towards the cage.

In a flash, she was directly sent rolling into the cage with the

Mutant Dog.

The Mutant Dog saw Liu Man Yu, and a savage look flashed in its eyes, as it pounced over with its jaws open to bite at her.

There was a look of despair in her eyes as she screamed, "NO!! Precious!! I'm your mother!! No!! Don't eat me!! Help!! Help me!!"

Within seconds, the vicious woman was eaten by her own reared Mutant Dog.

After that, Yue Zhong took out his particle cannon and fired it at the Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong swept the trembling experts a cold look, "Are you guys submitting, or intending to die?"

They immediately got down on their knees, as they swore, "We're willing to work for sir!!"

In this underground city, where things were chaotic, the strong reigned. A Type 6 expert could easily sweep through the entire City 67, thus to them, it was an honor to work for such an expert.

Yue Zhong spoke indifferently, "Alright! Get up then."

One of them then suggested, "Sir, I know of the place where the rest of the upper echelon resides, let me take you there."

Yue Zhong responded, "Good! What's your name?"

The black-suited expert replied, "I'm called Wang Ren!"

Yue Zhong spoke, "Wang Ren, lead the way, I'll remember your contribution."

Wang Ren celebrated in his heart, "Thank you, Sir!!"

Under his lead, Yue Zhong directly went out of the villa, heading towards where the rest of the upper echelon were.

Chapter 886: Taking over City 67!

Inside a villa, a burly man with a knife-scar on his face was currently watching a stage with a cruel expression.

On the stage, 2 young girls of about 11 or 12, wearing white leather suits, were currently wielding sharp blades as they slashed at each other in a crazed manner. Their gazes were savage, while their bodies were covered in blood. They were just like wild beasts.

The burly, scarred man laughed savagely, "Not bad!! Kill her, Aisha! After you do, I'll let you have meat and cakes tonight. Hahaha!!"

One of the girls, with golden hair and blue eyes, and her little mounds were developing, had a fierce glint in her eyes. She roared out in rage and charged towards the other girl, who was black.

"You're a beast."

Right at this time, Yue Zhong's enraged voice sounded.

The scarred man turned around, and his face sunk, barking out, "Who the hell are you? Men, capture him!"

"There's no need to shout, all your men are already dead. You can go to hell too." Yue Zhong shot the man a cold look, as his killing intent billowed out. The particle cannon in his hands fired straight at the head of the man.

A particle beam immediately blasted through the head of the scarred man.

This was the top expert of City 67, Type 5 powerhouse Zhang Tong. His strength was decent, and he was vicious and decisive, having killed countless experts. However, against Yue Zhong's strike, he could not even react, as his head directly exploded.

"Strong! He actually killed Zhang Tong before he could react. Truly too strong!"

Behind Yue Zhong, Wang Ren and the other soldiers that had submitted were all wearing expressions of shock, their fear towards Yue Zhong deepening.

After all, Zhang Tong was the top expert in City 67, and anyone who had challenged him in the past had been reduced to bones. Many hated him but were unable to do anything to him. At the same time, he was considered the city mayor, in charge of the 90,000 people here.

Once he killed Zhang Tong, Yue Zhong shot the podium a look, his brows furrowing. The 2 slave girls who were dressed indecently were still wielding their weapons, intent on claiming each other's lives.

Yue Zhong then barked out suddenly, imbuing his powerful will into his voice, "Stop!!"

Under that pressure, the 2 girls felt a huge sense of fear well up in them, as they released their weapons and got on the ground, staring at Yue Zhong in fear.

Yue Zhong looked at them, riddled with injuries, as he sighed silently, "There are truly too many beasts in this underground city. Trapped in this place, without the power to end things, they have all truly degenerated."

"Wang Ren, go get some people to take care of them."

Yue Zhong gave this order and turned around to leave. He still had to clear more of the trash.

Wang Ren responded respectfully, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong only needed to channel his Type 6 strength for now, but it was enough to walk around unbridled. The upper echelon was not his match, and they were either captured or killed by him within a short period. Just like that, he swept through the city, taking out all the human trash.

By the time he was done, there were only 3 people left.

One of them was called Zhao Song, in charge of the noble district, as well as the security of the civilians. One other, called Liu Li, was the governor of the civilians. He was an honest and old-fashioned man. The last was called Jin Tu, the vice-commander of the armed forces of City 67. He was a military man, and while slightly lustful, the women who followed him did so willingly.

In truth, many of the officials would be able to get many women the moment they expressed their intentions. However, it was just that they felt like these women were not interesting, unable to satisfy their sickest desires, that was why they did so many despicable things.

Once City 67 was in his hands, Yue Zhong sent someone for Apple and the rest.

Inside the villa that Liu Man Yu had resided in, Yue Zhong sat at the main seat, looking at Zhao Song, Jin Tu, Liu Li, and Zhao Hao, the 4 new heads of the city.

Zhao Hao looked at Yue Zhong emitting a strong pressure with a complicated gaze. He had not expected the ordinary man he picked up in the desert to possess a Type 6 strength, directly winning City 67 with one fell swoop, and instating him as an official.

Yue Zhong swept Zhao Song a gaze and asked, "Zhao Song, do you know where the human headquarters are?"

These officials had foregone progress, instead, rotting in their morals and behavior. Yue Zhong was already striking them off as dead in his mind, If he knew where the headquarters was, and not too much time was needed, he did not mind taking a trip to wipe them out.

"Lord, this... I don't know." Zhao Song shook his head, as he explained, "It's not only me, but even the head Zhang Tong did not know where it is. The Mech Kingdom has powerful brainwashing procedures, which we are powerless against. Hence, the upper echelons are all mysterious. We only know that there are a total of

127 underground cities, and there are no communications between the cities. Only the central headquarters will initiate the communication and give us orders."

Yue Zhong then thought, "So secretive? That's how they've managed to evade being discovered. The humans here are not simple too. It's a pity there's corruption in the higher echelons already."

He then asked, "Liu Man Yu was from the headquarters?"

Zhao Song replied, "That's right, Lord. Liu Man Yu was from the headquarters. However, before she left, she had been blindfolded and transported in a secretive transport vehicle as well. She did not know where it is either."

There was a sense of disappointment, "So secretive, seems like it's not possible to take over these underground cities."

He had initially intended to take the humans on Galastar, but since the headquarters was so mysterious, he was helpless too.

Yue Zhong then looked at Jin Tu, "Jin Tu, did they tell you why they needed 10,000 elites?"

He had overheard the contents of the conversation between Liu Man Yu and the headquarters, thus he was curious to find out why they required 10,000 elites.

Jin Tu replied quickly, "This subordinate does not know."

Yue Zhong frowned, as he looked at Zhao Hao, "Zhao Hao, go organize some people, and hand out food orderly to the slums, before grouping them in groups of 500 to train up."

Zhao Hao had a look of joy, "Yes, sir!"

The people in the slums were truly pitiful, living like rats. Even that rubbish-like synthetic food was given to them only once a week. Yue Zhong's act of giving out food right now was purely based on sympathy. At the same time, gathering soldiers from the

slums gave them a way out, a form of work.

After that, he gave a few more orders that require little manpower but could help to garner support, before dismissing them.

He was preparing for his body to recover fully, before leading the people of City 67 away from here and back to Earth. Before that, he was not intending to carry out huge changes, that would only cause them to be disoriented.

After that, he headed towards the pool in the villa.

Liu Man Yu had spent resources to beautify the place and fill it up with amenities, thus Yue Zhong wanted to enjoy himself in the pool as well.

By the pool, there were 2 rows of beautiful ladies in provocative clothing. They had been rescued from the officials of the City 67, and although Yue Zhong had given them their freedom, they had chosen to stay behind.

After all, by staying beside Yue Zhong, they would have food and security. If they returned to the slums or the civilian district, they would have to eat synthetic food, and if they were not careful, they might become other people's playthings.

There were all sorts of underground groups inside those places, which made people uneasy.

As he walked over, the beauties all knelt down, announcing loudly, "Greetings, Master!!"

He continued walking, as though he was an ancient king, giving off an aura of grandeur and might. As he pushed the doors of the pool open, he discovered 5 young women standing in the middle of the pool.

One particular buxom babe, of about 28 or 29, walked over sensually as she bowed towards him, "Master, I'm Lisova, the mistress in charge of your harem. These are virgins I've picked out

for you, and I hope that you'll enjoy yourself!"

Chapter 887: Desert Region!

Yue Zhong swept a glance, discovering the 4 ladies behind Lisova. He had seen 2 of them before, one of them was Apple, who he had saved from the slum, the other was the Aisha that had been on the stage attacking another girl wildly.

Apple's skin was glowing as she revealed her innocent charms after a clean bath. Although she was still developing, she was extremely cute. As for Aisha, her looks were exquisite and her body sexy, even though she was covered in scars, she looked like a leopard full of vitality. The other 2 lolis were barely 16, however, in this cruel world, they were already considered ripe for the picking.

Besides Apple and Aisha, one of them had fair skin and thick, long hair. Her eyes were big and round, her eyes clear and beautiful. She was about 16, and as Yue Zhong walked over, she had a curious look in her eyes while assessing him.

Beside her, was a young, western beauty of about 1.8m, blond hair blue eyes, high nose, and an explosive body with a pair of impressive E-cup breasts. They were bouncy, and her eyes were filled with a slightly provocative yet teasing look.

Yue Zhong swept Apple and Aisha a look as he frowned, "Apple, you and Aisha go out."

When Apple heard that, she was slightly disappointed, but she still replied respectfully, "Yes!"

Aisha, on the other hand, continued to stare at Yue Zhong like a little leopard, untamed and wild, as she spoke out, "Why must we go out? Master, as long as you feed me, I will listen to you. I can do anything, much better than these women."

After that, she pulled with her might, as the silk covering her body was ripped apart, revealing her youthful yet alluring body.

Inside this city, an ordinary beauty would already be violated at the age of 11. Only those in the noble and civilian districts could protect their chastity up until the age of 16.

Aisha had been captured at an early age and had seen Zhang Tong violating the other girls. She was already exposed to it at a very young age and knew many things, even the skills necessary to attract and bewitch. Furthermore, she had no prior education and did not know what shame was. She only knew to utilize her capabilities to eat her fill. In order to do so, she could kill without hesitation, or sell her body.

Yue Zhong looked at her and frowned, as he emitted a towering aura which enveloped her, "Get out!"

Faced with the insurmountable pressure, Aisha became like a mouse that saw a cat, not knowing fear before, she finally felt a sense of terror, as she stopped, and replied meekly, "Yes!"

After that, both her and Apple quickly walked out of the pool obediently.

Yue Zhong then turned to Lisova, and spoke indifferently, "In the future, those who attend to me, have to be above 16, understood?"

Lisova lowered her head gently, and expressed her apologies, "I'm sorry, Master. It was my mistake this time. It won't happen again."

Yue Zhong nodded and walked into the hot pool.

The 2 other beauties had already taken off their clothes, revealing 2 astounding physiques.

In the pool, Yue Zhong reached out to cup the beauty with black hair, grinning as he asked, "What's your name?"

She replied gently, as she sank into his embrace, "Replying Master's words, I'm Yuan Lu."

Lisova then knelt behind Yue Zhong, reaching out to massage him.

The beauty with the E-cups then got to his right and used her bountiful peaks to massage his right shoulder, sticking out her tongue to lick him, like a cat in heat.

After Yuan Lu's reply, the big-breasted beauty whispered gently, "Master, my name is Natalie."

"It's a nice name."

He chuckled, before grasping her in his embrace as well, and lowered his head to kiss her.

Following a few moans of pain, the entire pool was then ringing out with sounds of pleasure.

For three whole days, Yue Zhong did not step out of the underground city at all, spending his time idly. In these three days, he read and relaxed, and whenever he was in the mood, he would pull Yuan Lu and Natalie over to fool around. The fear of the future and the constant uncertainty was tossed to one side, as he focused on resting.

After the 3 days, his body had recovered to its peak condition, reaching a state that far surpassed his previous self.

Inside a study, he opened his eyes, as 2 bright lights gleamed, "My strength has now been restored, and the time for relaxation is over. There has not been any news from the headquarters. I can't afford to wait. Time to bring the people away."

In these 3 days, he had been awaiting news from the headquarters of the human resistance while resting, however, there had not been any news. He had thus decided to stop waiting.

At this time, Jin Tu suddenly came in, reporting, "Lord, Lord! An order has just been given! We are to deploy our troops towards sector CBV56!"

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened as he ordered, "Oh! Finally! Send 2,000 elites towards there immediately!"

The human resistance would definitely make a big move, and before leaving, Yue Zhong wanted to see what it was. If he could capture one of the officials, it would be the best. That way, he could easily work his way towards gaining the entire human population of Galastar.

2,000 elites were quickly gathered, and under Yue Zhong's lead, they went through many tunnels, heading for the outside.

Sector CBV56 was a desert region, and when Yue Zhong's group reached, they discovered that there was a huge army camp already set up there.

Inside the camp, there were numerous human soldiers busy with setting up concealment.

In fact, most of the structures were hidden within the sand, if it were not for a large number of soldiers patrolling, it was hard to discover an army camp here.

Yue Zhong's troop of 2,000 was extremely eye-catching, and soon, a small troop came to receive them.

The leader was a man with a yellowed-out uniform, his stature small, but he had an aura of superiority. He came forward and laughed warmly, "I'm the leader of City 46, Chu He, everyone must be a brother from City 67. Who is Brother Zhang Tong?"

Jin Tu stepped forward, "I'm Jin Tu, City Mayor Zhang Tong had fallen not too long ago when he took on a Type 5 Mutant Beast. I'm currently the leader."

Yue Zhong was standing beside Jin Tu, passing off as an ordinary guard, watching on quietly.

Jin Tu was also from the upper echelon in City 67, his name within the database, thus, getting him to be the leader would be better than actually revealing Yue Zhong.

Chu He pointed to a burly man beside him, who had huge earrings and dyed hair, looking like some hooligan, and

introduced, "So you're Brother Jin Tu. This is the City Mayor of City 32, Luo Zhi De. Since our 3 cities are together, let's get to know one another better, and when the fight happens, we can cooperate better."

Luo Zhi De replied somewhat indifferently, "Hey."

Jin Tu frowned as well, replying back coldly, "Hey."

Chu He then brought the group towards 2 other troops, "This the area that headquarters has designated for you."

The 2,000 elites of Yue Zhong then began to work on the construction assigned to them. The 2,000 elites of City 67 had already been through countless battles in the desert, and they were experienced, quickly completing their work.

As the ordinary soldiers worked, Jin Tu and the other commanders gathered together, exchanging information.

Inside the command center, Jin Tu asked Chu He, "Chu He, this time, headquarters seem to be deploying so many troops. Do you know the reason? We have to understand our enemy or objective right?"

Luo Zhi De, whose arms were around 2 hot babes, also pricked up his ears.

Chu He seemed to hesitate, before replying slowly, "I also only got this from conversations along the way. This time, our target is a beast horde that seems to have a Type 7 Mutant Beast."

When they heard this, Jin Tu and Luo Zhi De turned pale, "What?! Type 7 Mutant Beast?!"

Chapter 888: Mutant Lizard Horde!

Yue Zhong's face also twitched slightly when he heard this.

What were Type 7 Mutant Beasts? On earth, such an existence would already be invincible, capable of destroying countries and gathering countless savage minions. Even on this planet, where experts were rampant, a Type 7 Mutant Beast was still a dangerous existence.

A Type 7 Mutant Beast could actually destroy most human troops.

Even with the 20,000 elite soldiers gathered here, it was not a guarantee they could take on a Type 7 Mutant. Instead, should the Type 7 Mutant Beast get riled up, the 20,000 elite soldiers would likely be wiped out.

Luo Zhi De's face turned steely, as he stood up, barking out, "How could we have a chance against a Type 7 Mutant Beast?! We from City 32 will not be staying on. Farewell!!"

Chu He chuckled, "Hehe, Brother Luo, the headquarters have tabs on our location. There are also countless experts on their side. If you follow their orders, then even if you lose, you can continue to be a mayor and enjoy your luxuries. However, if you choose not to do so, then not only would you be executed, all your loved ones will become slaves to others. I'll just leave these words, if you still want to leave, by all means. I won't stop you."

When Luo Zhi De heard this, his countenance turned ugly. In the end, he heaved a long sigh and sank back into the sofa. He raised a glass of wine, gulping it in one mouth. He chose to sacrifice the brothers of his City 32 just so he could continue living a good life.

The headquarters had been able to gather all the peak experts on Galastar. At the same time, they had the technology and ability to suppress any of the bases and cities. After all, they were the ones

that designated the leaders of each city. They just had to deploy an elite troop and it would be more than enough to wipe out any of the forces.

It was because of the strength of the headquarters that so far, none of the leaders had dared harbour the thought of rebelling. They could only rely on their slave trafficking to obtain more benefits from the headquarters.

Under such disturbing circumstances, the headquarters of the human resistance on Galastar grew stronger, while the subsidiary cities became weaker and the number of experts grew lesser. A Type 5 powerhouse was already considered invincible in each city.

At this time, there was an intelligence officer within the command center that shouted out with a pale face, "Sir! The enemies are here!! There are so many!! So many Mutant Lizards!!"

Jin Tu and the rest had sharp glints in their gazes, as they swivelled to face the displays. On the monitors, there was a dense horde of Mutant Lizards packed tightly, as they galloped over, raising dust in their wake.

Even within the command center, everyone could feel the tremors of the ground, at the same time, it was increasing in intensity.

In the skies above the desert, there was a silver battleship that extended out its particle cannons.

Inside the control room of that battleship, there were 6 men and 2 women standing quietly, dressed in silver uniform, with a scarlet lion tattooed on their right shoulders.

They were all good-looking and young, exuding a proud aura. They were new generation of talents raised by the headquarters.

The leader was a young, handsome man with a muscular physique and long hair tied up in a ponytail. He spoke coldly, issuing an order, "Convey my orders, commence the assault."

This particular leader was called Liu Kuo, and he was the commander of this operation. The moment he gave the order, it was transmitted to the various departments who had been waiting.

The various channels of communications in the commander center began to buzz, "Colonel Liu Kuo had given the orders, immediately commence assault, targets are the mobile Mutant Lizards."

The human organization on planet Galastar followed a military system, and most of the city mayors were only at the rank of Lieutenants, and they had to obey any command given from the headquarters.

After receiving Liu Kuo's orders, the various city mayors began relaying instructions to attack.

In an instant, various particle cannons, ray guns, Gauss rifles and other weapons emerged from the sand.

The moment those weapons emerged, they began firing wildly at the approaching horde of Mutant Lizards.

One particular 8m-long Type 3 Mutant Lizard was running, and when the numerous beams struck it, its head was blasted full of holes, as fresh blood and flesh splattered everywhere. Its corpse then slumped to the ground.

Under the attack of the advanced weaponry, many Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Lizards were torn apart, dying with their bodies riddled with holes.

As for those Type 5 ones, their scales were strong, and suffered lesser. Only under enough attacks could they be taken out.

Then there were the 16 Type 6 Mutant Lizards, they continued to charge through as though the attacks did not affect them. The numerous beams only served to cause superficial wounds, which recovered within a breath's time.

The 16 Type 6 Mutant Lizards were like 16 undefeatable tanks as

they charged right through, slamming through the structures built by the human resistance.

As they got close, they would swing their tails and destroy many of the automatic weapons,

These 16 Mutant Lizards were adept at digging holes, casually slashing with their claws, and dug out huge holes. Their tongues would then shoot in and wrap around the unfortunate soldiers hidden within the sand. Their jaws then clamped shut, as human flesh and blood splattered out in a gruesome manner.

Luo Zhi De saw his subordinates being slaughtered by a Type 6 Mutant Lizard, and felt an intense anguish, as he roared into his telecommunications, "Kill it!! Kill it!! Focus your fire to kill it!!"

At that moment, 300 laser cannons turned to aim at the Type 6 Mutant Lizards, and they fired out in a bright flash, as 300 beams slammed into the Type 6 Mutant Lizards.

300 laser guns enveloped the body of the Type 6 Mutant Lizard, covering it entirely.

Luo Zhi De felt his heart in his mouth, as he eyed the flashes of light, wondering, "Is it dead?"

Before the radiance dimmed, the gigantic Mutant Lizard burst out, charging towards the source of the beams and swung its tail viciously. In an instant, many of the laser cannons were destroyed. With a slash of its claws, the structures were demolished, and it quickly stuck out its tongue to consume the numerous soldiers within.

Invincible! Those 16 Type 6 Mutant Lizards were definitely undefeatable!

On the battlefield, the miserable human screams continued to ring out, as fear and despair welled up in their hearts. The Type 6 Mutant Beasts were not existences they could stand up against. The weapons they had were just not adequate to even injure them

in the slightest.

At the same time, there was a terrifying Type 7 Mutant Lizard over over a 1km in length within the horde. This particular Type 7 Mutant Beast had a huge 5m-long gash at its tail, and it seemed to be infected with some poison as the wound was festering, emitting a strong stench while pus oozed out from it. Originally, such a wound would have taken just minutes to heal, however, it was currently extremely slow.

Seeing that beast, the people in the command center were extremely pale, their hearts filled with despair. The Type 6 Mutant Lizards were already beyond their ability, with the appearance of the Type 7 Mutant Beast, it had become even more impossible.

Only Yue Zhong saw that Type 7 Mutant Beast and felt a sense of heated excitement, "Great, there's an injured Type 7 Mutant Beast over here. As long as I can kill it, then its life force, on top of the treasures I've gained from the Mech Kingdom, would be able to propel my strength by another minor realm!"

It got increasingly harder for biological life forms to evolve the stronger they got. The life force of a Type 7 Mutant Beast would be more than a Type 8 powerhouse. However, for Yue Zhong, even killing this particular beast might be insufficient for him. He needed to complement it with the resources he obtained from the Mech Kingdom to achieve a breakthrough.

Yue Zhong looked at the display, showing the battleship floating in the skies, and thought silently, "They should be making a move right? Otherwise, these soldiers would be wiped out soon."

Currently, the 3 cities' forces that were engaging the Mutant Beasts were already showing signs of collapse. Many of the soldiers piloting their own mechs were trying to crawl out of the sand dunes, fleeing for their lives.

If the experts in the skies were still not willing to act, then this battle would be for naught.

Chapter 889: The Powerful Type 7 Mutant Lizard!

In the skies, Liu Kuo swept a look towards the crumbling human soldiers, his eyes filled with a hint of tease, as though he was enjoying the futile struggle of ants, "Bunch of trash! However, these fellows do have some use. Do it!"

After that, Liu Kuo and the rest of his subordinates turned around as they headed downwards.

Soon, 8 human-like mechs of over 10m flew out from the battleship.

At the same time, the originally silent battleship began to activate its A-Grade Particle Cannons, and fired them out, blasting at the Type 6 Mutant Beasts.

In a breath, one of the Type 6 was punched full of holes. Fresh blood flowed, as it became riddled with injuries.

Making use of that opportunity, one of the human-shaped mechs descended down, appearing in front of the injured Type 6 Mutant Beast in a flash. The laser blade in its hands then sliced through the head of the Type 6 Mutant Lizard, directly turning the brain into mush.

With the brain destroyed, the Type 6 Mutant Beast struggled a while, before turning into a corpse.

Inside the command center, Yue Zhong looked at how the mech user killed the Type 6 Mutant Beast and applauded silently, "Strong!"

The blade that could pierce through the Type 6 Mutant Beast meant that the pilot already had a grasp of the weak points of the Type 6 Mutant Beasts, striking at the critical areas.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

Another Mech had a pair of wings, as well as 4 A-Grade Particle Cannons, 2 at its shoulders, 2 at its waist, as it routed around another Type 6 Mutant Lizard and fired at it.

With each beam that struck the head of the Type 6 Mutant Lizard accurately, there would be an additional bloody wound. Under the continuous assault, the Type 6 Mutant Lizard struggled frantically, before its brain was vaporized.

The performance of the other 6 Mechs was also outstanding, as they continued to weave through the horde and cooperated in attacking the various Type 6 Mutant Beasts. Although each beast was strong and reacted quickly, they could not do anything about the Mechs.

Yue Zhong eyed the Mechs in the skies and had an understanding, "So this is the case, no wonder those fellows dare to target the Type 7 Mutant Beast."

While the combat strength of the Type 6 Mutant Beasts was terrifying, and their movement speed fast, on top of their immense defense and strength, they could not fly. Hence, they were helpless against the Mechs, and the situation was within the control of the human resistance.

Seeing how the Type 6 subordinates were being slaughtered by the flying Mechs, the Type 7 Mutant Lizard became infuriated and charged forward with all its speed.

In an instant, the entire ground trembled and a dust storm gathered. The Type 7 Mutant Lizard appeared in front of one of the close-combat Mechs and swung its tail madly, slamming into the Mech.

The pilot of that Mech turned pale, as he struggled and tried to control the mech to dodge one side.

The tail of the Type 7 Mutant Beast was traveling at a speed 8 times that of sound, it tore through space, and slammed into the

Mech with the might of Mount Tai.

Hong!!

Under the powerful strike, the Mech was instantly turned into scrap metal, as parts flew everywhere, while the human pilot became minced meat.

"Retreat!! Retreat quickly!!"

Liu Kuo roared out, as he piloted his Mech that had a pair of eagle wings as it shot towards the skies.

The remaining 5 Mechs also soared into the sky, evading the Type 7 Mutant Lizard.

The Mechs they were using were just Type 6 machines, and in front of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, they were too weak. A single strike from the beast could kill them all.

Eyeing the fleeing Mechs, the Type 7 Mutant Lizard turned around and opened its huge jaws, firing out its tongue at the skies, and managed to catch onto one of them.

There was a look of despair in the eyes of the pilot as he screamed out, "No!! No!!!"

In that instant, the tongue brought the Mech towards the mouth of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard and its jaws came crushing down, turning both the Mech and pilot into minced parts.

The remaining 6 pilots saw this and quickly flashed away, their faces full of shock and fear.

Liu Kuo eyed the pilot below and thought with a pale expression, "What a terrifying Type 7 Mutant Beast!!"

The pilots had originally thought that with their innate strength, as well as the Mechs, they could slowly injure the Type 7 Mutant Lizard given enough time and energy. They had never imagined the combat strength of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard to be beyond their imagination and lost a comrade in a moment of carelessness.

The 6 Mechs soared up into the skies while utilizing their ranged weapons to fire at the Type 7 Mutant Beast.

In the skies, the battleship was also concentrating its fire, shooting multiple beams down at the Type 7 Mutant Beast.

Countless particle and laser beams slammed at the Mutant Lizard.

In response, the Type 7 Mutant Beast lifted its tail, blocking its injuries, as the beams struck its scales and were dissipated. After all, only the A-grade Particle Beams could pierce through its scales just barely, but not deal much damage to its flesh.

However, in that instant, the Type 7 Mutant Beast's injuries were already recovering at the speed visible to the naked eye.

Unless there were 50 A-Grade battleships concentrating fire on it, one was not enough to deal any damage to the tyrannical beast.

At this time, all of a sudden, there was a huge cloud that appeared in the distance, moving towards them. They were formed of numerous Mutant Birds, and the leader of them was a huge aerial beast that was over 1km in length, its wingspan over 2km, and it had a wyrm head, a crocodile-body, emitting a terrifying aura.

Inside the command center, when Yue Zhong saw the huge beast covering the skies, his face turned ugly, "Not good, this is a Mutant Bird Horde. We have to take care of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, otherwise, if they join hands, it will be a problem."

At that moment, although he originally intended to watch from the side, he quickly vanished and reappeared in the distance.

As for the rest who were in the command center, they were focused on the sudden appearance of the Mutant Birds, their eyes filled with despair and fear, no one knew that Yue Zhong had disappeared.

Liu Kuo was battling, while frantically shouting orders, "Quick! Quick! Quick!! Go all out!! Wipe it out!! With all our power!!"

He was getting anxious, if they had no way of dealing with the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, then this mission was a failure. There would not be anything to gain. Although they had already cleared a few Type 6 Mutant Lizards, they had no way of retrieving the cores, nor did they dare to.

However, regardless of how much Liu Kuo urged, no matter how much the battleship is trying to fire, it was not enough to deal with the Type 7 Mutant Lizard.

All of a sudden, there was a figure that traversed through the cannon fire, pouncing towards the Type 7 Mutant Lizard. It was precisely Yue Zhong.

The reaction speed of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard was extremely fast, as its eyes flashed dangerously, and it twisted its huge mouth to fire its tongue at him.

"Fool."

Yue Zhong looked at the tongue and his eyes flashed with a look of ridicule. He then pulled out his B-Grade Particle Cannon.

At the next instant, a number of particle beams fired at its mouth.

The particle beam pierced through the tongue of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, going through its head, and the blood splattered everywhere.

The particle cannon of Yue Zhong was slightly small, if it were the size of the cannons on the battleships, it would definitely blast its head apart. The weapon in his hands was only enough to cause a 20cm hole.

To a human, such a wound would be fatal, life-threatening even. However, to the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, it was as though someone had used a needle to pierce its head. It was not a huge injury, but it was enough to rile it with pain and agony.

Chapter 890: The Mighty Yue Zhong!

The eyes of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard flashed dangerously, as it pounced towards Yue Zhong.

"Get down!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and stepped forward, appearing on top of the head of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard in a breath. He then slapped down viciously, sending a powerful strike at its head.

Hong!!

With a loud sound, the head of the huge monster was sent into the ground with an earthshaking quake.

This scene was like seeing a small ant sending a huge elephant to the ground. It was truly shocking.

Liu Kuo saw this and his mouth opened wide, his eyes filled with disbelief, "How is this possible? How is this possible? How could a person treat a Type 7 Mutant Beast this way?! Is he still human?!"

What was a Type 7 Mutant Beast? It was an invincible creature, which even their battleships could not do anything against. Such a fearsome beast, which strength surpassed even some Type 8 powerhouses, and could easily destroy mountains, was actually defeated by a human, with a single slap at that. Yue Zhong's might was truly beyond what he could imagine.

"What the hell was that? Is that a human?"

Inside one of the Mechs, the beautiful female pilot looked at Yue Zhong's back, her eyes filled with shock, curiosity, and a hint of reverence, "That was insane! To think there's such an expert, who the hell is he?"

Chu He looked at Yue Zhong floating in the sky, his heart filled with shock, as he gasped towards Jin Tu, "Brother Jin Tu, is that your subordinate Yue Zhong? How is he so strong?"

"So strong!! This is definitely a strength above the Type 7 realm!! Our city lord is truly too powerful!!" Jin Tu eyed the state of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, and his eyes were filled with fervent idolization and pride. Facing Chu He, he smiled mysteriously, not saying anything. He did not know what Yue Zhong was intending, thus, he did not take the initiative to say anything.

Luo Zhi De looked at Yue Zhong, his expression lost, "Impossible!! Impossible!! How could a human be this strong?! Without any external equipment or help, how could a human reach such a level?"

After sending the Mutant Lizard into the ground, Yue Zhong had an icy look, as his right fist formed countless afterimages, revealing over a hundred palms as he struck out at the Type 7 Mutant Lizard.

Under Yue Zhong's frenzied assault, the Type 7 Mutant Lizard was pummeled mercilessly, its brain almost disintegrating as it spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, slumping to the ground a dead corpse.

"Have I become so strong after my evolution?"

Yue Zhong stared at the corpse that was a result of his own flesh physique, and rejoiced in his heart, as he had a sudden urge to roar towards the skies in triumph.

When the Type 7 Mutant Lizard was killed by Yue Zhong, the huge amount of life force was absorbed into his heart.

Yue Zhong had taken a lot of natural resources, and his current internal strength was amassed to a certain breaking point. After absorbing the huge life force of the Type 7 Mutant Lizard, it caused the gold God-Devil Nucleus in his mind to release a huge amount of gold energy, coursing through his body, transforming him from within, strengthening his blood towards a godly state.

At the same time, Yue Zhong could sense a strange knowledge

filling his sea of knowledge, containing some sacred, yet at the same time evil, strong force. Amidst the force, there was the wondrous sense of Domain.

After accepting the new profound knowledge, Yue Zhong comprehended a new Domain, one of a higher tier - God-Devil Domain. This was the Domain of someone possessing the God-Devil Body and it was the strongest Domain possible.

Currently, on the battlefield, almost everyone was staring wide-eyed with shock at Yue Zhong. He was stepping atop the mighty Type 7 Mutant Lizard, which was seemed dead and immobile beneath his feet.

It was an unbelievable scene.

In the air, Liu Kuo stared at Yue Zhong with a contorted expression, his heart filled with jealousy. He was a true favored of the heavens, and was the best Mech pilot, the future hope of humanity! To think there was someone even more outstanding than him, more radiant and eye-catching, he naturally could not stomach it.

At that moment, he gave a maniacal order, "Attack! Kill him for me!! He must be a spy from the Mech Kingdom!!"

As he was the commander of the human resistance, his orders had to be obeyed.

In an instant, the numerous beams shot down from the battleship.

Just before they struck, Yue Zhong opened his eyes, and with a thought, the atmospheric energy around him congealed into a shield.

A Type 7 powerhouse possessed the ability to manipulate the atmospheric energy, and even when Yue Zhong was at the peak of the Type 7 realm, he had already made use of the knowledge gained to control the energy, surpassing even some Type 8

powerhouses. Each of his strikes and movements carried an insurmountable might.

Under the rain of laser beams, the shield seemed to be struck with ripples, and barely after a second, it collapsed and disintegrated.

The beams then struck Yue Zhong, causing it to disintegrate as well.

Liu Kuo's eyes were filled with shock, as he twisted around to search, "That was an afterimage!! Where's his true body?!"

At that moment, Yue Zhong had already transcended space to appear in front of him, his gaze icy as he pointed at the cockpit, "You dare attack me, go to hell."

A terrifying amount of atmospheric energy transformed into a line that pierced through the Mech, blasting towards Liu Kuo's head.

Watching his own Mech crumple under Yue Zhong's attack, Liu Kuo was filled with despair, and as the line of energy was about to pierce through his head, a bright light shone from his body, transforming into a white shield, blocking in front of him.

Dang!

Following a loud sound, Yue Zhong's atmospheric energy strike was actually blocked by the shield.

Having barely escaped death, Liu Kuo screamed out shrilly with a pale face, "Who the hell are you?! Do you know who I am?! I'm Colonel Liu Kuo, son of General Liu Cheng!! You dare make a move on me?! You'll be going against all of humanity! If you were to surrender now and submit to me, I can recommend you to my father, and help you get a decent position!! This is a C-Grade Defensive Equipment, even Type 8 powerhouses will not be able to pierce through them. You won't be able to kill me!"

"Let go of the Colonel!!"

"Scram!!"

Seeing Liu Kuo in danger, the rest of the Mechs quickly shot towards them frantically.

One of them directly adjusted his cannons and aimed all 4 Grade-A Particle Cannons at Yue Zhong and fired.

The one with the wings also shot over, and appeared in front of Yue Zhong and slashed down viciously.

"Just die already!!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and slapped out casually, as the Catching-Dragon Claw grabbed out at the Mechs, directly crushing them with a squeeze.

An energy shield appeared, and the 4 beams slammed into the shield. Both sides met and clashed, without any way of hitting him.

"You think that you can block me with just this? Break!"

Yue Zhong glared at Liu Kuo, and his eyes flashed coldly. He reappeared in front of him, and his right fist brought with it a powerful might, enveloped with his Dou Qi as it slammed into the C-Grade Energy Shield.

Dang!!

Following an earth-shattering roar, the C-Grade shield became dented, as it started to vibrate, on the verge of dissipating. However, it was not a C-Grade shield for nothing and managed to withstand the Type 8 strength of Yue Zhong.

After reaching the peak of the Type 7 realm, Yue Zhong's physique had already exceeded ordinary Type 8 experts, and his combat strength was on another level.

Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!

With a flurry of powerful blasts, Yue Zhong continued to slam over a hundred fists into the C-Grade shield, as it trembled

violently, before finally breaking apart.

He then shot forwards, and shot Liu Kuo a glance, his gaze icy, as he pointed out with his finger. A beam of energy shot through his eyebrows, killing him immediately.

When Liu Kuo died, there was still shock and despair in his eyes. He had not imagined that he would die here.

With a wave of his hands, Yue Zhong then retrieved the white plate in Liu Kuo's hands and he took a good look at it, noticing that it there was a Type 6 Nucleus in it. Beside the nucleus, there were many runes engraved on it.

Yue Zhong's eyes widened in shock, "This is a strange treasure."

Producing a shield capable of blocking a Type 8 powerhouse, with only the power of a Type 6 Nucleus, if more powerful nuclei were utilized, the shield would be of a higher grade.

Chapter 891: Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King!

"Liu Kuo is dead!!"

"What do we do?! With his death, we're going to be buried with him!!"

"It's over!!"

"..."

Seeing Liu Kuo's death, the remaining 4 Mech pilots turned pale with fear, their gazes filled with despair. Liu Kuo had a huge background, the son of one of the 12 generals back at headquarters. Now that he had died at Yue Zhong's hands, unless they killed Yue Zhong, they would die if they went back empty-handed. However, with their strength, it was impossible to kill Yue Zhong.

Having evolved to the peak of the Type 7 realm, Yue Zhong could control the atmosphere and strengthen himself to attack his enemies, protect his body, preventing physical as well as elemental attacks. He was almost like the gods of the legends. Even if the 4 of them charged forth together, he could slap them into pieces with a single slap.

The commander in the A-Grade Battleship stared at Yue Zhong below with fear, not daring to give the order to attack.

The difference between Yue Zhong and the Type 7 Mutant Lizard was that Yue Zhong could fly, in fact, his flying speed was terrifying. On this planet Galastar, his speed was already beyond the speed of sound. He could easily fly above the Mech and destroy it.

Yue Zhong's gaze was blazing, as he swept them a look. The pilots trembled, their hands slick with sweat and they stayed still, not daring to move.

Yue Zhong's gaze suddenly turned towards the distance, noticing the huge horde of aerial Mutant Beasts in the distance already

flying over.

"Evacuate!!"

Seeing Yue Zhong's gaze being distracted, the next highest in command barked out once, piloting his Mech towards the Battleship in the sky.

The other 3 also quickly soared up, trying their best to flee.

"You want to flee? I'll make one of you stay!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 4 of them, his gaze cold, as he grasped out with his Dragon-Catching Claw.

The dragon-shaped energy grabbed onto the lead Mech, pulling him directly towards Yue Zhong.

He then pointed at the Mech, and its frame was crushed and destroyed by an unseen force.

At the same time, the pilot was sucked towards Yue Zhong.

The helmet was wearing a grey helmet, and a black biomechanical enhanced suit and there were mounds at the chest area, while the waist was slim. This was obviously a female pilot.

"Female?" Yue Zhong swept the female pilot a look and did not care. He just wanted one alive, regardless of their gender.

A line of energy wrapped around the pilot, tying her up securely, dragging her about 5m behind Yue Zhong.

Type 7 powerhouses could control the atmosphere already, and it was a technique that only those with a flesh physique could comprehend. While the Type 7 Mechs had terrifying firepower and strong physiques, they did not have the ability to control the atmosphere.

An ordinary Type 7 powerhouse was enough to be a god-figure in the pre-apocalypse Earth, invincible and it would not be an issue to control the entire Earth.

Having reached the peak of the Type 7 realm, Yue Zhong was capable of doing all sorts of thing. With a thought, he could easily stare a Type 2 expert to death. If he were to execute his Art of Fear, with his overbearing aura, anybody of the Type 2 realm and below would be instantly frightened to death.

Seeing the humans intending to escape from the region, the leader of the aerial Mutant Beasts, with a wingspan of over 2km, a worm head, crocodile body, emitting an aura of a sky hegemon, roared out with a thunder-like voice, "Are you trying to escape, puny humans? You dare to hunt the subordinates of this Seat, the Wurm-Crocodile King, today, all of you shall die!!"

The words of the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King had just fallen, as it flapped its wings, causing a huge source of energy to shroud around it. It then disappeared and reappeared mysteriously in front of the battleship, slamming into it.

Hong!!

With a huge roar, the energy shield of the battleship was destroyed, and the entire battleship began to break apart under the assault of the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile. It then exploded in a huge blast.

The explosion then consumed everything within the blast radius, and everyone in it was killed instantly.

The female pilot saw the battleship destroyed, and her face turned pale, her eyes filled with despair, "Type 8... Type 8 Mutant Beast... we're finished. There's no hope! We're going to die!!"

Hearing the voice of the Wurm-Crocodile King, everyone within the command center had a look of despair.

Chu He's voice turned pale, full of despair, "Type 8 Mutant Beast!! Damn it!! We're dead, we're all dead!!"

Luo Zhi De's face was also ashen, as he muttered, "Type 8 Mutant Beast, how the hell did we provoke such a behemoth?!"

A Type 7 Mutant Beast was already almost undefeatable to humans. A Type 8 Mutant Beast was 10 times more terrifying and had the intelligence not lower than humans. Every move of theirs was able to topple mountains and move the seas.

Although there were close to 10,000 elite soldiers in this desert, against the Type 8 Mutant Beast, even if all of them were killed, no one would be able to deal significant damage to the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King.

After it had destroyed the battleship, the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King flew out from the explosion, without a single injury on it.

It then turned around, staring at Yue Zhong as though it was staring at an ant, declaring in contempt, "Human, kneel, and submit to this Seat. Become my slave and you may live on. Otherwise, I will crush you like an ant. This merciful Seat can allow you to be my slave, it is your honor."

The voice of the Wurm-Crocodile rang out like thunder, causing the female pilot behind Yue Zhong to turn pale and spit out blood from the pressure.

Yue Zhong's eyes had a look of sarcasm, as he spoke back, "Just based on you, this huge flying cockroach? I'm just lacking some guard dogs, and you seem suitable. You can kneel yourself and plead, I can lower my standards to take you in. Otherwise, don't blame me later if I tear you apart and turn you into my puppet."

The female pilot looked at Yue Zhong in disbelief, "Is this human insane?"

When the Wurm-Crocodile heard Yue Zhong's ridicule, its eyes flashed with ferocity and savagery, "Good, good, good! It's the first time I've seen a human this arrogant!! When I capture you, I will tear you limb from limb and let you experience the pain that you've never felt before!!"

Under the enraged roar, the Mutant Beast then flapped its wings

and channeled a strong current as it flashed forwards, slamming towards Yue Zhong viciously.

Slamming was one of its trump moves, as its body weighed over a few million tonnes. A single body slam was like an entire mountain, even a powerhouse of the same realm would be turned into a pile of mashed meat under such an attack.

The physique of a Type 8 Mutant Beast was its strongest weapon, with its body alone, it could cause earth-shattering devastation.

Facing that attack, Yue Zhong channeled his energy to send the female pilot towards the ground, while he stepped out, using his left hand to channel Yin, his right to channel Yang, and the atmospheric energy of a few kilometers around distorted, converging on his hands. He then slapped out, as a Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm shot out towards the Wyrms-Crocodile King.

After reaching the peak of Type 7, Yue Zhong's innate potential had risen once more, thus comprehending the 6th Level of the Yin-Yang Palm, raising its might to 64 times.

The powerful Yin-Yang Palm slammed out on the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King.

Hong!!

A mighty shockwave blasted outwards in all directions, as the Yin-Yang Palm broke apart, while the Type 8 Mutant Beast was sent knocked back over a few kilometers itself.

Being beaten back, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King had an incredulous look, as it roared out, "Impossible!! Impossible!! How can a mere human at the Type 7 level be able to push me back?!! Impossible!"

In terms of physique, a Type 8 Mutant Beast was usually stronger than even a Type 9 human powerhouse. Thus, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King was in disbelief, that it could be matched by a mere human.

In the command center, Chu He's mouth was agape, as he muttered, "Strong!! This... is this still.... Human? How could he be so strong?!"

Luo Zhi De was also shocked silent, "Forcing a Type 8 Mutant Beast back?! This is a human?! Could he be one of the gods of legends?!"

Everyone within the command center had similar thoughts as they stared at Yue Zhong in the sky, as though he was a god.

Chapter 892: The Might of the God-Devil Domain!

Yue Zhong frowned at the sight of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King being knocked back a few kilometers, "A Type 8 Mutant Beast is truly terrifying, even after taking this strongest hit of mine, it is actually not injured. Truly a monster."

The Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm was considered the strongest technique of Yue Zhong's. If it was utilized against a Type 8 Mech, it would definitely be able to crush their bodies. However, against the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, it only sent it flying.

"Strong! Human, I've underestimated you. Your strength is something to behold. However, regardless of your strength, you're just a human at the end of the day. If you were a Type 8 powerhouse, I would have turned and fled. However, since you're just a Type 7 powerhouse, today will be the day you die. No one can save you! Now, I shall show you the true terror of a Type 8 expert."

There was a fierce glint in its eyes, as it eyed Yue Zhong with a gaze filled with killing intent. This human was just a Type 7 expert and yet, he could clash against it with his own physique, causing it to be wary and taken aback.

The Type 8 Mutant Beast then sucked in a deep breath, as the atmospheric energy converged and entered its body.

In that instant, within an area of over 10 li, the clouds rolled and winds blew strong. It seemed as though there was a devil present, as the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King emitted a powerful aura, becoming even more terrifying.

Yue Zhong frowned, and stepped forward, flying towards the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, "Not good, I can't let him gather his strength."

In a breath, he had appeared in front of the Mutant Beast.

"Go to hell!!"

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King opened its eyes, filled with a vicious glint as it began to harness a powerful wind energy that seemed capable of tearing the world apart. With it at the center, it then shot it all out at Yue Zhong.

At that split second, countless wind blades sliced into Yue Zhong's body.

In the midst of those wind blades, Yue Zhong continued to slam out his fists against the incoming blades, and under his assault, the wind blades continued to be broken apart.

Even so, the wind blades continued to slice at him, and his Second Order God-Devil Body that was impervious to most physical attacks still suffered some wounds, some so deep that blood flowed freely and his bones could be seen. If it continued, it was likely that he could be sliced up into many pieces.

The seemingly infinite number of wind blades was an innate ability of the Wyrms-Crocodile King, using his ability and comprehension of wind laws to execute. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would be injured under those wind blades.

"A Type 8 Mutant Beast is truly outstanding, not something that can be easily dealt with. Thankfully it has not comprehended any Domain, otherwise, I can only choose to flee."

Amidst the flurry of wind blades, Yue Zhong's gaze turned resolute and with a thought, he immediately activated the strongest trump card which he had recently comprehended, the God-Devil Domain.

In that instant, a vast and powerful golden energy swarmed out, filled with mightiness, sacredness, along with a evil, insidious and dark black energy. One was on the right and the other on the left, as they radiated out of Yue Zhong, forming 2 distinct domains.

Within the golden Domain, it was filled with light, holiness, and beauty, as though there was angels and life abundant in there. In contrast, the dark Domain was filled with endless horrors and ugly demons, releasing hatred, devilish curses and evil.

The moment the God-Devil Domain appeared, the wind blades within a certain region were all dissolved, no longer dealing any damage.

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King saw its wind blades being consumed and was not able to move in its shock, "Domain!! What domain is this?! Why is it so tyrannical?!"

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King had come across a Type 8 powerhouse with a domain before, and it had relied on its powerful innate ability to best the opponent. However, this Yue Zhong and his Domain had been able to break apart the wind blades without a shred of injury, thus, it was filled shock and disbelief.

Yue Zhong glanced at the tornado of wind blades, his eyes flashing coldly and he began to traverse through it freely, with the God-Devil Domain protecting him, absorbing any wind blade that got too close.

In an instant, Yue Zhong had appeared in front of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, his God-Devil Domain expanding out and enveloping the Mutant Beast as well.

When it was pulled in, the evil and violent domain began to invade its body. The numerous devils, monsters, freaks and evil entities pounced onto the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King and began to bite into it.

One particular devil with a row of sharp teeth and a black horn bit viciously on the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile, tearing apart the scale, and immediately injecting some evil energy into the wound, preventing the wound from healing.

Within a breath of time, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile was riddled with injuries, and it was not for its scales being tough, it might have truly been bitten to death.

"Break for me!!"

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King began to roar out frantically, channeling its innate ability, as the wind blades appeared once more, slicing into the various devils and evil beings within the domain, tearing them apart.

However, the dark entities just reformed and continued to pounce onto it.

"Damn it!!"

The eyes of the Wyrms-Crocodile King flashed violently, as it flapped its wings and conjured countless wind blades that surrounded it as it slammed into the border of the domain as violently as it could.

Yue Zhong was just a peak-Type 7 powerhouse, and his God-Devil Domain only enveloped a region of 3km, once the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King could charge right through, then it was possible to escape.

At that moment, the Mutant Beast slammed violently into the edge of the Devil-side of the Domain.

Hong!

Under its attack, the Devil-side of the Domain trembled violently, as though it were on the verge of collapse.

Since it did not succeed on the first try, it continued to slam into the domain violently, shaking it up, as it threatened to collapse.

The God-Devil Domain was incredibly powerful and profound. If it were any other powerhouse of the same realm, they would be trapped and rendered helpless.

However, while the Wyrms-Crocodile King might not have any

domain, it was still one of the most savage and fiercest of the entire Mutant Beast horde. Its combat strength was on another level, enabling it to defeat other Type 8 powerhouses who had comprehended Domain, therefore, it was not so easy to defeat it.

Had Yue Zhong not evolved and comprehended the God-Devil Domain, it was impossible for him to be a match for the Wurm-Crocodile King.

"What a terrifying fellow!!"

Yue Zhong gazed at the struggling Wurm-Crocodile King, and his eyes flashed as he stepped into the God-side of the Domain.

Instantly, the angels, holy servants, saint women and men as well, all began to sing out in beautiful hymns,

Yue Zhong was enveloped by that powerful, godly energy, as it entered him and rose his strength to the initial stage of the Type 8 realm.

The Devil Domain could envelop and invade to wear down an enemy's strength, while the God Domain could erase all afflictions, and strengthen the user, imbue him or her with all sorts of power.

The difference between the initial Type 8 realm and peak Type 7 realm was more than just 20 times, and only a precious treasure could enable a Type 7 powerhouse to possess the strength of a Type 8.

With a flip of Yue Zhong's hand, the powerful Heaven-Piercing Bow appeared in his hands. He pulled once with all his strength, congealing the surrounding Type 8 energy into the ancient and archaic bow. A dense energy appeared at the tip, seemingly capable of destroying anything.

The moment the dark arrow was formed, the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King felt a sense of crisis, as though its death was imminent. It turned around, only to see the devastating arrow blasting towards it.

"NO!!!!"

It let out a roar of despair, at the same time, the arrow blasted onto its head.

At the next moment, a 15m large hole appeared on its head, as blood flowed out profusely.

The various evil entities pounced onto the body and continued to bite on its body ferociously. It was especially so at the huge, bloody wound, where many of the devils tried to burrow in.

The Type 8 Mutant Beast's life form was extremely resilient. Even with such a grievous injury, it was not yet dead. Instead, it continued to struggle violently, channeling its innate ability to kill those monsters. However, since it was injured, its strength had diminished greatly, and it could not exude a might as powerful as before.

Chapter 893: Invincible!

Yue Zhong took a step out, and disappeared from the God-Domain, reappearing on top the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King in the next instant, slamming a fist into its head.

Hong!!

Following a terrifying explosive sound, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King shot down from the sky, slamming into the edge of the Domain, as its precious blood flowed out.

With a thought, Yue Zhong channeled his Blood Manipulation ability, as the huge amount of Type 8 Mutant Beast blood was absorbed forcibly, weakening the Wyrms-Crocodile King even further.

He threw one more punch to injure the Wyrms-Crocodile King further, before flying up towards its head.

"Fool, since you dare get close, you can go to hell!!"

There was a savage glint in the eyes of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, as it opened its huge haws to fire out its tongue at a speed 20 times faster than that of sound.

The gravity of Galastar was 100 times more than Earth, even a Type 8 powerhouse would only be at about 2 or 3 times faster than sound here. It seemed impossible for anyone to be able to defend against that strike from the Wyrms-Crocodile King.

"The stupid one is you! In this God-Devil Domain, I am invincible!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, as he disappeared, and allowed the tongue to slice through his afterimage.

Within the Domain, Yue Zhong could teleport as he wished, appearing anywhere he willed.

In order to defeat Yue Zhong, it would require absolute strength,

for example, the domain of a Type 9 powerhouse. Only then could it be possible to deal with him.

Within a short time, Yue Zhong reappeared atop the head of the Wyrms-Crocodile King, his right fists blasting out like shadows at its head.

The Mutant Beast was pummeled by over a hundred fists, its head slamming into the edge of the Domain, its precious blood essence being absorbed furiously.

Right at this time, the rest of the huge aerial Mutant Beasts arrived.

Seeing their king being suppressed by Yue Zhong, they all charged towards the Domain with sharp shrieks.

Unfortunately, the moment they entered the Domain, they were assaulted by the devilish energy, and anything below the Type 5 realm directly lost their consciousness and dropped to the ground. They were either torn apart or plummeted to their deaths.

The other Mutant Beasts of the Type 5 and Type 6 realms were likewise assaulted by the dark energy. Although they could barely resist, their strength was still reduced to barely 20%. At that moment, they were then assaulted by the demons.

The 2 leaders of the group were 2 Type 7 Mutant Birds, one a Type 7 Green-Scaled Falcon, with an innate ability of wind. The other was a Type 7 Red-Feathered Phoenix, its innate ability fire.

The moment these 2 Type 7 beasts entered Yue Zhong's Devil Domain, they began to channel their wind blades and flames, destroying many of the evil manifestations.

However, the creatures reformed and poured towards the Red-Feathered Phoenix, and the pitiful Type 7 Mutant Beast barely managed to struggle for 2 seconds, before it was reduced to a pile of bones.

Then the Type 7 Green-Scaled Falcon saw this, it drew back in

shock, flapping its wings to beat up a hurricane of wind blades, trying to escape from the Domain.

At this time, there was a huge chain made out of ghastly devil energy, that shot out and wrapped around the Type 7 Green-Scaled Falcon, chaining it up tightly.

The Beast was flustered and panicked, as it urged its innate ability to try and slice through the chain.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

As the wind blade clashed against the devilish chain, it caused numerous clanging sounds, but it was unable to slice through.

Under the petrified gaze of the Type 7 Green-Scaled Falcon, numerous devils and monsters then pounced towards it, as they tore it apart, and it met with the same fate as its companion.

Seeing how the 2 Type 7 Mutant Beasts were easily annihilated by Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain, the other Mutant Beasts outside began to feel a sense of fear.

Suddenly, there was a loud howl that emitted from within the flock of Mutant Birds.

The Mutant Birds changed their formation, no longer charging into the Domain, instead, they began to urge their innate abilities to attack the Domain.

Wind blades, ice shards, flames, lightning, all sorts of innate abilities were thrown at Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain.

There were over 600,000 Mutant Birds in the skies, and with their joint attack, even a peak-Type 8 powerhouse would be heavily injured. When numbers reached a certain point, it would also be devastating.

The 600,000 Mutant Beasts threw all their attacks, if it were on Earth, it would be enough to sink an entire continent. Their innate abilities entered Yue Zhong's Domain, only to be devoured by the

demonic manifestations, without harming Yue Zhong at all.

However, the combined force was enough to shake the Domain a little, as though there was the inkling of damage.

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King roared out madly, "LET ME OUT!! Human!! If you let me go, I will take my subordinates and leave!! Today's matters will be forgotten. Otherwise, when my army destroys your Domain, all that shall await you will be death!!"

The life force of this Type 8 Mutant Beast was truly tenacious, even after being bitten and devoured for so long, it was still not dead.

Yue Zhong eyed the horde, before sweeping the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King a look as he laughed coldly, "Wyrms-Crocodile King, today, you're definitely going to die. Even your subordinates would not be able to save you. Furthermore, they will all, become my nourishment."

After that, he flickered from his position and brought the entire Domain to envelop the horde in the skies. The 2 sides of the Domain began to get agitated, one side holy the other dark, forming a powerful whirlpool that sucked in all the Mutant Birds. The moment they came in contact, they were ground away by the opposing forces and manifestations.

Yue Zhong soared around unbridled in the midst of the Mutant Beasts, waving his hands and channeling the Blood Manipulation ability, forming a long blood river of over 10km in length, exuding an evil stench.

The river coiled and wrapped up the Mutant Birds within itself, before wringing once, and countless corpses fell out of the skies. As it absorbed such an abundance of blood essence, it continued to evolve and expand.

Within the flock, there were a few Mutant Birds with flame-

related abilities. However, their output was too weak. Although they managed to burn a few parts of the Blood River, they were still swept up and sucked dry of their blood.

Yue Zhong was like a death reaper, culling the Mutant Birds by the droves. A huge amount of life force continued to tunnel into his body, accumulating slowly.

=

Under his frenzied slaughter, the Mutant Birds were being culled at a visible rate.

"That is too sick! How is this human so strong? He's just a Type 7 powerhouse!! How is it possible?" The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King saw its subordinates dying at Yue Zhong's hands and finally felt a sense of fear. It was clear, that if Yue Zhong continued like this, all 600,000 of the Mutant Birds would be slaughtered.

As Yue Zhong soared, he did not forget to assault the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, his right fist slamming into the head of the Type 8 Mutant Beast, the sounds of impact ringing loudly as though thunder was rife.

Having suffered over thousands of blows from Yue Zhong, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King could feel its life force ebbing away, and in fear, it could not help but plead, "Please, stop!! Any more and I will die!! I'm willing to submit!! Don't hit me anymore!! I will really die!!"

Currently, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King knew that if it fought on, it would only die. It had undergone numerous tribulations, climbing to its current stage after much difficulty. It had a long life, with monstrous strength, and had high prestige. It truly did not wish to perish.

When Yue Zhong heard this, he frowned and began to ponder, weighing the pros and cons. He was already at the peak of the Type 7 realm, barely half a step into the Type 8 realm. His God-Devil

Body was unparalleled, his combat strength tyrannical, and it could be considered the perfect physique, even more powerful than Mutant Beasts. It had limitless potential. At the same time, it was truly hard to raise its strength and increase its level.

As he weighed his options, if he wanted to reach the Type 8 realm, it would require the killing of a Type 9 powerhouse, or at least 20 Type 8 Mutant Beasts, otherwise, it would be too difficult.

Seeing Yue Zhong's hesitation, the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King hurried to pipe in, "Don't kill me. I'm the King of the Wurm division, and there are over 1.5 million subordinates under me. They are all at the Type 3 stage and above. By subjugating me, you will have gained 1.5 million subordinates. Furthermore, the resources I have accumulated in these thousands of years will be yours."

Yue Zhong pondered before making his decision, "Alright. This Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King is also something else, if it truly obeys me, I can use it to guard China, and summon it to work together in killing other Type 8 powerhouses. Killing it might not be a huge boost to my strength anyway."

Chapter 894: Taming the Wyrms-Crocodile King!

Yue Zhong barked out once, channeling his Beast Taming Technique, as a single rune entered the head of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, "Accept this imprint, without resistance, otherwise I'll kill you."

With the terrifying might of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, as long as it willed it, it could disintegrate the rune. However, in order to survive, it gritted its teeth, watching wide-eyed as the rune branded onto its soul, merging with it.

At the moment the rune merged with the soul of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, both sides immediately felt the connection form between them.

In that instant, the Wyrms-Crocodile King also felt a sense of familiarity, respect, and admiration for Yue Zhong, whom it had hated previously, as it wagged its tail, "Master, I've already become your pet, and I will do my best to fight for you in the future."

"Very good, go out and subdue the army outside."

Yue Zhong laughed out in satisfaction, and retracted the Devil Domain from around the Wyrms-Crocodile King while sending it out of the Domain.

The devilish energy was extracted fully from the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, as it soared in the air, and took in a deep breath. The surrounding atmospheric energy within the region of a few li was sucked into its body.

It then began to regenerate at an incredible speed with the help of the atmospheric energy. The small wounds quickly closed up and healed, while the huge wound due to the Heaven-Piercing Bow was regenerating at a visible speed.

The recovery rate of Type 8 Mutant Beasts was truly shocking, as

long as the assault was not imbued with laws, or its head or heart had not been destroyed, it could recover quickly. Of course, grievous injuries could also weaken their strength greatly.

After escaping the Devil Domain, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King became lively, and its combat strength reached about 70% of its optimal condition.

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King then let out a huge roar in the Beast language, "Stop all attacks!!"

After hearing that order, the horde of aerial Mutant Beasts immediately ceased casting their innate abilities.

"Let's return!!"

The Wyrms-Crocodile King also did not explain, immediately giving the order and flapping its mighty wings, leading the rest of the aerial Mutant Beasts towards their base.

Since it was the ruler of all the flying beasts, they had to obey its commands. Unless there were other Type 7 Mutant Beasts of other variants, otherwise, only humans would suspect and question its orders.

"They're finally gone!!"

Seeing the dense horde of Mutant Beasts flying off, the humans below all heaved a sigh of relief.

Yue Zhong swept a glance at the direction where the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King flew off, before turning around and flying towards the command center himself. The female pilot who had been tied up by him was also retrieved and dragged behind him about 10m away,

When he stepped into the command center, the gazes of the people present were filled with respect, idolization, and awe. This man had killed Type 7 Mutant Beasts like it was nothing and chased away a Type 8 Mutant Beast as though it was a dog. In the history of the humans on Galastar, there had never been such a

perverted existence before. They were naturally blown away.

Chu He came up to Yue Zhong, asking respectfully, "Lord, may I ask, who are you?!"

The rest also looked over in curiosity and awe, awaiting his reply.

Yue Zhong surveyed his surroundings, as he emitted a powerful pressure, causing them to feel a shortage of breath, and a huge urge to kneel

His gaze was cold as he asked, "I'm Yue Zhong, the new City Mayor of City 67. Chu He, Luo Zhi De, will your bases submit to me, or choose death?"

Chu He and Luo Zhi De had plenty of human survivors belonging to their bases, and it was considered a resource of sorts. Yue Zhong would definitely not let them pass by, and if they did not know their place, he did not mind slapping them to death.

With his current strength, just a finger was enough to squash the both of them.

Chu He's mind whirled, as he quickly made a decision, getting down on a single knee, "Chu He is willing to serve you, Lord!"

Luo Zhi De hesitated for barely a moment, as his gaze met Yue Zhong's, which was filled with killing intent and felt his heart clench with fear. He quickly got down on his knees and swore fealty, "Luo Zhi De is willing to serve you, Lord."

Yue Zhong then waved his hands, as 2 communication devices shot to the both of their hands, "Very good, go and organize your men immediately. Prepare to move at any moment's notice. The devices are for you, I will contact you with orders when the moment comes."

After he had settled matters with them, he waved his hands and brought the pilot in front of him. With a thought, a powerful coil of energy wrapped around the helmet of the pilot.

Crack!

With a loud, clear sound, the helmet of the pilot was crushed, revealing a beautiful face with a pale expression.

Yue Zhong stared at the beautiful pilot and uttered coldly, "Where is the headquarters?"

She shook her head and replied, "Sir Yue Zhong, I know your combat strength is unparalleled. However, if you want to obtain the information about the headquarters from me, it is impossible. In my brain, there is a chip implanted, as long as I am about to reveal the location to anybody, it will go off. You will not gain anything."

In Galastar, the human resistance could evade annihilation for countless years was because they had many methods to prevent any information leak. After all, the brainwashing technology of the Mechs was widely known. Any captured human would become a traitor automatically, regardless whether they were willing or not. If the humans did not have any measures in place, they would have long since been tracked down and obliterated.

Of course, another important reason was that the Mech Emperor did not really hold the humans in regard. Thus, he did not specifically target or suppress the humans. The Type 8 Mech Lords naturally did not bother about the humans either. If they were truly serious and expended their forces and resources to slaughter with the humans, then within a year, at least 90% of the humans on Galastar would perish.

"Really? That chip in your brain, I'll remove it right now."

With a smirk, Yue Zhong pointed at the beautiful pilot, and a sharp energy shot through her brain accurately and precisely, revealing a small cut.

A small smart chip then shot out from the wound with some blood.

With Bai Yi's help, Yue Zhong easily sealed the self-destructability of the chip. With a finger, he then caused a lump of nano-mechanical cells to enter the wound, forming the shape of the chip as it replaced the original chip.

All these happened extremely fast, in just a mere second, the beautiful pilot just felt a minor stab of pain and Yue Zhong had already completed the operation.

After the smart chip was removed and replaced with some nano cells, it caused some minor discomfort to the female pilot, but nothing major.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "I've already taken out the smart chip, you can talk now, right? If you don't, I can only employ some special methods to make you talk. But by then, you'd be no different from dead."

The pilot stared at the chip in Yue Zhong's hands, covered in her blood, and her eyes were filled with shock.

She took a breath, before replying quickly, "I'm called Pova, a major of the human headquarters, and I'm a member of the elite Hunting Leopard Assault Force. I truly do not know where the headquarters is, the only thing I know is how to enter headquarters. At about a hundred kilometers west from here, there is a small mountain. In it, there is a small tunnel. By boarding the prepared track, we can return to headquarters."

Pova saw the chip that Yue Zhong had retrieved and knew that Yue Zhong was unfathomable. She was also clear that if she insisted on not saying, then Yue Zhong would have means to force her to say. In any case, she was not particularly loyal to headquarters anyway.

Yue Zhong then frowned, "Not right, how did your battleship arrive then?"

She replied swiftly, "We boarded the train out here, and followed

instructions from headquarters to retrieve the A-Grade Battleship from some armory. We were told not to board the battleship on our return, instead, we are to board the prepared train. Furthermore, the train will ascertain our identity before going back. If there are outsiders, it will be impossible to go in."

"Oh? Interesting! Let's go, we're heading to headquarters."

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, before turning around and shot towards the distance.

At the same time, an energy chain wrapped around Pova, pulling her behind him.

As they continued on their way, within moments, Yue Zhong had already arrived at the mountain specified by Pova.

About 300m deep inside the mountain, there was a long track laid far into the distance, while a huge silver train of about 100m in length rested on the track.

Near the track, there were over 50 soldiers dressed in silver uniforms and equipped with all sorts of weapons as they patrolled and surveyed their surroundings.

Chapter 895: Entering Headquarters!

Yue Zhong and Pova entered the tunnel, only to be surrounded by 8 soldiers.

The leader, a burly man, shot them a stern glare and barked, "Show your identifications."

"Go to sleep!!"

Yue Zhong swept them a glance and muttered coldly, as a powerful will pressed down upon them.

In that instant, the soldiers guarding the tunnel were knocked out by the pressure.

Yue Zhong then pointed at those soldiers, as runes shot out and entered their brains, turning them all into puppets.

The soldier that had tried to block Yue Zhong earlier, saluted and said, "Qian Hao greets Master!"

The rest of the soldiers also got on their feet and saluted Yue Zhong uniformly, "Greetings Master!"

Pova, who had been witnessing all these from the side, turned pale, as she thought back with fear, "Terrifying!! What a strange power!! If I had not revealed the headquarters earlier, I would have been like these soldiers."

Yue Zhong spoke to Qian Hao, "I want to go to headquarters, lead the way."

Qian Hao immediately replied, "Master, follow me."

Under Qian Hao's guidance, Yue Zhong and Pova then embarked the silver train.

When they entered, Pova exclaimed in surprise, "What's going on? I remember that the train itself will conduct another check the moment we enter, how come there's nothing now?!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, and did not say much. With Bai Yi, his Super A.I as long as it was not a sentient being on the level of the Type 9 Mech Emperor, it was impossible for any computerized system to scan him.

The inside of the train was broad and wide, equipped with numerous facilities and amenities."

"Excuse me, what would you like to drink? We have glass fruit juice, heaven wine, white grape wine, red grape wine, frozen cloud fruit juice,..."

Yue Zhong had just sat down when a sweet female voice sounded out from the voice box beside his seat.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Please serve me glass fruit juice!"

His words had barely been spoken when a box opened up beside him, revealing a glass of blue juice.

After he chose the fruit juice, the voice rang out once more, "Excuse me, would you like something to eat? Here, we have synthetic fried beef rice, Type 4 Mutant Green Fish sashimi, Braised Type 3 Mutant Bear Paw."

"It's alright."

The voice sounded once more, "Thank you for your time, if you need more service, just press the button on your right side, and you will summon me. I wish you a pleasant journey. Goodbye."

Yue Zhong sighed, "The service here is really different. One can even get to enjoy Type 3 Mutant Beast meat here. So extravagant."

Even the upper echelons of City 67 seldom get to eat Type 3 Mutant Beast meat. Their main courses were usually meat of the lower-leveled types.

A Mutant Beast's combat strength far surpassed humans, and it was easy for a Type 3 Mutant Beast to deal with a Type 4 human powerhouse. Even a Type 5 human expert might have difficulties

dealing with a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

There were indeed Type 5 human powerhouses in City 67 that had the confidence to deal with Type 3 Mutant Beasts, however, on Planet Galastar, the Type 3 Mutant Beasts all resided in areas where even more treacherous elements were present. Under such circumstances, the Type 5 human powerhouses could not raise any waves. They would be easily eliminated. Hence, in the various underground cities, Type 3 Mutant Beast meat was a precious luxury. They were only able to purchase some with the exchange of countless gifts and resources to the headquarters.

Pova sat obediently opposite Yue Zhong, ordering a glass fruit juice as well, sipping it quietly.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Tell me all you know about the headquarters."

Pova replied, "Yes, Master! Currently, the lord of the headquarters is Green Drake Emperor Ogg, he is a powerhouse at the peak of the Type 7 realm, the strongest person in all of the headquarters. At the same time, he is the most talented Mech pilot, possessing a Type 8 Combat Mech, the Green Drake Mech.

Yue Zhong frowned, and interrupted, "Wait a minute, based on the intel I obtained previously, wasn't there only 3 Type 6 experts in your base? How come there's suddenly a Type 7 powerhouse?"

Pova laughed and began to explain, "Sir. The Mech Kingdom has never allowed strong human powerhouses to exist. Once it is discovered that we have Type 7 experts, they would deploy their forces to deal with us. In these thousands of years, it is not that there were no Type 7 powerhouses, but they were exterminated by the Mech Kingdom."

"In order to prevent further exterminations, once there's anybody who reached the Type 7 realm, they would quickly hide within the deepest corner of our City of Hope, and no longer allowed to walk the surface. In truth, within these thousands of

years, there are already 60 Type 6 and 3 Type 7 powerhouses. However, we have 'let slip' that there are only 3 Type 6 powerhouses. This is to prevent attention on us."

Yue Zhong finally understood, the humans were truly too weak on Planet Galastar. If the Mech Kingdom were to deploy all their forces, it would be sufficient to wipe out the resistance. In order to prevent such an outcome, those powerhouses that reached the Type 7 realm had no choice but to hide for the rest of their lives.

He thought silently, "As expected, control cannot fall to other species. A Type 7 powerhouse would be a tyrannical force anywhere in the universe, yet on this Galastar, they're forced to live underground like rats. They have no way of moving on the surface, and it truly is pitiful. If the humans on Earth were defeated, the best case scenario would be like rats, no longer seeing the light of day."

Pova continued to talk about the situation in headquarters, revealing all she knew.

In the City of Hope, the human population reached over a million. There were 3 rulers in the city, namely the Green Drake Emperor, the Red Tiger Emperor, and the Silver Fox Emperor.

The strongest was the Green Drake Emperor who possessed a Type 8 Mech. This was also the only Type 8 Mech in the possessions of humans. The Red Tiger Emperor and Silver Fox Emperor possessed 2 peak-Type 7 Mechs, equipped with some Type 8 parts. If they went all out, they were able to injured Type 8 powerhouses.

Other than these 3 peak experts, the other Type 6 powerhouses made up the cabinet and possessed some form of authority.

The City of Hope was different from the other human underground cities, their technology advanced, not losing to any cities of the Mech Kingdom. At the same time, they had plenty of talented pilots and numerous powerhouses. Just the number of

Type 5 experts numbered over 600.

The City of Hope was constructed with the countless accumulated wealth throughout the age, just to be on par with an ordinary Mech Kingdom city. If it were a frontal clash, the Mech Kingdom could easily annihilate this City of Hope.

Pova then hesitated before asking carefully, "Sir, this time, what is your motive for going to the headquarters?"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, filled with confidence, "Of course, it is to bring it all under my control."

If it were in the past, he might be helpless towards this secretive human headquarters. However, he was already at the peak of the Type 7 realm and had comprehended the God-Devil Domain. He could even summon a Type 8 Mutant Beast to fight alongside him. His current strength was more than enough to deal with this human headquarters. There was nothing to fear.

Pova's face changed and did not say anything in the end. The moment she thought of the God-Devil Domain that that had subdued even the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, she knew that no one in headquarters was a match for him.

The train traversed for a long time, finally coming to a stop after a few hours, as the sweet voice sounded, "We have arrived at headquarters! We have arrived at headquarters! Please get off!"

Yue Zhong and Pova walked out the train in big strides.

Near the train station, there was a squadron of mech pilots, and when they saw Yue Zhong and Pova, they quickly surrounded them.

The leader, a blond-haired, blue-eyed man with a helmet and a ray gun stared at Yue Zhong warily, pointing his gun at him as he barked out, "Who are you?! How come I've never seen you before?"

With his lead, the rest of the soldiers also adjusted their aim, pointing at Yue Zhong with cautious and wary expressions.

There were many sentient Mechs of the Mech Kingdom, and since they were electronic bodies, many sensors and scans were useless to them. Hence, within the City of Hope, many key locations were protected by human experts.

Yue Zhong swept them a look, and barked out coldly, "Kneel!"

At that instant, a powerful will radiated out, enveloping the human troops.

The soldiers felt their bodies sinking, and there was an incomparable fear that arose in them, as they quickly got on the ground, afraid.

At that moment, all of their faces were filled with shock and fear, they had never come across such a terrifying person before. Just a single sentence was able to subjugate all of them, dispersing their intent to fight, leaving only fear.

This was a technique that Yue Zhong learned from the attack from the Type 9 9-headed Dragonhawk.

Chapter 896: Green Drake Emperor Ogg!

"There's no point in bullying these ordinary folk, let's go!"

Yue Zhong shot those kneeling soldiers a look, and stepped out, bringing Pova with him as he soared out of the train station.

"Quick! Raise the alarm!!" The leader wiped his cold sweat as he bellowed in rage, and pressed the alarm.

At that moment, the entire train station began blaring with an ear-piercing sound.

As the alarms rang, a number of soldiers began rushing out of secret doors, converging on the location with dozens of Mechs.

Numerous alloy doorways also began closing, impeding Yue Zhong's advance.

Hong!

His fists slammed out into the alloy door, as a powerful strength burst out, destroying the alloy door.

As he continued charging forward, his fists met the doors in his way, reducing them to rubble, rendering them useless.

After a few breaths' of time, Yue Zhong charged out of the train station, straight into the City of Hope, and saw the technology of the human race of Planet Galastar.

The City of Hope was about 300m tall, and at the ceiling of the cavern, was an artificial sun, illuminating the city below, giving the illusion of sunlight.

On top of that, there was also various automated weapons, scanners, and mini-satellites.

Although this city was underground, it encompassed a large area, of about 2million square kilometers. All along the ground were many routes, forming a huge transport network, allowing a smooth traffic system in the City of Hope.

Furthermore, there were also some luxurious-looking flying shuttles in the air, and these were the modes of transport for the rich in the City of Hope, their value sky-high.

Within the City of Hope, there were various modern-looking skyscrapers, while the streets were clean and green. Robots were in charge of maintaining cleanliness, while robot enforcers kept the streets safe.

Compared to this city, City 67 was basically not even comparable to a village, there was simply too vast a difference between both cities.

Pova pointed to a 100m-tall building, with numerous bold and beautiful engravings, and said, "That's the residence of the Green Drake Emperor."

"It's there then?" Yue Zhong swept the building a glance and immediately made for that direction.

After flying for about half an hour, Yue Zhong arrived in front of the building. He channeled the atmospheric energy to congeal a Dragon-Catching Claw, grabbing at the tower, while barking out in a sonorous voice, "Green Drake Emperor Ogg, get the hell out!!"

Hong!

The dragon-shaped force bit on the tower harshly, causing it to tremble. Even the ground seemed to crack slightly, as though Yue Zhong's move was truly dragging it up from the Earth.

"Who the hell is that, to actually seek trouble with the Green Drake Emperor?"

"Heavens, the Green Drake Tower was actually attacked by someone, this guy wants to pull it out?! That's too fearsome!!"

"The Green Drake Tower is actually moving!! Is he still human?!"

"Freak, this fellow's definitely a freak!!"

" ... "

Seeing the Green Drake Tower about to be pulled out, all the nearby humans watched, dumbfounded, their eyes filled with shock.

The tower was over a hundred meter, its weight easily over a hundred million tonnes. It was basically impossible for anybody to be able to even shift it in the slightest. Yet, with Yue Zhong's appearance, he had smashed through that perception, causing them to doubt their own eyes.

"Audacious! Someone dares assault our City of Hope, you shall die!!"

Right at this time, following an enraged roar, a squadron of 30 Type 6 Mechs and 1 single Type 7 Mech flew out from the Green Drake Tower.

When they flew out, they adjusted their weapons and began firing wildly at Yue Zhong.

"Come over here!!"

With a flicker of his body, Yue Zhong easily dodged the incoming attacks and grabbed out while channeling the atmospheric energy, aiming at the various Mechs.

Yue Zhong's technique was profound, as he quickly grabbed onto a dozen of them within a short time, pulling them towards himself.

Crash!

With a thought, the cockpits of the dozen captured Mechs burst open, and the pilots within were dragged out and chained by his energy.

'Vanquish!!'

The pilot of the Type 7 Mech was a middle-aged pilot, at the Type 6 realm. At the moment his cockpit was destroyed, he quickly tore himself free from the chain. With a savage glint in his eyes, he burst forth with a Green Tooth Blade made from the tooth of a

Type 7 Mutant Beast.

With an icy light, Yue Zhong pointed at the forehead of the pilot, "Stubborn, you can turn into a puppet then!"

"Damn it!! How do I dodge? How do I dodge?"

Facing that simple finger, the Type 6 powerhouse felt like an entire mountain was crushing down on him. Cold sweat broke out and he tried his best to evade, but it seemed like the finger was still focused on his forehead.

A powerful strike containing Yue Zhong's will then slammed into the head of the Type 6 powerhouse, knocking him out, as a Type 6 Puppet Rune entered his soul.

When he had swept through the treasury of the Mech Kingdom, he had obtained a huge amount of resources, becoming more than a thousand times richer than he previously was, and the number of Type 6 nuclei was in the millions.

Galastar was larger than Earth after all. At the same time, while the Mutant Beasts could not evolve as fast as those on Earth, it was still a decent environment. Every dangerous region harbored at least over 10 million Mutant Beasts, with a large number of Type 6 ones. Of the entire Galastar, it was likely that the number of Type 6 Mutant Beasts were over 10 million as well.

The Mech Kingdom had ruled over Galastar for thousands of years. Every few years, they would launch an assault on the dangerous regions, gobbling up the nuclei in order to manufacture even more Mech Beasts and raise the new generation of experts. Over the ages, the total haul had been impressive, and if it was not for most of them being used in the manufacture of Mech Beasts and other weapons, the amount that Yue Zhong had gained would have been more.

"Sleep!"

With a loud bark, a powerful will pressed down on the rest of the

Mech pilots, knocking them out. At the same time, he sent out a number of Puppet Runes into their heads.

The Type 6 human expert stirred awake, immediately saluting Yue Zhong, "Ge Luo greets Master!"

The rest of the pilots also woke up, and greeted Yue Zhong, "Greetings, Master!"

"Go back." He waved his hands and sent the pilots back into their Mechs with a simple wave of his hands.

The Mechs then soared into the sky, guarding Yue Zhong.

After raising such a commotion, the City of Hope would definitely not be in the dark. Within seconds, the automated weapons on the ceilings began to emerge, and aimed for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong swept them a cold look as he ordered, "Attack!"

At that moment, the automated weapons began firing, but their target had suddenly switched to the Green Drake Tower.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Amidst the flurry of attacks, the tower, which had been constructed out of super alloys, began to break apart, as pieces shattered and fell out of the sky.

"I'm the Green Drake Emperor Ogg, dare I ask which Mech Lord from the Mech Kingdom has come to attack my City of Hope?"

There was a loud voice, filled with arrogance and pride, as a 10m-long Mech that looked like a Green Drake emerged, equipped with C-Grade weapons and defense systems. It exuded a terrifying aura of a Type 8 expert, as its eyes shone and stared fixedly at Yue Zhong.

The Mech Kingdom dominated the entire Galastar and was considered invincible. Even without the Type 9 Mech Emperor, their strength combined was still sufficient to deal with a Type 9

powerhouse.

With the masses of Mech Beasts, even a Type 9 powerhouse would have some fear. The Mech Kingdom could easily conquer a few planets and wipe out thousands of civilizations, not just because of the Type 9 Mech Emperor, but also their seemingly unlimited army.

Although the Green Drake Emperor was able to reach the Type 8 realm with the Mech he was controlling, he was still filled with fear towards the Mech Kingdom. Yue Zhong could control the automated defense of the City of Hope, such a strength, was likely that of a Type 8 Mech Lord.

Yue Zhong swept him a cold look and gave him a tyrannical order, "I'm Yue Zhong, a human! Today, I've come to the City of Hope, and I want you 3 Emperors to submit to me. I will gather all of the humans on Galastar to face off against the Mech Kingdom. Ogg, submit to me, fight for me, and you will gain prestige and honor. Your name and deeds would be left in the annals of history. If you do not submit, then today will be the day you die!"

Since Yue Zhong was capable of such might, he no longer needed to rely on various methods to negotiate or discuss. He could rely on his own strength to dominate and crush any resistance.

Chapter 897: Suppressing the 3 Emperors!

Right at this moment, a bright red beam shot out from the side. A sharp claw appeared out of thin air and grabbed towards Yue Zhong, "What an arrogant fellow. You're just a mere Type 7 powerhouse and you actually want to threaten us? Truly ignorant. Become my slave!"

The person behind the sudden attack was the Type 7 Red Tiger Emperor, Shaka, and he had been laying in wait. When he saw Yue Zhong exerting his strength, he immediately threw out his attack. With this pounce, it was as though there was a ferocious might surging downwards, reaching the speed of Mach-6, appearing beside Yue Zhong in a flash. Its claw was truly vicious, capable of even tearing a Type 8 powerhouse to pieces.

"Scram!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and with a flicker, he became like a specter as he threw out a fist of his own towards the Red Tiger Emperor Shaka.

There was a look of shock in the Red Tiger Emperor's eyes. He urged his thoughts as a B-Grade Energy Shield appeared, blocking in front of him.

Hong!

With an earthshaking roar, the B-Grade shield immediately collapsed under that one strike.

Shocked, the Red Tiger Emperor muttered, "How is this possible? He's just a mere Type 7 powerhouse, how the hell did he destroy my shield?!"

Yue Zhong then appeared in front of the cockpit in the next breath, smashing out with another powerful fist.

The face of Shaka fell, as another golden shield congealed in front of the cockpit, defending against the imminent strike.

"Stay your hand!!"

The Green Drake Emperor saw how Yue Zhong had destroyed the shield of the Red Tiger Emperor in one fist and his face fell. He piloted his Green Drake Mech and shot towards Yue Zhong in a flash of green light. Within a second, he was there, and he slashed out viciously.

At the same time, a bright alloy chain burst out from the ground, coiling towards Yue Zhong, as a huge 10m-long silver fox was controlling it.

The combined attack of the Green Drake Emperor and Silver Fox Emperor, even if it were a Type 8 powerhouse, it would be a fatal strike.

Yue Zhong did not even turn around. With a thought, his God-Devil Domain was activated and it enveloped the Red Tiger and Green Drake Emperors.

The silver chain that had burst out from the ground was wrapped by the God Domain, which was instantly torn apart by the numerous angelic beings.

As for the Green Drake Emperor, who was enveloped in the Devil Domain, as his claw swiped past Yue Zhong, the 'Yue Zhong' disintegrated, disappearing together with the Red Tiger Emperor.

In shock, the Green Drake Emperor felt his body sink enveloped by a terrifying killing intent, and in his panic and rage, he channeled his C-Grade Energy Shield to protect himself.

"Warning! Warning! With the current energy consumption, the shield will last for another 345 seconds at most."

The moment the shield appeared, the devilish energy was already assaulting the shield, wearing it down. The system was also warning the Green Drake Emperor.

He was full of shock, "What kind of secret technique is this?! How is it so powerful?"

With his strength, even if he had to battle for an entire day, the C3-Grade shield could hold out. However, the moment he was sucked into the Devil Domain, it could only withstand for 345 seconds, this showed the terrifying might of the Domain.

In the Domain, the devils continued to swarm over, biting crazily and slamming into the shield, whittling it down.

The Green Drake Emperor continued to struggle painfully within, urging the Mech to slaughter the demons that came their way while its strength ebbed away, to no avail.

"Damn it! Break for me!!"

The Green Drake Emperor was also a decisive expert, even in the face of danger, he chose to risk it all out. The Green Drake Mech opened its huge jaws as a powerful force gathered at its mouth.

The next instant, a bright beam of light shot out from its mouth, right at the edge of the domain.

This was a strike from the C3-Grade Particle Cannon, and it was able to destroy all the demonic entities.

Hong!

After slaughtering numerous devils, the particle beam slammed into the side of the Domain in a frightening blast, shaking the entire Domain, as over 200 monstrous entities immediately dispersed.

However, after that shudder, the Domain regained its calm, and the devilish energy swarmed once more, congealing countless demons that pounced onto the Green Drake Mech once again.

"Damn it, Yue Zhong!!" There was a look of despair in the eyes of the Green Drake Emperor right now. The C3-Grade particle cannon was his strongest weapon and could kill even a Type 8 powerhouse. And yet, within this Domain, it was not even able to scratch the sides of the domain.

However, the Green Drake Emperor was not a powerhouse just for show. With an enraged roar, he charged towards the skies, trying his best to break out of this insidious Domain.

"It's useless, stop struggling, you shall become my puppet too!!"

With a furious bark, Yue zhong appeared at the area where the shield was the weakest, his right fist punching out in countless shadows, blasting the shield with over a hundred strikes at one go.

Under the flurry of attacks, the C3-Grade shield immediately broke apart. He then disappeared and charged right in front of the cockpit, slashing out and tearing apart the armor, before grabbing onto the neck of the Green Drake Emperor, dragging him out.

"Become my puppet!"

Yue Zhong then swept a look at the burly but handsome man in front of him. He emitted a cold gaze as a powerful will enveloped the Green Drake Emperor in front of him, knocking him out. At the same time, he sent a Type 7 Puppet Rune into his head.

Right now, all Yue Zhong wanted was to hurry back to Earth, and convert the resources on hand to combat strength, and bolster the human forces. He did not have so much time as to waste time with the City of Hope.

From the direction the upper echelons had been doing, these 3 Emperors were not any decent characters. Thus, he did not have any reservations turning them into his puppets.

The Green Drake Emperor recovered quickly, and expressed his loyalty, "Ogg greets Master!!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong retracted the God-Devil Domain back into his body.

The Domain was powerful, but it consumed much of his energy as well. If it was not for the fact that he could manipulate the atmospheric energy around him after reaching the Type 7 realm, he would not have been able to maintain the Domain for long.

It was rare for any expert to comprehend Domain before the Type 8 realm. One of the main reason was that it consumed too much power. It was only because Yue Zhong possessed the God-Devil Body that it allowed him to bypass that limitation and comprehended Domains to skip ranks and challenge opponents stronger than him.

The moment Yue Zhong kept his Domain, he stood straight with the Green Drake Emperor and the Red Tiger Emperor both standing beside him.

The Green Drake Emperor Ogg looked downward and barked, "Silver Fox Emperor, both the Red Tiger Emperor and myself have decided to serve Lord Yue Zhong till our deaths. From now on, we will give our utmost to his cause. Hurry and kneel!"

"What? The Green Drake Emperor submitted to Yue Zhong?"

"How did it become like this? 2 of the Emperors actually submitted to someone who had just come in!!"

"..."

Witnessing this, the soldiers below were all shocked, and their thoughts were thrown into disarray.

Both of them were the highest points of authority within the City of Hope. With their submission, $\frac{2}{3}$ of the control had already gone over to Yue Zhong. The soldiers were naturally anxious.

Most of the piloted Mechs who had flown over also stopped in confusion, not knowing what to do.

"Ogg, are you insane? How can you submit to some guy with an unknown background?! From now on, I hereby announce that you are no longer part of..."

Before his words were finished, Yue Zhong's eyes glinted coldly as he turned into a flash of light and shot down, landing on the ground. The impact caused the ground to split, revealing a Silver Fox Mech hidden beneath.

Amidst the shocked gaze of the piloting Silver Fox Emperor, Yue Zhong sent a fist that smashed into the cockpit, revealing a sexy and mature female expert. His strength then surged forth, knocking her out, before he sent a Type 7 Puppet Rune into her soul.

When she awakened, she quickly greeted Yue Zhong with respect, "Leia greets Master!!"

Yue Zhong sent out a map with a flick of his hands, saying, "Good. Go gather with Ogg and organize everyone. The objective is this point. Kill all those who resist. Pova will be your staff officer."

Chapter 898: Base Camp FED4456!

Leia replied respectfully, "Yes!"

Pova, who was watching all these at the side, was filled with disbelief, "Too strong!! This guy is unbelievable!!"

In the City of Hope, Pova was considered an elite. However, to even meet Leia was difficult, However, such an important character had been reduced to a pawn of Yue Zhong's, their positions equal.

The Green Drake Emperor, Red Tiger Emperor, and the Silver Fox Emperor were all peak experts of the City of Hope. They were defeated and then enslaved into puppets. Inside the City, there was no one else capable of standing against Yue Zhong.

There were a number of Type 6 government officials who immediately led their own troops in revolt after the 3 Emperors declared their submission. However, the moment they tried to cause chaos, they were put down by the 3 Emperors.

In just a day, after some chaos and minor troubles, the entire City of Hope was thoroughly controlled by Yue Zhong. Of course, there were a few underground societies and organizations that were still biding their time. However, on the whole, there was no resistance on the surface.

After gaining control, Yue Zhong sent out an order for all the human cities to gather towards the City of Hope.

In a desert region, there was a huge Mech Base that was armed to the teeth. This was the base camp FED4456 that was in charge of defending one Gate of Hell.

About 30km away from the camp base, atop a group of clouds, there was a floating Mechanical carpet and atop it, there were the hundreds of powerhouses from the Planet Star Luo.

The beautiful Young Star-Lord, Xing Bing Yun, was gazing at the

FED4456 camp, her brows furrowing as she contemplated.

This was the strongest military base of the Mech Kingdom, with countless Mech Beasts, as well as the Type 8 Murphyte standing guard.

Unless a Type 9 expert appeared, and tear apart the defenses of this FED4456 camp, it was impossible to break through the tight security. Not even a joint attack of a few peak-Type 8 powerhouses could do anything.

In order to attack this camp, the previous Winged-Wyrm Lord had deployed numerous Mutant Beasts, causing the camp to be embroiled in a tough fight before finally forced to utilize their tracks and satellites.

Had the Type 8 Winged-Wyrm King been alone, then it might have fallen here.

Other than the rescued Xing Bing Yun, the Star Luo people only had Miss Green as a Type 6 powerhouse, the rest were mostly at the Type 5 or Type 4 level. In order to break through the encampment and reach the Gates of Hell to Earth, it was wishful thinking.

Miss Green stepped forward and asked Xing Bing Yun expectantly, "Miss, with our current strength, it is impossible to break through this camp. Let's retreat and find a space shuttle in any city to head back to Star Luo Planet.

The other people also turned to her, their expressions hopeful. Star Luo Planet was their home, and although they were already the captives of the Mech Kingdom, they wanted to go back badly.

Furthermore, the planet was not being guarded as strongly as before, there, with Bing Xing Yun's Type 8 strength, as long as the army of the Mech Kingdom was not deployed, or the Mech Emperor himself came, no one could force her to a corner.

Yue Ying was stubborn, "No, Master Yue Zhong will come and

meet us here, and lead us through this base, through the Gates of Hell, and back to Earth."

Yue Xing and Yue Lian were also showing the same resolute expressions, standing beside Yue Ying.

Miss Green's voice lowered, as she thought to Yue Zhong being crushed under the claws of the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk, as she muttered, "I admit, Yue Zhong is exceptional. However, at the end of the day, he's dead. No one could have survived that attack. We have already lost contact with him for over 5 days. We have his communication device, and yet he had not contacted us at all. It's proof enough that he's dead. Since that's the case, we should think for those still alive."

Yue Ying's eyes were misting over, as she replied shrilly, "No! He's still alive! I believe he's still alive! Master would not die so easily."

Yue Xing and Yue Lian were both also misty-eyed, as they started to sob slightly. They were stubborn, but they also knew how bad the situation was.

The might of the Type 9 9-headed Dragon was incredible, and he could easily crush a Type 8 powerhouse with a single hand. The Type 8 Track Lord was able to hold off the Mutant Beast because he had the support of the city.

If there were no external assistance, the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk would be able to destroy the Type 8 Track Lord with not a single chance of escape.

Xing Bing Yun replied indifferently, "Enough, he's not dead."

Hearing the words of Xing Bing Yun, the Yue Ying sisters were overjoyed, although Miss Green was a little unconvinced, "Miss, if he is not dead, then why didn't he contact us?"

Xing Bing Yun let out a mysterious smile and did not say much, she just looked at the FED4456 camp. She was defying in her

natural talent, and not only did she cultivate well, she had led her forces against the Mech Kingdom for a long while. She knew the human heart well. As to why Yue Zhong had not contacted her, she was able to guess a little.

Right at this time, the device on her hand radiated slightly, as Yue Zhong's holographic image appeared in mid-air.

Yue Zhong spoke, "It's me. I'm near you guys. Later, we will begin our assault on the FED4456 camp. Xing Bing Yun, please make your preparations to attack Track Lord MurphYTE together."

Xing Bing Yun nodded slightly, "Ok!"

In order to go through the Gates of Hell, the only way was through the FED4456 camp. They had to slaughter their way through.

Otherwise, it was impossible for a million people to go through the base, unless the million people were all as powerful as Yue Zhong.

After contacting Xing Bing Yun, Yue Zhong, who had been hiding in a corner, began his operation. He had donned on the Stealth Armor, covering all tracks of his presence, and sneaked towards the camp.

Inside the camp, there were sentries and guards everywhere, with numerous sentry Mech Beasts patrolling. Sensors and surveillance cameras would sweep throughout the location.

Without Bai Yi's help, even if Yue Zhong had the Stealth Armor, he would be unable to infiltrate the camp with tight security. However, with the combination, he could easily breeze through the areas where there were gaps in the defense.

Along the way, Yue Zhong planted a number of remote-controlled bombs at various key places.

"Ah, what is this? The defense is truly tight. They actually activated 30 Type 7 Mechs."

As he reached the deepest part of the camp, he discovered that there was a huge armory of about dozens of kilometers square feet. There were actually 30 Type 7 sentient Mechs, as well as over a hundred Type 7 Mech Beasts. Seeing this, he could not help but be curious.

According to the information from the captives, there were only 8 Mech Lords, 1 Mech Emperor, and a thousand odd Type 7 Mech Nobles. Every Type 7 Mech was a precious resource and combatant.

A dozen Type 7 Mechs were able to go against a Type 8 powerhouse by working together.

In front of the armory, there were 30 Type 7 sentient Mechs as well as over a hundred Type 7 Mech Beasts. The defense was really tight. It would be impossible even for a Type 8 powerhouse to get rid of them easily.

"If I had to face this at my initial arrival on Galastar, it would truly be a pinch to deal with these."

Yue Zhong eyed the defense and the corners of his lips curled slightly. There was a look of self-confidence as he activated his God-Devil Domain in a flash, and an entirely dark and devilish region enveloped the entire armory, consuming the Mechs as well as the Mech Beasts.

The moment the Devil Domain enveloped the sentient Mechs, the devil manifestations began devouring the mechanical cells. Without any mercy, they pounced onto the Mechs.

In an instant, 2 Mechs were already consumed cleanly, leaving behind only the Type 7 nuclei.

At the same time, Yue Zhong conjured 28 clones, borrowing the dark energy of the Domain to mask his presence. He then appeared in front of 28 Mechs. His fists then blasted at the back of their heads, destroying even their smart chips.

Inside the Domain, the perception of the Mechs was reduced drastically, and they were also attacked suddenly. That was how they were caught off-guard and defeated easily. If they were able to form an array or formation, and Yue Zhong could not employ his Domain in time, it would be tougher to deal with them.

Within a short span of time, 30 Mechs were killed instantly. Bai Yi also reached out with her disruptive signal, reaching into the hundred Type 7 Mech Beasts.

When they were swept up in that signal, the Type 7 Mech Beasts came to a halt, and Bai Yi then inserted countless cables into the Mech Beasts, rewriting their programming and finally, bringing them under her control.

Chapter 899: Comet Cannon!

After slaughtering this elite army in a second, Yue Zhong opened up the huge door and walked in.

When he entered, Yue Zhong was taken aback by what he saw, as he took in a cold breath and felt a chill in his heart, "This is a D-Grade Comet Cannon, they're actually hiding such a powerful trump card here!!"

In this huge armory, there was a 2km-long cannon, standing at a height of 300m, and it was engraved with numerous runes. It was connected with countless cables, powered by many nuclei of Type 6 and above. The main power source was a singular Type 9 Mutant Beast nucleus, as well as 8 Type 8 Beast nuclei. This was the strongest weapon of the Mech Kingdom, a D-Grade Comet Cannon.

Inside the Mech Kingdom, there was the technology of constructing a D-Grade Cannon. Due to its might, a single blast could kill a Type 9 powerhouse, but likewise, its expenditure and cost were too high. Furthermore, the D-Grade Comet Cannon just required a Type 9 nucleus, as well as 8 Type 8 as a power source.

A Type 9 Mutant Beast was a terrifying existence, with unparalleled strength. Even the Type 9 Mech Emperor only had the confidence to defeat, but not kill, a Type 9 Mutant Beast.

In these thousand years, the number of Type 9 Mutant Beasts that the Type 9 Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting had killed were only about 5. Hence, he only had 5 Type 9 nuclei. Thus, there were only 5 D-Grade Comet Cannon.

Yue Zhong had not expected that there was such a powerful killing weapon in the FED4456 camp.

He thought back to when he first entered Galastar, and felt some fear, "Thankfully I was careful then, and did not reveal my existence. If they had just fired this at me, I would have died."

Had Yue Zhong revealed his identity, the moment this Comet Cannon fired at him, he would definitely be vaporized. Even the current him with his God-Devil Domain, when struck by a single round of that Comet Cannon, he would turn into ash, without any resistance.

His thoughts then came to the possible reason for the weapon being here, "This must be one of the trump cards of Zu Yuan Ting. No wonder no Type 9 Mutant Beasts dared come here. The Mech Empire is truly placing a whole load of importance on this Gate of Hell."

In truth, other than Earth, in any other world, the Gate of Hell was a highly sought-after possession. This was because, on the other side of the Gate, there was the possibility of further evolution. The numerous peak experts of their own worlds all sought to evolve once more, becoming masters of their own fate.

All the powerhouses knew this point, that they were just trapped in a huge cage, their fates in control of the entity called 'God'. The moment they slacked in their pursuit of strength, their own race would suffer and they would lose their rule and dominance. In the end, they might even be swallowed up by other races, enslaved or even annihilated.

The Gates of Hell represented the hope of evolution. Naturally, the experts of the other worlds wanted to enter Earth and help themselves as well their own race to evolve further, standing at the peak of the universe.

This was why the Gates of Hell were so important. Hence, it was natural of Zu Yuan Ting to station the strongest weapon in his arsenal, the D-Grade Comet Cannon, over at the FED4456 camp.

Yue Zhong stared at the cannon with a heated expression, "This is great, this cannon is now mine."

If he possessed this weapon, he had no need to fear a Type 9 powerhouse.

Of course, while the might of this weapon was unbelievable, there were limitations as well. Firstly, the preparation for a shot took 15 seconds. After each shot, the cooldown would be a month. This was because each shot would push the nuclei to their limits, in order for them to regenerate the energy, it would take some time.

Even with this constraints, the D-Grade Comet Cannon was still a terrifying weapon. If utilized properly, even in front of a Type 9 powerhouse, Yue Zhong was able to retaliate.

With a thought, everything in front of him was swept into the Universal Storage Ring.

Boom!!

With a resounding shake, the huge Comet Cannon was sucked into Yue Zhong's storage ring.

The moment the weapon was moved, the entire FED4456 was alerted to the commotion, and in an instant, the camp went into a state of emergency, as countless Mech Beasts pounced towards the location.

Yue Zhong flew out from the armory, catching sight of the horde of Mech Beasts heading towards him.

The Mech Beasts caught sight of him and immediately began firing at him in a shower of bullets.

"Time to act!" Assessing the situation, Yue Zhong did not bother hiding any longer and pressed down on the remote control.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

Immediately, numerous locations exploded in a loud roar, as the shockwaves blasted out, turning numerous Mech Beasts within the camp into shattered pieces.

Under that terrifying explosions, many Mech Beasts in the midst of their pursuit were turned to dust.

At the same time, it seemed as though the blast was some sort of signal, as from the desert, a horde of Mech Beasts, Mech Armors, heavy tanks, long-range missiles and other armored vehicles stormed forward. When these armored forces appeared, they began assaulting the FED4456 camp.

Firepower blasted out and enveloped the entire base.

On top of that, 40 A-Grade battleships, 5 B-Grade battleships soared above the base, as they released unmanned drones that shot towards the camp, firing out at the Mech Beasts still standing after the explosion, tearing into their frames.

"Strong!! Are those Yue Zhong's forces?! But he came alone, didn't he? How the hell did he come up with these troops?"

Miss Green and the rest of the Star Luo experts were wide-eyed with shock and disbelief at the display of firepower.

While the human forces were considered weak by the Mech Kingdom, their accumulated forces were not to be underestimated. When they joined together, the combined output was much more than a Type 8 powerhouse from Star Luo.

Xing Bing Yun eyed the spectacle and replied mildly, "Someone who could become an Oracle, is never someone incapable. The fact that he could reach this point, and achieve all of this, is nothing less than expected."

Those who could possess the God and Devil Imprint on Earth had amassed their own power and conquered a major city. They were exceptional figures that had survived the cruel apocalypse, and experienced countless battles, plots, betrayals, and came out of it all victorious.

Yue Zhong had evolved to the Type 7 realm, after leaving behind a mountain of corpses of his enemies, and experienced so much. To Xing Bing Yun, it was to be expected.

The Star Luo Universe could produce a Type 9 powerhouse

because they had a human Oracle that reached the Type 9 realm and established a decent foundation for his race. Otherwise, a fallen race could never produce a Type 9 expert.

"Who? Who dares steal our Mech Kingdom's Comet Cannon and cause trouble in our FED4456 camp?! You are dead meat!! Once I catch you, I will tear you apart, and throw you to boil in frying oil!!"

At this time, there was an enraged voice in the skies, filled with an imposing aura, as a Mech Fort descended from the skies, covered with numerous cannons.

Due to Yue Zhong's frenzied assault, the Fort Lord MurphYTE could no longer sit back, as he began to attack.

At the same time, numerous Mech Beasts poured out from the camp, engaging the human armored forces and the unmanned drones.

The numbers of the Mech Beasts, mechanized weapons, and sentient Mechs far surpassed the human army. However, the bulk of their forces had been obliterated during Yue Zhong's bomb. In a short time, they could not gather their forces, that was why they were being beaten back by the human forces.

At this time, over 50 sentient Type 7 Mechs soared out from the FED4456 camp, followed by a vast sea of Mech Beasts.

The moment the sentient Mechs joined the battle, they managed to stop the collapse of the FED4456 forces. At the same time, with their support, they were able to turn the tide of the battle, forcing the human forces back.

As the sentient Mechs were slaughtering to their hearts' content, a Green Drake suddenly charged into their midst, slashing out with its huge claws, tearing apart the heads of 2 Type 7 Mechs, tearing out their smart chips and crushing them.

Below them, the Silver Fox Emperor appeared, revealing C-Grade

Particle Cannon and fired out, raining numerous beams on the Mechs, directly blasting 2 Type 7 sentient Mechs into pieces.

The Red Tiger Emperor did the same, firing a beam from his C-Grade Particle Cannon, killing another 2 Type 7 Mechs.

Chapter 900: The Crafty Murphyte!

Yue Zhong had obtained countless resources from the armory of the Mech Kingdom. Among them, there were numerous combat armors, among them the Type 7 and Type 8 ones were not lacking.

Currently, the Red Tiger Emperor and Silver Fox Emperor had already changed out their combat mech armor, utilizing the Type 8 ones. They were not only the peak experts of the human race but also the most talented pilots. With the Type 8 Mech Armors, they were able to exhibit an initial-Type 8 combat strength.

Under the lead of the 3 Emperors, the rest of the human elites piloting the Type 7 Mech Armors began to clash with the Type 7 sentient Mechs.

The combined strength of the 3 Emperors could rival a Type 8 powerhouse, although it was not enough against the Fort Lord Murphyte, the Type 8 Mutant Beast Wyrms-Winged King and other ancient Type 8 powerhouses, but it was more than enough to suppress the Type 7 Mechs entirely.

The Type 7 sentient combat Mechs were extremely savage as well. Other than those that had been taken out by the sudden assault of the 3 Emperors, they quickly surged back towards the horde of Mech Beasts, forming a new formation, as they clashed once more with the 3 Emperors.

While the 3 Emperors had the strength of the initial-Type 8 realm, they were also helpless against the group of Type 7 Mechs hiding within the Mech Beast Horde.

Both forces got into a stalemate, however, it was not long before many soldiers were being obliterated by the exchange of firepower.

"Foolish humans, no matter how many soldiers you send out, against my satellite beams, they are all just sheep for the slaughter." Murphyte eyed the swarming soldiers below, and

laughed coldly, meting out his punishment.

Yue Zhong stepped into the skies, soaring up and declared solemnly, "No, your satellite cannons are now useless. Murphyte, submit to me and work for me, you might live on. Otherwise, when I crush your smart chip later, you will truly perish."

Currently, Murphyte was the leader and the strongest expert in the FED4456 base. If he were subdued or defeated, the way to the Gate of Hell through Earth would be clear.

Murphyte swept Yue Zhong a glance, his eyes narrowing, "It's you!! So it was you, damn human. In the Mech Empire City, you had caused some waves, I heard Titus was also killed by you!"

Yue Zhong grinned lightly in response, as the Type 8 Ape Lord Titus appeared beside him, "No! He has already become my loyal servant."

"Titus greets Master." The Type 8 Ape Lord greeted Yue Zhong respectfully before he turned around to threaten Murphyte with a ferocious shout, "Murphyte, I've already become Master Yue Zhong's most loyal servant. This is your last chance, kneel and swear fealty, and Master can let the past be. If you continue to be muddle-headed, I will join forces with Master to wipe you out, and crush your smart chip!"

When Murphyte saw Titus standing beside Yue Zhong, he felt a chill in his heart, "You... you actually subdued Titus...!!!"

Among the Type 8 powerhouses of the Mech Kingdom, Titus was not the strongest entity. He was comparable to Murphyte, however, he was still one of the Type 8 powerhouses, which caused him to be shocked.

With a clear voice, Xing Bing Yun arrived, stopping beside Yue Zhong as she spoke, "Murphyte, you better surrender. Otherwise, today will mark your death."

Seeing Xing Bing Yun, Murphyte was also shocked, "The Star Luo

remnant, Xing Bing Yun!! You're here as well!!"

She nodded mildly, "That's right, just submit. You might still have a way out that way."

"Hahaha! I, Murphyte, will only have one master, that is the glorious Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting! If you want me to submit, in your dreams!!"

After that unbridled laugh, in an instant, numerous palm-sized black Mech Death Worms flew out from his body.

Those worms were made out of C-Grade superalloys, and only a Type 8 powerhouse could annihilate them fully. A B-Grade Particle Cannon was only enough to kill off one of them.

At the same time, those worms had powerful weapons and could suck energy. A C3-Grade energy shield would be sucked dry within a few breaths when they came in contact, and the users would be helpless after that.

The number of Mech Death Worms came up to about hundreds of thousands, and a Type 8 powerhouse could be killed if careless.

After releasing those worms, the huge Mech Fort rose up in the air, spitting out fuel as it shot far away in an escape.

Murphyte was extremely crafty, as he knew that even with the combination of the Mech Beasts in FED4456 camp, it had a low chance of winning. Furthermore, the satellites that the Mech Kingdom was so proud of seemed to have no movement, and he felt despair.

Furthermore, the most important thing is that he knew Yue Zhong had taken the Comet Cannon. If Yue Zhong did not mind utilizing the cannon, he could be killed in a single blast. With such odds, he naturally chose to run away.

If a Type 8 powerhouse wanted to flee, his speed would truly be shocking. In a matter of seconds, he had already disappeared from view, leaving behind the millions of Mech Beasts and 20,000

sentient Mechs.

Yue Zhong was taken aback when he saw that Murphyte had escaped, and was speechless, "What a cunning fellow. He did not even try to fight it out, and just fled."

He had originally intended to suppress Murphyte and turn him into his servant as well. Like that, he would have 2 true Type 8 experts under his beck and call. Together with the Type 8 Mutant Beast that he tamed, he had 3 Type 8 powerhouses at his fingertips.

Xing Bing Yun laughed lightly, "Isn't it for the better though? We can cross with more ease now."

"True! Let us wrap this up."

Yue Zhong swept the swarm of Mech Death Worms and pointed out with his finger, as a blood sea flowed out, enveloping those bugs, and in a flash, there were countless ropes suppressing the Mech Death Worms.

Those Mech Worms that could strike fear in the hearts of Type 8 powerhouses seemed to have met their bane, as they were all quickly suppressed, with not a single one escaping from Yue Zhong's grasp.

Yue Zhong's control over the Blood Manipulation ability was getting stronger, and it was perfect for such small things which had tough defenses.

"Leave the other riff-raff to me."

Xing Bing Yun saw how Yue Zhong had taken care of the Mech Death Worms, and her eyes flashed with a strange glint. She then disappeared from her location like a fairy.

In a few breaths, she appeared over the battlefield where the Type 7 Mechs were engaged with the 3 Emperors.

Under the heavy fire, Xing Bing Yun waved her hands, summoning her Constellation Domain, and an endless darkness

enveloped the Type 7 Mechs. Under the strikes of the endless stars, 3 Type 7 Mechs, as well as their Mech Beasts nearby, were instantly torn apart.

The moment Xing Bing Yun joined the battle, she immediately broke the balance.

The numerous Type 7 Mechs were helpless under the joint efforts of Xing Bing Yun and the 3 Emperors. They were destroyed, and their smart chips not spared.

"Flee!! Flee!! Lord Murphyte had already escaped, we have to escape as well!!"

"Evacuate!! We need to protect some future seedlings to seek revenge next time!!"

"..."

Following a few enraged shouts, the remaining sentient Mechs had no more intention to risk their lives and quickly fled.

The countless Mech Beasts also followed suit, trying to flee in various directions.

Yue Zhong tried his best but was only able to capture about 200,000 Mech Beasts, and the rest managed to flee with their owners.

After crushing the main force, the Green Drake Emperor flew towards Yue Zhong and asked, "Master, do we chase?"

Yue Zhong pondered for a moment, before giving the order, "Alright, go lead your troops and clear out the entire 50 sq km area."

"Yes!" The Green Drake Emperor replied, before leading his direct troops towards the distance.

Making use of these chance, the 2 million humans quickly boarded their vehicles and made for the Gates of Hell, to Earth.

Yue Zhong watched them go through the Gate while frowning,

"We have to hurry, lest something else happens."

Chapter 901: The American Forces request Aid!

The whole procession was huge, with the numbers of 2 million, if they wanted to pass through the Gates on foot, it would take more than 10 days to complete the process.

However, Yue Zhong had instructed for them to board large transport vehicles, sending them through to Earth.

With this, there was easily thousands of soldiers being transported every second.

Yue Zhong stood at the side, guarding warily, anticipating the retaliation of the Mech Kingdom.

However, for some unknown reason, the retaliation did not come as soon as he expected, allowing the humans of Galastar to pass through safely.

"Finally! I'm back!!"

As Yue Zhong stepped on the ground, he let out a long breath. He had been so tense on Galastar, faced with countless experts and if he had been careless and come across a Type 9 powerhouse, he could have been slapped to death. On Earth, as long as there were no strong foreign races, he was practically undefeatable.

"Earth, so it truly has already become a land for evolution. No wonder so many foreign races are trying to get through."

Currently, with his strength at the peak of the Type 7 realm, he was sensitive to the flow of energy. He could sense that there was a strange force in Earth's atmosphere, and the moment he took it in, his body seemed to be strengthened just slightly.

In comparison, with his current talent and realm, he would just need to enter closed-door cultivation for 20 years and he could break through to the Type 8 realm. If it were on Galastar, then

even with his heaven-defying talent, he would need 200 years. If it were any other ordinary peak-Type 7 human powerhouses, it would take an entire lifetime and he or she would not even be close to breaking through.

As Yue Zhong landed, he had not even relaxed fully, when his communication device vibrated, and Bai Yi's voice sounded, "Master, it seems like the Americans are sending you a request for aid. They're about to fall."

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that, "What? The Americans can't hold out any longer?"

Currently, many regions of Earth had fallen, turning into lands for the Mutant Beasts, the Zombies, foreign races, the Sea Clan. England and the Kingdom of God had recently just fallen. Russia was also forced back again and again due to the evolved Zombies. On Earth, the only 2 states still standing were China and America.

Of course, there were definitely other cockroach-like people that just won't die no matter what. However, they were too scattered, and even if they banded together, they were not a match for America and China.

If America fell as well, then there was only China left as a human faction. Then, the pressure would be on China to fend off the invasions of the other species.

On the outskirts of Montana, USA, there were numerous bunkers erected that formed a cluster of structures.

Such a formation would be useless in the modern warfare, as with the advance of technology and weapons, it was easy to deal with such a tactic. But against the physically stronger and tougher Dino-race, it was effective.

Against such an extensive network of structures, the human forces would definitely not attack such a fortified location. However, in front of it, it was like a slaughterhouse.

Dino-warriors, as well as the various vassal forces under them, were charging at the bunkers.

The resounding blasts of cannons did not stop for a single moment, as any individual below the Type 4 realm were blasted to bits and pieces.

At the same time, in the skies, there were numerous unmanned drones of the American forces, coupled with assault helicopters and fighter jets clashing against the winged-type foreign species under the cover of the anti-air defenses. There were winged-Dragon Riders, the White Winged race, the Grey-Winged race, and even Eaglemen.

At every moment, there were large droves of the aerial forces being gunned down, at the same time, there were American pilots being killed and their aircraft plunging to the ground.

Below, within the bunkers, there were no more small firearms, only the heavy firepower, as well as the advanced laser guns, Gauss rifles, and other sci-fi weapons.

Ordinary rifles were not effective against these physically tougher Dino-warriors and foreign species. Only the more powerful ones, as well as advanced weaponry, could deal damage to them.

Hong!

Following the sound of explosions, amidst the Dino-warriors, an area the size of a football field was blasted wide apart, as limbs flew and blood splattered everywhere. Just a single cannon was able to turn over 40 foreign warriors as well as 5 Type 3 Dino-warriors into bits and pieces.

Before the dust settled, a Type 3 Tyranno-warrior dashed towards a bunker, while covered in blood.

The Type 3 Tyranno-warrior let out a savage roar, his fists slamming into the bunker with the force of a mountain.

With a loud bang, the bunker collapsed, revealing a gaping hole, and the Type 3 Tyranno-warrior charged in.

Not long after, there were screams coming out from the bunker. The next moment, the Type 3 Tyranno-Warrior jumped back out, covered in more blood, as he made for another bunker.

The Type 3 Tyranno-warrior had not charged out for long when a number of laser beams shot at him.

Amidst the rain of laser beams, the Type 3 Tyranno-warrior was punched full of holes, as blood flowed and he crumpled to the ground.

In front of the cluster of bunkers, humans were fighting against foreign races, flesh against steel, and it was incredibly cruel and bloody, as American troops were dying every passing second.

Had it been before the Apocalypse, even if the American troops were powerful, they would have already fallen and collapsed. However, these troops were baptized by the cruel apocalypse and had experienced plenty of bloodsheds. They had killed their fair share of powerful enemies. Compared to the elites of China, they were not necessarily subpar. At the same time, behind them, there was their home, their friends, families and loved ones all relying on them. Once they fell, everything would be destroyed. Hence, they were going all out.

On top a small mountain, the pillar of America, superhero Leo stared at the vast sea of Dino-warriors. His eyes had a look of despair and exhaustion, "These damn Dino-warriors, what a bunch of bastards!!"

Currently, Leo had undergone countless days of battle, using all means and methods to take on numerous Type 6 Dino-warriors. He had suddenly broken through as well, reaching the Type 7 realm, and forged his own Second Order God-Devil Body.

However, under the constant slaughter, his body, spirit, and

mind were all stretched taut. He had killed over a dozen Type 6 Dino-warriors, and over 200 Type 5 Dino-warriors, 10,000 Type 4 Dino-warriors, and too many Type 3 Dino-warriors to count.

If it wasn't for him trying to be a firefighter, going everywhere to take on the experts of the Dino-race, the American troops would have been crushed long ago. After all, a single Type 4 Dino-warrior was enough to slaughter a thousand American troops.

Behind him stood 60 blood-covered experts of the superhero alliance, every one of them exhausted.

Many of the experts within the alliance had died in combat, but at the same time, their ranks were constantly being replenished. Although many of them had certain shortfalls in their characters and done things they were not proud of, at this moment, they were all united and true Americans, protecting the rest of their homeland.

Currently, all of them were gazing at Leo with respect and admiration. They had relied on him heavily these few days, with his constant battling, without sleeping, just to hold out. Without him, their bunkers would have fallen long ago.

One beautiful and alluring woman walked up to him, muttering with concern, "Leo, you go get some rest. You have not rested for 5 whole days."

Leo's eyes were bloodshot, as he shook his head gently, "No, Wendy, before Yue Zhong's troops are here, I cannot rest. Otherwise, our line will fall."

Wendy frowned, and asked worriedly, "Leo, I heard that China is also under the aliens' siege. Furthermore, our relations are not that good. Will he send troops to help us?"

After the apocalypse, while America and China had formed an alliance, their relationship was not the best. If it were China who requested, America might not necessarily send aid as well.

Leo's eyes narrowed, as he clenched his fists in resolution, "He will. Earth now only has us and China. If we fall, China would have to defend all the foreign species invading. It would be 10 times tougher than before. Yue Zhong is smart, he will definitely send someone to help us."

Hearing those words, the rest of the experts heaved a sigh. They were clear, that if reinforcements did not arrive soon, then the American core troops would suffer greatly in these 2 days.

Chapter 902: Coercion!

Right as Leo was bolstering the morale, a voice full of an overbearing and tyrannical aura sounded, "Reinforcements? I'm afraid you don't have the luxury."

Leo lifted his head to the sky and sucked in a breath of cold air.

He noticed 3 Dino-warriors manipulating the atmospheric energy as they stepped through the air and came towards them.

One of them happened to be Emperor Ba Long that Yue Zhong had come across in the past. In addition, the other 2 were Emperor Qing Long and Emperor Hei Long. Emperor Qing Long was covered in green scales and possessed a thick and powerful tail. His face, however, was one of a handsome human. Emperor Hei Long was different, his entire body covered in black scales, as well as thick and sharp spikes. His hands had 40cm-long claws, as well as bone plates all over his joints. His face was a savage visage of a dinosaur.

When the 3 of them descended, they exuded a powerful and overpowering pressure.

The elites of the superhuman alliance were all at the Type 4 and Type 5 level, and when faced with the pressure of the 3 Dino-Emperors, their faces turned pale as they trembled with fear.

They could feel from every fiber in their body that they were just like ants in front of these 3, and they could easily be swatted to death.

Leo's gaze fixed on Emperor Ba Long, as he gritted his teeth, and asked, "Type 8, you're a Type 8 powerhouse? How is that possible? The Gates of Hell should only allow those of the Type 6 and below!!"

Leo was just like Edward and Yue Zhong, the peak experts of Earth. He also knew from his channels that the Gates of Hell should only allow those of the Type 6 realm and below to pass. If a

Type 7 powerhouse wanted to pass through, it required a huge price, not to mention a Type 8 expert.

The stronger the experts, the harder it was to pass through the Gates of Hell. Even the Type 9 Mech Emperor had no way of crossing the Gates of Hell, and could only pay a huge price to distort the laws, forcefully sending a dozen Type 7 Mechs through.

Emperor Ba Long stared at Leo coldly, and threatened, "That's right, the Gates of Hell only allow those of the Type 6 realm through. However, Type 7 powerhouses can also pass through with a certain price. If it wasn't for me focusing on achieving a sudden breakthrough, to the Type 8 realm, all of you would have been wiped out earlier. Now, I'm already in the Type 8 realm and am invincible on this Earth. Human, stop your resistance and let me kill you. I can spare the lives of your people in the country. If you dare resist, after killing you, I will wipe everyone in America out, leaving not a single one alive!!"

After the intense battles, Emperor Ba Long knew what Leo was capable of. He was just barely at the initial-Type 7 realm, and had just comprehended his Second Order God-Devil Body, and was not even comparable with Emperor Qing Long and Emperor He Long, both at the peak of Type 7 realm, much less, the Type 8 Emperor Ba Long.

However, Leo had a Treasure of Hope, the Wings of Hope. With those, even Emperor Ba Long might not be able to keep him. That was why he threatened him.

Faced with that, Leo's face changed, as he became silent, before slowly saying, "If I really kill myself, will you really let my people go?"

Emperor Ba Long replied in an overbearing manner, "Of course, as long as you kill yourself, I promise to let America off and allow your men to rest here. As long as you guys don't provoke us, we will not attack you."

Among the humans, those who could threaten the Dino-race were those with the God and Devil Imprint. If they were wiped out, then the chances of the humans overcoming the foreign races would be incredibly miniscule.

After all, the innate talents, physique and combat strength of the humans were weaker than the foreign races. Even when comparing those of the same realm, it was hard for them to evolve. If Yue Zhong and Leo had not possessed the Imprints, even if they cultivated for over 200 years, they would not reach the Type 7 realm. Without a peak expert to hold the fort, the human race would be doomed to sink, never to raise a potential threat.

On Galastar, the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting allowed the human race to develop for so many years, but they were only capable of threatening a single city after all this time. If Zu Yuan Ting really deployed his forces, within a year, he could definitely wipe out 90% of the humans on Galastar.

Wendy's face fell as she stepped forward to stop him, "No!! Leo!! You can't do it!! You cannot die!!"

"Yeah!! Brother Leo!! We will fight it out with them!!"

"Let's fight it out with these monsters!!"

"..."

The rest of the elites all raised an uproar in fury. They did not wish for their hero to be forced to commit suicide. In their eyes, Leo was invincible, on par with a god, it was just like how Yue Zhong's troops viewed him.

"Shut up!"

Emperor Ba Long swept the rest of the warriors a look, as his eyes turned cold, and exuded a powerful Type 8 aura, pressurizing all the elites.

Faced with such might, all the soldiers below the Type 5 realm immediately got down on the ground in fear, gasping for breath as

their bodies trembled uncontrollably. The Type 5 powerhouses also felt weak, and almost could not breathe, not able to say anything more

Feeling the wrath of Emperor Ba Long, the faces of the elite soldiers fell, their eyes filled with fear and shock.

Leo fell into contemplation, the huge pressure caused him to frown. It felt as though his spine was being forced to bend. For the first time, he had no confidence of success at all.

Under the assault of the Dino-race, the American forces had been forced back over and over, losing countless elites. Leo had also assassinated as many Type 6 Emperor Kings as he could, just to reach his Type 7 realm.

Now, the 100,000 troops left below were the final elites standing between the Dino-race and America. If they were also killed off, that meant that there were no more elites left.

Once the line was breached, it would not be long before America fell as well, as there were no one else left to defend the country.

If it was not for the battle being so critical, Leo would not have had to fight continuously for 5 straight days, being forced to such a state of exhaustion.

Emperor Ba Long and the other 2 had waited for Leo to be at this state before they surrounded him. Like this, even if he had the Wings of Hope, it would be tough for him to escape.

Under the might of the Type 8 powerhouse, one of the Type 5 elites still managed to shout out, "Leo, no!! You can't kill yourself.....!"

"You talk too much bullshit! Go to hell!!"

Emperor Ba Long frowned, and pointed at that Type 5 expert, as the atmospheric energy condensed into a bullet-form that pierced through the head of the Type 5 expert, directly bursting it apart, as blood and white brain matter splattered all over the ground.

A warrior like this, who had undergone so many battles, and considered a peak expert, had also died so miserably.

Seeing this, the rest of the elites from the superhero alliance felt sorrow, fear, and despair. They were clear that they were nothing in front of these existences, and they could not even impede them in the slightest.

When Leo saw this, his heart was filled with anguish as well, his fists clenching, and his eyes were filled with a killing intent while staring at Emperor Ba Long.

Emperor Ba Long swept a cold gaze as he laughed, continuing his coercion, "Human, if you still don't kill yourself, all the troops below, as well as your country, will be wiped out because of you!! Everyone will die because of you!!"

Leo maintained silent, as he looked down.

The Dino-warriors were currently employing their Type 6 and Type 5 forces. Without Leo's control, the Dino-warriors were unrivaled, and managed to destroy point after point, slaughtering numerous American soldiers.

Although many of the American soldiers were willing to give their all, there would naturally be some cowards who abandoned their posts and retreated without orders. The moment those soldiers fled, it dealt a larger blow to the American morale, and the battling forces began to collapse even further.

As long as Leo was kept here for an hour, the entire troop would definitely be crushed, and the defense line broken apart.

Leo was silent for a very long time, as he turned to eye America behind him, his eyes filled with a pained expression. He then turned to face Emperor Ba Long, "I can kill myself, but I want you to promise me that you will safeguard America."

Emperor Ba Long shook his head, "No way. I can only promise that our Dino-race would not attack your American people. I can't

promise anything else. Make your choice, I'm giving you your last 30 seconds."

Leo's eyes flashed with a bleakness, as he raised a Gauss Rifle to his temple, laughing out mournfully, "Goodbye, my beloved homeland!"

Chapter 903: Yue Zhong Acts!

Emperor Ba Long saw the Gauss Rifle at Leo's temple, and his eyes flashed with a cruel excitement. As long as Leo was down, and he absorbed the God and Devil Imprint as well as the God-Devil Nucleus, he would be able to evolve once more, becoming stronger, even possibly reaching the Type 9 realm.

Right at this time, there was a lazy drawl, "Leo, if you kill yourself, what would happen to America from now on?"

Everyone turned to the source of the voice, and the humans were filled with hope and renewed spirits.

When Leo saw who had arrived, his face was also filled with joy, as he immediately lowered the Gauss Rifle in his hand, "Yue Zhong!! It's you!! I knew you'd come!!"

The experts of the superhuman alliance looked at Yue Zhong standing in mid-air, many of them filled with relief, while some were filled with slight fear and envy. The Americans had always been proud of themselves and considered America to be the strongest. Right now on Earth, the 2 publicly recognized experts were Leo and Yue Zhong, and in their hearts, they had always felt Leo to be stronger. However, the truth was right in front of them.

Emperor Ba Long swept Yue Zhong a gaze, and laughed coldly, as he released his Type 8 pressure towards him, "Yue Zhong? You're that Chinese leader who has the God and Devil Imprint, that Yue Zhong? Very good, I was intending to find you after killing Leo. Since you're here, you can kill yourself too! Otherwise, I will lead my forces and wipe out everyone in China!"

"Just with you pieces of trash? This time, I'm here to clean you all up."

Yue Zhong swept him, as well as the other 2 Dino-Emperors a look, and laughed coldly. He then shot forward, producing 3

Shadow Clones that threw out a punch each at the different Emperors respectively.

"Damn it!"

Seeing Yue Zhong actually taking the initiative to attack them first, the 3 Dino-Emperors were caught off-guard and roared out in rage. They were peak experts and had terrifying strength, and yet, Yue Zhong actually took them on 1-against-3, it was practically a humiliation.

The 3 Dino-Emperors joined hands and their punches at the same time towards the Shadow Clones.

Following a loud roar, a terrifying shockwave blasted outwards in all directions, raising a storm as stones and debris flew everywhere.

The human experts of the Type 4 stage and below were all blasted backward, spitting out blood as their inner organs were shaken badly. Their eyes revealed shock. Even the Type 5 experts had disrupted blood flow as their faces turned pale.

After that, the impossible scene revealed itself, as Emperor Hei Long and Emperor Qing Long were both sent flying backward, while even Emperor Ba Long took a few steps back.

"Impossible!! How is he that strong?! Those 3 monsters are actually at the peak of the Type 7 realm, there's even one at the Type 8 realm. He actually took on all 3 of them, how could he beat them back?"

"How is this possible? My eyes must be going blind!"

"OH, lord, what did I see? My eyes are truly going bad!!"

"..."

The human forces stared wide-eyed and full of shock. They were Type 4 and Type 5 existences and had felt the terrifying might of these Dino-Emperors earlier. Any one of them could easily squash

them to death with a single palm. And yet, in front of Yue Zhong, they had not been able to take a blow. Yue Zhong's might was simply heaven-defying.

Leo stared at Yue Zhong, his expression one of shock and envy as well, "Too strong. How the hell did he improve that fast?! Isn't this too terrifying?! I had thought that with the battles I fought, I would not lose to him, and yet, he has advanced so far ahead of me..."

Leo had been fighting against the Dino-warriors with all his might slaughter numerous experts, reaching the Type 7 realm from his Type 6 realm through arduous steps. He had originally thought that he was invincible, however, seeing how strong Yue Zhong was, no matter how broad-minded he was, he could not help but feel jealous.

When Emperor Ba Long was forced back, he was also shocked, "Impossible!! You're just a Type 7 expert, how can you be so strong?!"

Emperor Ba Long had slaughtered countless human experts, but it was the first time that he had come across such a person as Yue Zhong.

After sending the 3 Dino-Emperors back, Yue Zhong was filled with confidence, as he stepped forward and transformed into a shadow that appeared behind Emperor Qing Long, sending a powerful fist against his back.

A terrifying strength burst forth, and the peak-Type 7 Emperor Qing Long who was barely a step into the Type 8 realm was blasted apart, his body split into many pieces.

With his death, a large energy entered Yue Zhong's body, however, it was far from enough for Yue Zhong to reach the Type 8 realm. He needed much more pure life force.

Emperor Ba Long saw how Yue Zhong had killed Emperor Qing

Long with a single fist and his face fell, revealing some trepidation as he struggled inwardly, "Damn it!! Damn Oracle!! I must kill him before he gets any stronger!! Otherwise, our Dino-race will definitely be annihilated by him!"

An Oracle was a revered existence across worlds. As long as they continued slaughtering, they could evolve much faster. Initially, Yue Zhong had just been an annoying ant that Emperor Ba Long could have crushed, but now, he was standing on equal ground, if not, with even more strength.

"Yue Zhong, you're indeed strong. However, I'm not just one person! You're against our entire race!! Today, you will die here!!" Emperor Ba Long glared at him, before opening his jaws to let out an earth-shaking roar.

At that instant, a dense horde of Mutant Winged Dinosaurs soared over, covered with grey scales, and growing powerful-looking wings that resembled Western dragons. Their necks were long like diplodocuses, and they had sharp teeth, each of them exuding a powerful pressure. These were all at the Type 5 and Type 6 realm. The leader was only about 20m-long, but its whole body was silver in color, and it had a single horn, at the Type 7 realm. There were over 300,000 of them and was one of the strongest trump cards of Emperor Ba Long.

Every Type 5 Mutant Winged Dinosaur was able to rival a Type 6 human soldier, with such a force, even a Type 8 powerhouse would be injured or even killed.

A Type 8 powerhouse might be able to slap a Type 5 Mutant Winged Dinosaur to death, but with 300,000 of them pouncing, one would have to use kiting tactics.

"We're finished!!"

Seeing the huge cloud of aerial beasts soaring downwards, Leo and the rest of the American forces felt despair.

Every single beast was at least a Type 5, and it would take the humans time and effort to deal with them. In fact, only Leo himself could actually take on each one. However, their numbers were more than enough to swallow everything.

Yue Zhong's expression remained impassive as he eyed the horde, laughing coldly and waved his hands, "You have your Type 5 Mutant Beasts, I have my battleships."

In an instant, 8 Protector Battleships appeared out of the clouds.

The moment they flew out, countless particle beams shot out at the horde of flying beasts.

As the rain of beams blasted into the midst of the Type 5 Mutant Winged Dinosaurs, turning them into sieves, fresh blood splattering.

The 8 Protector Battleships had undergone upgrades with Yue Zhong's haul from the Galastar world, installing numerous A-Grade and B-Grade particle cannons from the Mech Empire.

After equipping those cannons, the firepower of the 8 Protector Battleships was boosted greatly, empowering them to kill even a Type 7 powerhouse.

Under the relentless barrage of firepower, many of the Mutant Winged Dinosaurs were gunned down every passing second in showers of blood.

At the same time, in front of the Dino-warrior army, a horde of Mech Beasts carrying advanced weapons appeared and charged into the battle.

These were the Mech Beasts obtained from the Mech Kingdom, every one of them powerful and possessing decent firepower. Once they joined in the fray, the battlefield was soon enveloped numerous laser beams firing out, and large crowds of Dino-warriors were being killed every second.

Facing this sudden assault, the Dino-Warriors were thrown into

chaos. However, they were not elites for nothing, as they quickly adjusted their directions, facing the new enemy and began charging right at them.

Chapter 904: The Asura Clan!

Flesh met steel, culminating in a cruel and merciless slaughter, as blood flowed and mechanical parts scattered/

At every moment, numerous Dino-warriors were killed, at the same time, many Mech Beasts were also torn apart by the Dino-warriors.

Yue Zhong did not deploy his most powerful Mech Beasts into the battle, but the current force was more than enough to suppress the Dino-army.

In the sky, the unmanned drones also charged for the Mutant Winged Dinosaurs, both sides suffering heavy losses.

However, in the air, it was the Mutant Winged Dinosaurs that had the advantage, as their life force was strong and could withstand a few hits. Once they charged into the fleet of unmanned drones, they could easily tear the unmanned drones apart. Furthermore, most of them had flame-related innate abilities. They could shoot out black dragonflame at the drones, sending them plummeting to the ground.

The Mech Beasts on the ground cooperated with the American troops, wresting advantage away from the Dino-warriors. However, in the sky, the Mutant Winged Dinosaurs had the upper hand.

"Those Mutant Winged Dinosaurs are truly something. But, as long as I kill you, everything can be resolved."

Yue Zhong's gaze swept past the flock of Mutant Winged Dinosaurs, his eyes flashing with appreciation, before turning back to look at Emperor Ba Long. Suddenly, he disappeared, and charged right for the back of the Emperor Hei Long.

"You're still trying this? Break!"

Emperor Ba Long roared out in rage, stepping into the sky and

blocked in front of Emperor Hei Long. He then absorbed some atmospheric energy, sending out over a hundred claw attacks at Yue Zhong.

Emperor Ba Long followed the path of the close-combat evolution, his strength was exceptional. Every strike contained the principles of his comprehension towards techniques, and his executions were incredible. Even a Type 8 human expert might suffer when pitched against him.

Against the claws, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and both hands raised to form the Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm as it descended from the skies, slamming towards Emperor Ba Long viciously.

Hong!!

Following a huge roar, the huge Yin-Yang Palm destroyed all the palm shadows, slamming into Emperor Ba Long's body, breaking both his shoulders as he was sent knocked back hundreds of meters. He then spat out a huge amount of blood.

After injuring Emperor Ba Long, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he appeared on top of Emperor Ba Long's head in a strange manner, grabbing at him.

Due to the heavy injuries, and having exerted all his might earlier, he could not dodge this incoming attack.

Although Yue Zhong was only at the half-step into the Type 8 realm, with his Yin-Yang Palm, as well as the terrifying God-Devil Body, he was able to defeat opponents of the Type 8 realm.

"You want to kill me? Damn Yue Zhong, you've forced me to this!! I will go all out with you!! With my body as a sacrifice, gateway to the Otherworld, open!!"

Emperor Ba Long stared vengefully at Yue Zhong, before a savage glint flashed past. He bellowed in rage and his body split apart, turning into a blood fog that entered a blood-red pearl.

After absorbing the blood essence of Emperor Ba Long, the pearl

started to expand, causing a huge rift in space, revealing a blood-like world behind the distortions.

There was a thick, nauseating scent of blood that could be detected strongly from the world beyond.

"This is another world!!"

"I can smell the life of this world!!"

"I want to wipe out everything!!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!! Fight!! Fight!! Fight!!"

"..."

A spine-chilling and powerful aura then burst out from the blood-like world.

In an instant, a 2m-tall man with red hair stepped out, wielding an axe and he was half naked. He wore a necklace of skulls, while his visage was ferocious. The moment he appeared, he brought his axe swinging down in a flash towards Yue Zhong.

The speed of the axe was extremely quick, and even Yue Zhong could not dodge it completely.

With a thought, an energy shield quickly formed in front of him, as the axe came slamming into it, obliterating it entirely. It continued to swing towards Yue Zhong without a decrease in speed at all.

At the moment the shield was broken, Yue Zhong did not retreat, instead, he took a step forward and slammed viciously into the man.

Hong!

Following a terrifying sound of collision, the red-haired man was sent flying back as his body broke apart in a shower of blood.

However, when the man was killed in an instant, Yue Zhong suddenly felt an intense sense of danger deep in his bones. He

activated his Shadow Steps and twisted his body, at the same time, another shield condensed from atmospheric energy appeared in front of him.

It was at that moment that a blood-covered spear with incredible killing intent shot out from the blood-like world, thrusting towards Yue Zhong.

The spear brought with it a powerful might, easily disintegrating Yue Zhong's shield, while continuing to pierce towards him.

Yue Zhong dodged it at the first moment he could, however, 2 other battle spears appeared suddenly, aiming for his heart and head respectively.

Facing that dangerous assault, Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold, as he summoned energy in his hands, and executed his Dragon-Catching Claws, grabbing out at the 2 spears with his dragon-shaped force.

The blood-covered battle spears twisted and burst forth with combat intent, directly smashing the claw of Yue Zhong, continuing their trajectory.

At that critical moment, Yue Zhong willed it and his God-Devil Domain burst forth, enveloping the entire region.

When the 2 battle spears were wrapped in the domain, they continued to emit the bloodthirsty intent.

Under that pressure, the manifestations within the Devil Domain began bursting apart and reforming.

The spears then struck the edges of the domain, causing a powerful collision, and the entire Domain trembled on the verge of breaking apart.

However, they were ultimately still constrained by the God-Devil Domain.

As Yue Zhong suppressed the 2 battle spears, another red-haired

character stepped out from the blood-filled world.

In just a few breaths, over 80 similar figures walked out from the world.

There were males and females, every one of them with red hair. The men were topless, their expressions savage. The females had some alluring gold linen that covered their chests just barely, accentuating their hot figures. However, there was no denying that they were all emitting powerful killing intent.

The 80 human-shaped figures were all emitting pressure of the peak Type-7 realm, as they each wielded weapons, including blades, spears, swords, hatchets, axes, bows, and all sorts of things. Even the women were bloodthirsty. There were 3 leaders who stood at the forefront, exuding an overbearing pressure of the Type 8 realm, and their strength was even higher than Emperor Ba Long.

When the 80 people leaped out from the blood-filled world, the tear in space began to mend.

One other being from the other side tried to leap through, but halfway through, he was crushed by the closing tear, and turned into minced meat.

One of the leaders, who carried 3 spears and an axe, glanced at the God-Devil Domain, his eyes filled with an excitement and savagery. He licked his lips as he spoke, "God-Devil Domain? You're an Oracle? What luck, to be able to hunt an Oracle the moment we got out from that prison. It seems that we are fortunate as well, the Oracle is only at the Type 7 realm. We can join forces to kill him and take in the God and Devil Imprint and the God-Devil Nucleus. Asura Ye Xun, what do you think?"

Another of the leaders, who had a 2m-long broadsword, his figure muscular and bulky, looked at Yue Zhong with the same desire, "No!! Asura Lei Hao, Asura Zao, this prey is mine. You guys had better scram clear, otherwise I will chop off your heads to use

as my toilet bowl!"

The last person was an absolute beauty who wielded a battle spear. She wore golden clothes, covering her private parts, while the rest of her fair skin was revealed. Her expression was icy cold, yet, when she spoke, her words were filled with a violent aura, "Asura Lei Hao, Asura Ye Xun, the 2 of you should get lost. This Oracle is MY prey. If you want to be stubborn, I will pierce you guys and feed the dogs."

These red-haired human-like beings were all from the Asura Planet, the Asura Clan. In this clan, everyone was a combat genius, battling from the moment they were born. They fought against monsters, even among themselves. After they reach maturity, each one of them would be at least a Type 6 powerhouse. There were no shortages of Type 7, Type 8 and even Type 9 powerhouses back on their planet.

The Asura Clan would not lose out to the Mech Empire, and they themselves had also conquered and controlled other planets and universes.

The men of Asura were ugly, while the women were exceptionally beautiful. At the same time, regardless of gender, they were all cruel and bloodthirsty characters who loved a good fight, and idolized the strong. Only a stronger expert could make them submit, otherwise, they would not listen to anybody else.

Chapter 905: Miracle!

Other than the 3 Type 8 experts of the Asura Clan, the remaining Type 7 Asura Clan members exchanged looks as they quickly dispersed and shot towards the Dino-warriors below.

They were all filled with killing intent and loved to battle. The moment their bloodlust was ignited, they could even forget about their own family members. They would kill without discrimination.

Yet, these Type 7 Asura Clan powerhouses knew they were not a match for the Type 8 leaders, hence they were not willing to stay a moment longer with them.

"Haha, die! Die! Die!"

As they charged into the battlefield, one particular Asura warrior laughed out savagely, rushing towards the numerous Dino-Warriors. He wielded a powerful battleax, and as he swung, the battleax instantly sliced a dozen Dino-warriors into 2, as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

The Dino-Warriors themselves were also filled with savage bloodlust, as they charged at the incoming Asura warrior.

"Right on!! Break for me!!"

The Asura warrior laughed out cruelly, not intending to dodge at all, as his battleax slashed out in multiple beams at the Dino-warriors.

In a flash, a dozen Dino-warriors were sliced up like meat, blood splattering everywhere.

In the shower of blood, the Asura warrior roared out in excitement, like a devil, "HAHAHAHA!"

On the other side, within the American bunkers, laser beams continued to shoot out, piercing through some of the unlucky

Dino-Warriors.

At that instant, one Asura warrior descended upon them, landing in front of one bunker. He wielded his battle spear as he laughed out viciously, and grabbed out at the bunker, sending a force slamming into the bunker that pulverized it, killing the numerous human soldiers within it instantly

The Asura warriors began to slaughter any life form they came across like demons, to the point where they were so overcome by bloodlust that they would even kill among themselves.

On the ground, the battlefield had already become like a huge slaughterhouse, as numerous beings were being killed by the Asura warriors, as blood, organs, and body parts were strewn all over the ground, looking just like hell.

Yue Zhong watched and sucked in a breath of cold air, "What demons. No wonder they were sealed in that world. If these Asura warriors were to stay on Earth for the next decade, there would be nothing left on Earth."

In mid-air, the 3 Type 8 Asura warriors were still bickering over who was going to hunt Yue Zhong.

"Really, that's enough. We shall all attack together, whoever kills him gets to keep him!"

Asura Lei Hao roared out in fury, and his innate Asura combat qi burst forth, his eyes turning bloodshot. An incredible pressure began pouring out from him, and his muscles became taut and colored by a reddish scale-like energy.

"God-Cleaving Slash!"

With an enraged roar, Asura Lei Hao seemed to tear apart space as he suddenly appeared in front of Yue Zhong, his ax swinging down with an overbearing might, covered in the same reddish hue.

The Asura Clan was a race that focused on slaughter, having undergone years and years of killing, and comprehended their own

slaughter techniques. This God-Cleaving Slash was one of the secret techniques of Asura Lei Hao, and it was powerful, capable of splitting gods and devils, not losing out to Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm at all.

When the strike descended, Yue Zhong felt as though the atmospheric energy around him was sucked dry, and he could not absorb any to form a shield. He could only rely on his flesh body to resist that shocking strike.

"What a strong freak!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed, and he pulled out the C3-Grade Shield plate, which immediately opened up to form a powerful C3-Grade Shield that protected in front of him.

Dang!

Following an earth-shaking blast, Asura Lei Hao's ax fell upon the shield, forcefully tearing it apart, even though it was capable of resisting most Type 8 realm attacks.

"Hahaha, he's mine!!"

At the moment the C3-Grade Shield shattered, Asura Ye Xun activated his own technique, Flowing Night Slash, as he appeared noiselessly behind Yue Zhong, thrusting out with his sword towards his body.

A strike that resembled a shooting star shot through Yue Zhong's body, tearing it apart, even causing a tear in space.

This Flowing Night Slash was also an Asura technique, containing spatial principles. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would be injured by such a strike.

However, Yue Zhong's body disintegrated without a trace.

"You 2 idiots, this is the true body!!"

Asura Zao laughed coldly, as she appeared mysteriously at a patch of space, her battle spear thrusting towards the area.

As it thrust out, Yue Zhong's figure appeared. The spear pierced his right shoulder, as a jet of blood that carried a slight gold hue shot out from his wound.

When the 3 Asura experts joined hands, they immediately injured Yue Zhong.

Asura Zao's spear pierced through Yue Zhong's shoulder, and a powerful combat intent burst forth, disrupting his blood flow, causing him to spit out more blood.

"Fuck!"

Yue Zhong was overcome with shock, ever since he reached the peak of Type 7 realm, he had made use of all sorts of abilities that came with his God-Devil Body to suppress even a few Type 8 powerhouses. After he recovered from the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk's strike, this was the first time that he had been injured.

"God-Devil Domain!"

Yue Zhong was an experienced combatant. In a flash, he activated his strongest trump card, and the powerful domain containing both angelic and demonic intent enveloped the region, covering all 3 Asura warriors.

Once he activated it, he disappeared from sight within the Devil Domain, reappearing in the God Domain.

As he stepped into it, the angelic beings and manifestations quickly brought forth their blessings and songs upon him.

Amidst the blessings, his wound began to heal, and his injuries started to recover. At the same time, his combat strength was also boosted.

"What is that?!"

"Oh, Lord! What am I seeing? Those are angels!! Are the angels blessing him?! Is Yue Zhong God? Or is he God's Son?"

"Angels! Those are angels!! Am I hallucinating?! Oh, God, all glory to you!!"

"Angels! Those angels are blessing a Chinese?! Why? Why is it like this?!"

"..."

When the American troops saw how the angels and cherubs were singing songs of praise and blessing Yue Zhong within the God-Domain, they were all stunned, some in panic, some in shock, most of them envious.

In the western religions, angels were exalted beings, considered the messengers of God, or servants of God, and would only sing, praise or even fight for God. It was nearly impossible for mortals to see any.

After the apocalypse, since many came to know of the existence called God, they began to believe. However, they had yet to come across true angels.

Now that there were so many angels and deities in the skies beside Yue Zhong, they were all at a loss.

If it were a white person who had been in Yue Zhong's position, then the American troops were sure to believe that it was God's incarnate. However, an Asian like Yue Zhong was currently being blessed, this caused them to be confused.

"Praise the Lord, thank you for coming once again to save us lost sheep!!"

"Praise the Lord for coming!"

"Oh God, you're almighty and all-knowing. Thank you for coming to save us lost sheep!"

"..."

However, even so, there were many who became devout believers. In this era where it seemed all was hopeless, many

needed a beacon of hope and faith. That way, they could live on with hope. As long as there was God, even if they died in battle, they would enter God's kingdom.

Leo saw the God-Domain and Yue Zhong being surrounded by the angels, and clenched his fist in envy, as he thought to himself, "This is the God-Devil Domain, in the future, I will definitely be able to comprehend such a strong domain as well!"

The Devil Domain was enveloping the 3 Asura warriors, as the devilish energy wrapped around them, assaulting and invading them. The demonic and evil manifestations pounced onto them without stop.

Chapter 906: Slaughtering the Asuras!

"This is a Domain! It is truly strong, and he actually comprehended it at the Type 7 realm. As expected of an Oracle, he has already surpassed even the talented geniuses of our Clan. However, there is too much of a difference in our strengths, and we can definitely overwhelm him! Battleaxe Domain, appear!"

Asura Lei Hao faced the incoming demonic energy, and he exuded a powerful combat aura, dispersing the manifestations. He then laughed coldly, as the energy pouring out from him formed his trump card, the Battleaxe Domain.

At that instant, with him at the center, the powerful domain surged forth, smashing into Yue Zhong's Devil Domain.

Hong!

Following a loud sound, the entire Devil Domain was shaken and was on the verge of collapse. It was restrained by over hundreds of meters.

The God-Devil Domain that Yue Zhong comprehended was truly the strongest in the world. However, his realm was still far from Asura Lei Hao, that was why his domain was almost suppressed by the opponent.

Asura Lei Hao saw that his Battleaxe Domain was actually unable to tear apart Yue Zhong's domain, and was thoroughly shocked, "What a terrifying domain, is an Oracle truly that strong?"

Truthfully, if it had been any other peak Type 7 Oracle with the God-Devil Domain, it would be strong as well, but not comparable to Yue Zhong. After all, his physique had undergone a metamorphosis, almost reaching the Third Order God-Devil Body. That was why his Domain was so strong.

The might of the Domain was reliant on Yue Zhong's strength. The stronger he was, the more powerful his God-Devil Domain.

Asura Lei Hao was a battle freak, even after only gaining a small foothold, he did not feel disheartened. Instead, he became even more ferocious, the battleax in his heart continuing to slam into Devil-Domain. Each time he let loose a strike, within the domain, many of the demonic and devilish manifestations would crumble, and the domain itself shook.

On the other side, Asura Zao and Asura Ye Xun both activated their own Battle spear Domain and Sword Domain respectively, clashing against Yue Zhong's Devil Domain.

The might of the 3 experts when joining force was truly shocking. As Yue Zhong tried to maintain the Domain, he could feel his energy being assaulted. If it was not for the angelic beings and holy manifestations continually healing and empowering him, he would not have lasted 30 seconds.

Seeing the 3 experts slamming against his Domain, Yue Zhong sucked in a deep breath, as he pulled out the Heaven-Piercing Bow in his hand. With a thought, the numerous angelic manifestations entered the Heaven-Piercing Bow through his hands.

In an instant, a black arrow that seemed to pierce through space and time formed.

As Yue Zhong continued to absorb, everything within the God-Domain was sucked cleanly, before it dissipated.

Asura Lei Hao and the other 2 continued to struggle out of Devil-Domain.

"Go to hell!!"

There was a cold light in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he released his hand, and the black arrow shot through space and blasted towards Asura Lei Hao.

Among these 3 great Asura warriors, Asura Lei Hao had the strongest offensive power, however, his defense and speed were weaker in comparison. Hence, he was the logical choice to target.

"Asura Indestructible Body!"

Right when Yue Zhong released his hands, Asura Lei Hao felt his hairs stand as a sense of crisis overcame him. He snapped around and roared out a secret technique.

At that moment, his combat Qi surged forth, enveloping his body and forming a red layer. His body began to change when strengthened by the reddish combat Qi. When he was done channeling the Asura Indestructible Body, his physique became something that even Type 8 experts would not be able to tear it apart.

The technique was one of the most powerful defensive techniques on Asura. Once activated, they were even able to withstand attacks from the laser cannons of the battleships.

The Heaven-Piercing Arrow slammed into Asura Lei Hao's body.

With a powerful blast, Asura Lei Hao's newly-formed physique crumbled almost instantly. The terrifying arrow pierced through him, bursting his head that was even able to resist a battleship's attack, instant killing him in a split second.

As Asura Lei Hao died, a powerful life force tunneled into Yue Zhong, nourishing his body.

At the same time, a strong sense of exhaustion overcame Yue Zhong. The Heaven-Piercing Bow's might was determined by his strength. He had already channeled half into it. This was how he was able to kill Asura Lei Hao.

"Damn it, Asura Lei Hao was killed by him!"

Asura Ye Xun saw Asura Lei Hao die, and his eyes flashed with shock. However, the clan was not known to fear death, instead, the more they battled, the fiercer they got. He roared out in rage, turning into a beam of light as he brought his sword domain towards Yue Zhong.

Asura Zao's gaze was also filled with a chilly light, as she executed

a profound movement technique, shooting towards Yue Zhong. In her eyes, Yue Zhong was the best prey.

Facing the 2 incoming Asura warriors, Yue Zhong ordered coldly, "Do it!"

In the skies, the Type 8 Ape Lord Titus, who had been waiting quietly with a C-Grade Particle Cannon, immediately responded with a cold glint in his eyes, as he pulled the trigger.

At that instant, a terrifying particle pillar descended upon the ground, blasting the region where Asura Ye Xun and Asura Zao were.

Due to the sudden attack, the 2 of them were not prepared and were struck by the pillar, smashed to the ground.

Before the beam even dissipated, Yue Zhong activated the Summon Tamed Beast Technique, and at that moment, there was a huge spatial tear. The huge Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King then flew out from the hole, as though a mystical beast had stepped out of the legends and into this world.

Chapter 907: Leo Dies in Combat!

The moment the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King appeared, its eyes flashed coldly and it channeled its innate ability, causing a storm of wind blades to rain upon the 2 Asura warriors.

The Type 8 Mutant Beast was a terrifying monster, at that time, when Yue Zhong had tried to suppress it, it had cost him a lot of energy. If it was not for the God-Devil Domain, Yue Zhong would not have been his match.

Although the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile did not comprehend any domain, in terms of its strength, it was still easily more than 10 times stronger than the Type 8 Asura warriors. The only weakness was that it did not know any secret arts.

The surrounding atmospheric energy was absorbed by the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, and it began to amass within its body.

After absorbing the energy, the aura of the Type 8 Mutant Beast became even more ferocious. It opened its huge jaws and manipulated the energy to blast downwards through its countless wind blades.

The wind blades containing the principles of wind laws sliced downwards, not necessarily losing out to any Wind-related Domain of a weaker Type 8 powerhouse.

After Asura Ye Xun and Asura Zao had been blasted by the C-Grade particle cannon, although they had barely managed to escape with their domain, the next volley of attacks from the wind blades caused them to be riddled with wounds, as blood flowed freely.

Within the Battle spear Domain of Asura Zao, countless spears were striking out, defending against the oncoming wind blades. The attacks clashed and the resulting shockwaves dispersed in all directions.

However, it was apparent that the storm of wind blades was much more powerful, and it struck the body of Asura Zao, causing multiple lacerations.

There was blood at the corner of her mouth, and in her agony, her eyes flashed coldly. She leaped up in a single step, passing through the storm of wind blades, and thrust out with numerous spears that blasted apart the blades, dashing for the distance.

In a few breaths, Asura Zao tore herself from the hellish torture and disappeared.

Although everyone from the Asura Clan was battle-hungry and bloodthirsty, they were not stupid. Since they were heavily injured, plus they had to face the combined attacks of 3 Type 8 powerhouses, there was no chance of victory at all.

Since she determined this, Asura Zao made her decision to flee, no longer getting involved. It would only lead to death otherwise.

Once she fled, there was only Asura Ye Xun left. Under the control of the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King, the area of attack began to shrink, forming a cage of wind blades that continued to assail the Sword Domain of Asura Yexun, tearing through and slicing him.

"Damn bastard!! I'll go all out against you!! Asura Sword Slash!!"

Asura Ye Xun's body was riddled with injuries, yet his eyes continued to shine with a ferocious light. He took a deep breath, and his energy suddenly burst forth before retracting, together with the Sword Domain. He then seemed to be covered in a powerful sword light, charging up through the skies, aiming for the eye of the storm of wind blades.

The Asura Sword Slash was also one of the strongest battle techniques of the Asura Clan, possessing considerable might. Once cultivated to the peak, it was able to rip a tear in space, even capable of killing the legendary Type 10 powerhouses that had

escaped the clutches of the entity called God.

The terrifying sword light tore apart the storm wind blades, charging forth into the skies, as warrior and sword became one and sliced into the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King.

Under the terrifying attack, there was a huge gash in the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, and the blood essence of the Type 8 Mutant Beast splattered everywhere.

Even so, the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King was savage in its own right. Its body might be sliced by the beam, yet, it did not lose its combat will and swept its powerful tail towards Asura Ye Xun viciously.

In an instant, the tail of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile slammed into the huge beam of sword beam formed by Asura Ye Xun.

With a loud cracking of bones, there was a huge gash in the tail of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King.

Asura Ye Xun was also swept a few hundred meters away by the tail. His body trembled and he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, his orifices bleeding, and with the number of cuts on his body, as well as the blood flowing out, it was truly horrific.

As the Asura warrior was sent flying, Yue Zhong had already appeared behind him, clad in his Stealth Armor, and without a sound, he threw out a Yin-Yang Palm viciously towards Asura Ye Xun's body.

At that moment, a terrifying force burst forth, blasting Asura Ye Xun's body into many pieces as an abundant life force entered Yue Zhong's body.

"Asura Ye Xun was killed!!"

"That human is strong!! He actually killed 2 of our Asura Generals, we are not his match!! We have to flee!!"

"We can only flee now!"

"..."

Seeing Asura Ye Xun and Asura Lei Hao killed by Yue Zhong, the rest of the Asura Warriors turned and transformed into beams of light and fled quickly.

Although the Asura warriors were all terrifying warriors, they were not united at all, to the point that they could even slaughter among themselves for a prey.

"Chance!!"

Leo, who had been stealthily hiding among the Dino-race, observed the fleeing Asura warriors, and his eyes filled with glee. His Wings of Hope unfolded and with a bright flash, his speed was pushed to the max. He then appeared behind a Type 7 Asura expert, wielding a powerful laser blade as he pierced towards him.

"Bastard, you dare to sneak up on me?! Go to hell, ant!! Asura Eyes!"

The Asura warrior could feel Leo's killing intent, and he whipped around suddenly, bellowing in rage. His battle qi surged forth, and his forehead split apart, revealing a powerful eye that was filled with battle and evil intent.

The moment the eye opened, an Asura Holy Light that was capable of injuring a Type 8 powerhouse shot out at Leo.

At that moment, the scarlet beam slammed into Leo's body.

"Shit!"

A violent energy surged through his sea of knowledge, causing his mind to be rattled, and his brain was on the verge of collapsing. He spat out a mouth of blood, as his body halted momentarily.

The Asura warrior took advantage of that pause, and directly sliced down with his battleax, slicing Leo into two, as golden blood splattered everywhere.

"No!!"

"No!!"

"Leo!!"

"Big Brother Leo!!"

"..."

Seeing Leo being cleaved in two by the Asura warrior, the elites of the American forces all let out wails and screams. Their eyes were all red.

Leo was one of those who had started the Superhero Alliance and was the strongest expert. He had led them in eradicating zombies, hunting Mutant Beasts, and risked his life to collect technology from the other worlds. He was the pillar and one who had contributed greatly. With his death, America lost the only capital that stood between them and the foreign species.

"The God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint is mine!!"

After killing Leo in a strike, the Asura warrior was spent. However, he caught sight of the God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint shooting out of Leo's body, and his eyes flashed with greed. He reached out to draw the corpse towards him.

As he was about to grab onto Leo's corpse, Yue Zhong appeared behind him like a specter. His fist then slammed into the head of the Asura warrior.

With a 'pa', the head of the Asura warrior directly burst open like a watermelon. His corpse also fell to the ground.

The Asura warrior was not even a match for Yue Zhong at all, plus since Yue Zhong sneaked up on him, there was no way of resisting at all.

After killing the Asura warrior, Yue Zhong grabbed out, as the atmospheric energy wrapped Leo's corpse and sent him into his arms.

Seeing Leo's cleaved head and body, Yue Zhong had a

complicated expression in his eyes. This was the plight of all fallen Oracles.

The foreign species were all powerful and overbearing. If an Oracle wanted to evolve faster, he or she needed to hunt existences stronger than themselves. If they were not careful, they would perish and become a corpse.

Along the way, Yue Zhong had come close to death. However, he had gritted his teeth through, and survived, while Edward and Leo had both died.

Yue Zhong sighed lightly, and he retrieved the God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint, keeping one and absorbing the other.

This was witnessed by the higher-ups of the American forces.

"Damn it!! He took Leo's God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint!!"

Chapter 908: The Dino-Warriors retreat!

"That's the property of America!!"

"That's America's strength, we cannot let him take it away!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong obtain Leo's God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint, the upper echelon of America began howling in rage.

Leo had not hidden anything about what the God-Devil Imprint was capable of, instead, he revealed everything about it. Therefore, they knew that one of such imprints could potentially create another Leo, or someone surpassing him.

Without it, the limit for the human experts on Earth would be at most the Type 5 realm. This was also under the strengthening of the System itself. If one wanted to breakthrough, without the God-Devil Imprint, it would require countless natural treasures, coupled with hard cultivation.

It was because of this that the Imprint was so precious. The Kingdom of God had no choice but to assimilate with China because Edward had fallen, and his Imprint lost.

In the skies, the 8 Protector Battleships soared about and fired at the numerous Mutant Winged Dinosaurs.

The Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King also charged into their midst, urging the atmospheric energy around it into wind blades that sliced out at the numerous dinosaurs.

Under the storm of wind blades, many of them were sliced apart and dropped out of the skies.

On the battlefield, there was a rain of blood, as the corpses plummeted down.

The Type 7 Mutant Winged Dinosaur was grabbed by the Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King, which put its prey into its mouth and closed

its jaws, swallowing the Type 7 Mutant Beast.

Seeing the 1km-long Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile continuing on its massacre, the Dino-warriors below lost all will to fight, their eyes filled with terror.

A Type 8 powerhouse was almost invincible, furthermore, its strength seemed to be boundless. As long as it was willing to take the time, it could definitely wipe out the million of Dino-warriors below, slaughtering them cleanly.

All of a sudden, there were powerful war drums that resounded. Upon hearing those soundwaves, the Dino-warriors that had continued to fight on began to retreat in droves.

Of the 3 Dino-Emperors, 2 had been killed by Yue Zhong, and the remaining Emperor Hei Long had quickly fled before Yue Zhong could finish him. He was already hiding within the command center of the Dino-warriors.

Seeing the Dino-warriors and foreign species retreating hurriedly, the American forces heaved a sigh of relief. Many of the armored forces quickly charged out of their places, chasing after the fleeing invaders.

At the same time, numerous unmanned drones were released from the bases, aiming for the Dino-warriors.

Prior to the apocalypse, the Americans had exceptional technology in warfare. After the apocalypse happened, they made use of the research brought back by Leo to further their improvements, quickly producing countless unmanned drones capable of destruction.

Under the frenzied assault of the unmanned drones, Mech beasts, human armored forces, Protector Battleships, and Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile in the sky, the Dino-warriors lost 100,000 of their soldiers, splitting into numerous smaller troops as they dispersed.

This time, the invasion of the Dino-race had failed.

When they retreated, the numerous Mech Beasts quickly surrounded the Mutant Winged Dinosaurs, clearing up their bodies.

Every one of them was a treasure, and Yue Zhong naturally would not give it up to the Americans.

Yue Zhong walked through the troops, supporting Leo's corpse with his energy control.

The American forces looked at him with respect and idolization, but when their gazes traveled to the corpse of Leo behind him, their eyes were filled with pain, and many broke down.

Leo had been widely recognized as the leader of the Superhero Alliance, fighting on the front lines at all times, and had killed numerous invaders while saving countless human soldiers.

Every American soldier knew of Leo and his deeds, to them, he was truly a hero.

"Leo, how could you die?! No! You're not supposed to!! You're not supposed to!"

"Leo!!"

"Leo, my dear friend!! You should not have died!!!"

"Bro!!"

"..."

The various experts of the superhero alliance crowded over, their faces streaked with tears. Leo was their big brother, their loved one, teacher, father-like figure. Now that he was dead, they were filled with anguish and sorrow.

Wendy's face was full of tears as she walked over to Yue Zhong and saluted, "Many thanks, Yue Zhong, for avenging him. You even brought back his body."

Yue Zhong sighed, "No need for thanks. It was what I should do."

Yue Zhong might not be close with Leo, but they were part of the strongest experts on Earth, and as pillars of their race, there was a sense of kindred spirit among them.

Leo was American, but he was broad-minded, with an exemplary character, and fought hard for America's interests. Yue Zhong respected that a lot, and now that Leo had perished in battle, he also felt some loss.

A short-haired middle-aged man came over, wearing a suit, and his looks handsome. He took a look at Leo's body and his eyes were also filled with tears as he bowed deeply to the body.

The man then spoke up, "Today, America lost a great hero, one who was valiant, brave, loving, and most of all, humane. He had fought and sacrificed for us all. His life was filled with merits and sacrifice. His death is a great loss to America. As the president of America, today, I shall declare it as Leo's Remembrance Day, in order to honor and mourn our great hero. Raise the flag halfway."

As he said it, the American flag nearby was also reduced to half its height.

Throughout the area, the mood was somber, as many American soldiers began to cry.

Yue Zhong stood quietly, watching the ceremony.

When it was over, the American president turned to Yue Zhong and spoke warmly, "Mr. Yue Zhong. It's an honor. I'm President Taff, and I'm grateful for your rushing over to aid us. From today on, you're an honored guest and ally forever. America welcomes you."

Yue Zhong was also courteous, "How do you do, Mr. Taff. A pleasure to meet you."

Before the apocalypse, Taff had just been a small-time politician as well. He grabbed hold of the opportunity during the chaos to stay by Leo's side, building his own prestige and thus, becoming

the new President.

After the niceties were exchanged, Taff then directly spoke, "Yue Zhong, the God-Devil Nucleus, and Imprint in your hands belong to America. Please return them to us, in doing so, you'll be a treasured friend of us forever. America would also pledge to be your loyal ally."

Yue Zhong immediately chuckled indifferently, and declined, "I truly do possess them. However, they are my spoils of war, if you want them, you have to take out something equivalent in value."

In this post-apocalyptic period, strength was the most important. When Yue Zhong was weak, the Kingdom of God sought to bully him. Now that his strength was sufficient, even the American president had to treat him with respect. He would not hand the 2 precious items over so easily.

After absorbing them, Yue Zhong could undergo another metamorphosis, reaching the Type 8 realm even. He would not give them up.

Taff's brows furrowed, as he spoke with a hint of threat, "Yue Zhong. Those belong to America. If you insist on keeping them, it would affect our relationship and even the terms of the treaty. I do not wish to see a hero who had saved America to be known as a thief who stole what belonged to others. The Americans would also not wish to see the hero in their eyes become some thug."

Yue Zhong shook his head, laughing coldly, as he made to leave, "Mr. President, if my actions will affect the treaty, then so be it. Destroy the treaty. I don't really care what you think, you may think of me as a hero or a thug. I can't be bothered. Goodbye."

After that, he turned around and walked out.

It was America that required his help, not the other way round, thus Taff's threats did not mean anything to him. He was not one to give a hoot about other people's thinking anyway.

Chapter 909: Stepping into the Type 8 Realm!

Yue Zhong had come to America's aid, on one hand, it was for humanity's sake, and the other was to get America to whittle down at the strength of the invaders. If they wanted him to hand over the resources necessary for him to evolve, he would rather leave.

Taff's face fell, as he stood up and called out with some haste, "No, Yue Zhong. Wait! We can talk about this!"

Although the Dino-race had retreated, America was still in a precarious situation. Within the country, there were still hordes of zombies, and beyond them, the physically stronger Dino-warriors that were impervious to bullets and blades.

Since America's protector Leo had died, even with all their combined might and resources, it was not enough to stand against a Type 7 powerhouse. If Yue Zhong was to leave, then entire America would likely be torn to pieces by the Dino-race.

Taff's voice became low and urgent, "I have an important intelligence, it is related to the world being in a cage and other secrets. Yue Zhong, don't you want to know about the God that has toyed with us?"

Hearing those words, Yue Zhong came to a halt, and turned to look at Taff, his eyes flashing with a glint, "You truly know about those secrets?"

It was the world's biggest secret, about how to escape from this cage-like place, and be in control of one's destiny. One had to be more informed about the world.

Taff laughed confidently, and motioned for Yue Zhong, "Please sit."

Yue Zhong sat back down, and looked at Taff, awaiting his next words.

Taff sat opposite and collected his thoughts, before speaking, "As a matter of fact, it is not I that know about the secrets. However, I've received information from Leo all this time about clues. I think that they are important to you, so I'm willing to exchange these for the God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint."

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that, "Not enough, unless you can give me the adequate treasures, otherwise, you don't have to think about getting them."

He was currently invincible on Earth, but with the passing of time, the limitations on the Gates of Hell would cease, and if he had to go against more Type 8 monsters with his present strength, he would likely perish. Against a Type 9 powerhouse, there was no doubt of death.

Although he had the Gold-Grade Radiant Battleship in his possession, the consumption of power was too great. He did not know how many of the nuclei in his possession was required to power that heaven-defying treasure.

In the negotiations, Yue Zhong suddenly thought of a few treasures that he had forgotten, "Oh right, I could not power the Radiant Battleship because I lacked a Type 9 nucleus. I have gained one from the Mech Kingdom, plus the Comet Cannon has one, that means I have 2 to power it. The Radiant Battleship should be able to power up with those."

Yue Zhong had already gotten the Gold-Grade Radiant Battleship a long time ago, but his strength had been lacking all this while. Not long ago, he had just obtained the Type 9 nucleus from the Mech Kingdom, that was why he had the assurance right now.

Taff frowned, as he settled in his chair, before speaking up once more, "Adding on 30 intercontinental ballistic missiles carrying nuclear warheads, in exchange for the Imprint."

Nuclear weapons were the final trump cards of America. They had utilized some to attack the Dino-warriors, and over a million

had died, but if they were to face those at China, it would be a catastrophe for China.

Yue Zhong declined without hesitation, "No, I already have too many weapons that far surpass the nuclear weapons. If you have nothing else, I'll bid goodbye."

Yue Zhong had already obtained so many equipment and weapons from the Mech Kingdom previously, there was no danger of radiation even.

The Mech Kingdom had numerous missile interceptors. It was easy for Yue Zhong to take out the nuclear warheads capable of threatening China.

Taff's expression as turning uglier, as he did not know what else he had to move Yue Zhong's mind. The information he had on hand was truly vague at best.

Yue Zhong saw Taff in a dilemma, and he stood up, "I'll take my leave."

Taff looked up in shock, and called out urgently again, "No, please, wait, we can negotiate. Yue Zhong, don't abandon us. There're so many lives at stake!! I won't insist on the Nucleus and Imprint, but I implore you, please wait."

Taff had too little trump cards, and America could not do without Yue Zhong's help. Once he left, they were exposed.

The corners of Yue Zhong's lips twitched, and his eyes flashed with satisfaction. He turned back around, and sat down silently, right now, his trump cards exceeded what America had, that was why Taff had to plead.

Taff massaged his temple, and fell silent for a while, before he spoke out resolutely, "I can tell you the clues, but I hope that you can promise to be our protector, safeguarding both America and China."

Since there was no way of retrieving the Nucleus and Imprint

from Yue Zhong, he chose another way to ensure America's survival.

Yue Zhong chuckled, and gave him a lifeline that was hard to resist, "Why not we do it this way, I'll hand you 3 Type 7 sentient Mechs, 36 Type 6 Combat Mechs, 3 Type 7 Combat Mech Armors, in exchange for the information you have."

Hearing that condition, Taff's face fell, and he gritted his teeth, "Deal, however, on one condition. That is, you will bring 5 of our Americans along with you when you head over to the location."

Yue Zhong did not drag things along, and he agreed, "Fine!"

Taff then spoke out with a solemn expression, "At the deepest part of the Bermuda Triangle lays the clue to the secrets about the world and the entity called God."

Yue Zhong was surprised, "The Bermuda Triangle? To think it was that place."

He had obtained what he wanted from Taff, and both sides had come to an agreement, meeting 3 days after to head to the Bermuda Triangle together.

Yue Zhong chose to stay in America temporarily, residing in a luxurious presidential suite.

Inside the room, he took out the God-Devil Nucleus and Imprint obtained from Leo and placed them against his own Imprint.

At that moment, a sacred light shone and absorbed the items into Yue Zhong's body.

The moment they were absorbed, they transformed into a golden energy that was holy, as they coursed through Yue Zhong's mind.

The God-Devil Nucleus in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge expanded once more, and more profound runes appeared on it, containing the vast trails of stars.

The abundant and pure life force he had accumulated was also

absorbed into the nucleus, transforming into a golden, holy energy, passing through his blood.

Under the empowerment of the golden energy, his blood began to transform once more, becoming even more sacred.

Once the last drop of blood had totally turned gold, it began to rumble within his body, and the atmospheric energy around him began to swirl into his body.

The suction of the energy became violent, and the skies over the hotel changed. The energy started to swirl down in the shape of a massive whirlpool, entering Yue Zhong.

"What is that?!"

"What's going on?"

"That's the location of Yue Zhong's hotel, is he the cause of the commotion?"

"..."

Seeing the intense tornado, all the elites of the American forces wore expressions of shock, as they quickly made their way towards the commotion.

Ever since Leo's death, the new team captain of the Superhero Alliance fell to the half-step Type 6 powerhouse Lehman.

As they braved the stormy wings, Lehman arrived with his team, stopping about 100 meters away from the hotel. They could not proceed further as they were enveloped by a terrifying pressure.

"What a strong force!! It actually stopped me from moving further. If the person wanted to kill me, I cannot even resist! Too terrifying!" Lehman's face fell, as waves of shock rocked his heart. However, he maintained his calm and spoke, "Elisa, use your power to observe the center of the storm."

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001: Chaos in South Origin City!](#)

[Chapter 1002: Alien Queen!](#)

[Chapter 1003: Killing a Type 6 Alien!](#)

[Chapter 1004: Type 7 Alien!](#)

[Chapter 1005: People from the Saint Lands!](#)

[Chapter 1006: Black Dragon Beast!](#)

[Chapter 1007: Reaching the Type 7 Realm!](#)

[Chapter 1008: Saint Lands!](#)

[Chapter 1009: Arrogance!](#)

[Chapter 1010: Battle!](#)

[Chapter 1011: The Terrifying Alien and Despair!](#)

[Chapter 1012: Yue Zhong Acts!](#)

[Chapter 1013: Saint Land's Saint Lord! !](#)

[Chapter 1014: Saint Land Protectors!](#)

[Chapter 1015: One-hit K.O.!](#)

[Chapter 1016: Red Dawn Holy Palace!](#)

[Chapter 1017: Sky Fragrance Dance!](#)

[Chapter 1018: Deal!](#)

[Chapter 1019: Stealth!](#)

[Chapter 1020: Great Harvest!](#)

[Chapter 1021: The Saint Lord Spits Blood!](#)

[Chapter 1022: The Powerful Saint Lands Protector Battleships!](#)

[Chapter 1023: Defeating the Alien King!](#)

[Chapter 1024: Request for Aid!](#)

[Chapter 1025: Besieged South Origin City!](#)

[Chapter 1026: Alien Spawn!](#)

[Chapter 1027: Type 7 Yin Shuang!](#)

[Chapter 1028: Concept of a Large City Base!](#)

[Chapter 1029: America's Calamity!](#)

[Chapter 1030: The Mighty Tyranno-King!](#)

[Chapter 1031: Nuclear Attack!](#)

[Chapter 1032: The Beastmen Race!](#)

[Chapter 1033: S.O.S from the Kingdom of God!](#)
[Chapter 1034: The Miserable Plight of the Kingdom of God, Berlin's Fall!](#)
[Chapter 1035: Jonas's Choice!](#)
[Chapter 1036: The Beastmen battles the Zombies!](#)
[Chapter 1037: Sneak-attack on Taylor!](#)
[Chapter 1038: Killing Taylor!](#)
[Chapter 1039: Negotiations with King Limo!](#)
[Chapter 1040: Heaven-Piercing Bow!](#)
[Chapter 1041: Yin-Yang Palm!](#)
[Chapter 1042: Beastmen V.S Zombies!](#)
[Chapter 1043: Sichuan's Base Request for Help!](#)
[Chapter 1044: Turning Zombies into Ash with a Wave of a Hand!](#)
[Chapter 1045: Chaos!](#)
[Chapter 1046: Floxenia!](#)
[Chapter 1047: The Arrival of the Mech Empire!](#)
[Chapter 1048: Combat Mech!](#)
[Chapter 1049: The might of the Yin-Yang Palm!](#)
[Chapter 1050: The Terrifying Might of the Mech Kingdom!](#)
[Chapter 1051: Galastar!](#)
[Chapter 1052: Order of the Mech Lord!](#)
[Chapter 1053: Galastar Virtual Network!](#)
[Chapter 1054: Exchanging a B-Grade Particle Cannon and B-Grade Laser Blade!](#)
[Chapter 1055: Battling the Mutant Bronze Bashing Black Boar Horde!](#)
[Chapter 1056: Killing the Type 7 Mutant Black Boar!](#)
[Chapter 1057: Type 8 Winged Wyrms King!](#)
[Chapter 1058: Exchanging for Treasures!](#)
[Chapter 1059: Challenge!](#)
[Chapter 1060: Killing Halledor!](#)
[Chapter 1061: Comprehending the Flame Domain!](#)
[Chapter 1062: Relax!](#)
[Chapter 1063: The Fate of Losers!](#)
[Chapter 1064: Genius Mech Pilot!](#)
[Chapter 1065: Chaos in the Mech Empire City!](#)
[Chapter 1066: 9-headed Type 9 Dragonhawk!](#)
[Chapter 1067: Young Star Lord!](#)
[Chapter 1068: Type 8 Ape Lord Titus!](#)
[Chapter 1069: Suppressing Titus!](#)
[Chapter 1070: Joining hands with Xing Bing Yun!](#)
[Chapter 1071: Fleeing Mech Empire City!](#)

[Chapter 1072: The Strike of the Type 9 9-Headed Dragonhawk!](#)
[Chapter 882: Human Underground City!](#)
[Chapter 883: Dark Saint Assembly!](#)
[Chapter 884: The Black Widow!](#)
[Chapter 885: Killing the Black Widow!](#)
[Chapter 886: Taking over City 67!](#)
[Chapter 887: Desert Region!](#)
[Chapter 888: Mutant Lizard Horde!](#)
[Chapter 889: The Powerful Type 7 Mutant Lizard!](#)
[Chapter 890: The Mighty Yue Zhong!](#)
[Chapter 891: Type 8 Wurm-Crocodile King!](#)
[Chapter 892: The Might of the God-Devil Domain!](#)
[Chapter 893: Invincible!](#)
[Chapter 894: Taming the Wurm-Crocodile King!](#)
[Chapter 895: Entering Headquarters!](#)
[Chapter 896: Green Drake Emperor Ogg!](#)
[Chapter 897: Suppressing the 3 Emperors!](#)
[Chapter 898: Base Camp FED4456!](#)
[Chapter 899: Comet Cannon!](#)
[Chapter 900: The Crafty Murphyte!](#)
[Chapter 901: The American Forces request Aid!](#)
[Chapter 902: Coercion!](#)
[Chapter 903: Yue Zhong Acts!](#)
[Chapter 904: The Asura Clan!](#)
[Chapter 905: Miracle!](#)
[Chapter 906: Slaughtering the Asuras!](#)
[Chapter 907: Leo Dies in Combat!](#)
[Chapter 908: The Dino-Warriors retreat!](#)
[Chapter 909: Stepping into the Type 8 Realm!](#)